



# NAPOLEON THE THIRD.

---

FIRST VOLUME.

LONDON PRINTED BY  
SPOTTISWOOD AND CO., NEW-STREET SQ ARE  
A ABINGDON STREET

THE LIFE  
OF  
NAPOLEON III.

DERIVED FROM STATE RECORDS,  
FROM UNPUBLISHED FAMILY CORRESPONDENCE,  
AND FROM PERSONAL TESTIMONY

BY BLANCHARD JERROLD

*With FAMILY PORTRAITS in the POSSESSION of the IMPERIAL FAMILY, and  
FACSIMILES of LETTERS of NAPOLEON I, NAPOLEON III, QUEEN HORTENSE, &c*

IN FOUR VOLUMES

VOL I

LONDON:  
LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO  
1874





## P R E F A C E.

---

NO LIFE within the memory of the present generation has more profoundly influenced the march of events than that of NAPOLEON III , and, next perhaps to his unwavering faith in his own mission, held through extraordinary trials and vicissitudes, the most prominent characteristic of his life was the resolution with which he manifested his friendship for the English people

His character and the chief events of his life have, nevertheless, been not a little misunderstood by Englishmen , and this fact alone would justify the publication of a work which seeks to set forth impartially the great drama of his career

The design of such a work has not been lately nor hastily formed I had begun to collect the materials for it not many years after the esta-

blishment of the Empire The associates of the Third Napoleon in his younger years were even then gradually disappearing from the scene , but, fortunately, my task was undertaken at a time which still enabled me to obtain a complete record of the infancy, youth, and early manhood of Prince Louis from his old friends, and the witnesses of all the stirring events of his long exile

I have had further the benefit of help abundantly bestowed by the Imperial family, and the following chapters will show the extreme value of the family papers to which I have had access, and of the other sources which have supplied me with materials for the most important passages of the history

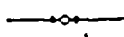
BLANCHARD JERROLD

LONDON May 1874.

# CONTENTS

or

## THE FIRST VOLUME.



### BOOK I

#### *BIRTH, YOUTH, AND EDUCATION*

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	THE CONSULAR SANS SOUCI . . .	3
II	LOUIS BONAPARTE . . .	10
III	HORTENSE EUGÉNIE DE BEAUMAIS . . .	21
IV	THE KING AND QUEEN OF HOLLAND . . .	33
V	THE BIRTH OF NAPOLEON III . . .	54
VI	A FRAGMENT OF AUTOBIOGRAPHY . . .	63
VII	PRINCE LOUIS'S CHILDHOOD IN FRANCE . . .	74
VIII	THE HUNDRED DAYS . . .	83

### BOOK II

#### *THE ITALIAN INSURRECTION.*

I	EXILE AT CONSTANCE . . .	99
II	AUGSBURG—PRINCE LOUIS'S EDUCATION . . .	116
III	ARENENBERG . . .	123
IV	AT THUN . . .	135

CHAPTER	PAGE
V JULY 1830	146
VI. THE ITALIAN INSURRECTION	153
VII. FLIGHT FROM FLORENCE TO PARIS	170
VIII. PARIS IN 1831	185
IX. PRINCE LOUIS'S FIRST VISIT TO LONDON	195

## BOOK III.

*ARENENBERG*

I. LIFE AT THE CHÂTEAU	209
II. PRINCE LOUIS AS HEAD OF HIS PARTY	235
III. VISITORS AT THE CHÂTEAU	257
IV. THE MONARCHY OF JULY	281
V. LOUIS PHILIPPE'S SPIES	294
VI. A POLITICAL MANIFESTO	299
VII. THE PRELIMINARIES OF STRASBURG	309
VIII. THE PRINCE'S DEPARTURE FROM ARENENBERG	328
IX. THE MEETING IN STRASBURG	335
X. OCTOBER 30 1836	347
XI. PRINCE LOUIS'S BANISHMENT TO AMERICA	360
XII. THE TRIAL	381
XIII. ALONE AT ARENENBERG	413
XIV. THE LANDING OF PRINCE LOUIS AT NORFOLK, VIRGINIA	419
APPENDICES	427

# LIST OF PORTRAITS

## AND

## FACSIMILES OF LETTERS.



NAPOLEON III IN HIS SIXTH YEAR (in the possession of the Imperial family) .	<i>To face p</i> 79
FACSIMILE OF A LETTER WRITTEN BY PRINCE LOUIS IN HIS INFANCY TO HIS MOTHER, AND PRESERVED BY HER .	„ 94
FACSIMILE OF LETTER ON THE DEATH OF NAPOLEON I, WRITTEN BY PRINCE LOUIS TO HIS MOTHER IN HIS FOURTEENTH YEAR	„ 100
FACSIMILE OF LETTER FROM PRINCE LOUIS TO HIS FATHER, THE EX-KING OF HOLLAND	„ 117
FACSIMILE OF LETTER FROM PRINCE LOUIS TO HIS MOTHER, WRITTEN IN HIS SIXTEENTH YEAR	„ 120
FACSIMILE OF PRINCE LOUIS'S WRITING AS A YOUNG MAN	„ 121
THE PRINCES NAPOLEON AND LOUIS (in the Aienenberg collection) .	„ 130
FACSIMILE OF LETTER FROM PRINCE LOUIS, DATED FROM THE CAMP AT THUN	„ 137

---

FACSIMILE OF LETTER FROM PRINCE LOUIS TO M. VIEILLARD ON THE POLITICAL CONDITION OF FRANCE	<i>To face p.</i> 245
CHARLES LOUIS NAPOLEON (in the Arenenberg collection)	, 330
FACSIMILE OF LETTER OF NAPOLEON I. TO QUEEN HORTENSE	" 433
FACSIMILE OF LETTER FROM QUEEN HORTENSE TO M. VIEILLARD	" 440

BOOK I

BIRTH. YOUTH, AND EDUCATION.





## CHAPTER I

### THE CONSULAR SANS SOUCI

IN the autumn of 1798 Josephine, left alone with her daughter Hortense, while Napoleon was carrying war through Egypt with her son young Eugene de Beauharnais at his side, busied herself with the welcome duty of finding a retreat for the hero when he should return. He had left commands that a place of rest and homely pleasures should be found for him, either in Burgundy, which he loved, or in one of the pleasant and picturesque environs of Paris

CHAP  
I

Josephine fixed on Malmaison, near Rueil, and she paid for the modest château and domain chiefly with her dowry. Here, with Hortense, she established herself, personally directing the workmen, and designing all those changes which, in the end, made the place a rare and delightful retreat, of which her lord never tired until the purple drew him to the statelier splendours of Saint Cloud and Fontainebleau. Here she died, brave and cheerful and loving to the end, and hence Napoleon withdrew from the embrace of weeping Hortense to St Helena.

Malmaison was the nursery of the Empire, its cradle and its grave. Within its peaceful bounds the scattered elements of polite society were first drawn together

BOOK.  
I

after the storms and excesses of the Revolution At Malmaison the first great salon was thrown open, and here, amid the laughing school girls of Madame Campan and her 'vieux généraux de vingt ans, were formed the manners that prevailed through the Empire

Amid the flowers and in the groves strolled Bernardin de Saint Pierre (sympathetic friend of Prince Louis), Arnault, Talma, Legouvé, Joseph Chémier, Volney, Méhul, and many more distinguished guests from the Hôtel Chantereine waiting impatiently the return of the great captain. The ladies whom the Revolution had frightened into hiding places, came forth to the gracious invitations of the Vicomte de Beauharnais widow. The old and the new order of things, to Napoleon's great satisfaction, mingled in his wife's salons. Under the limes and plantains, and in the arbours of Malmaison, Napoleon's youthful heroes found their wives. Here with Hortense de Beauharnais, in the glory of her budding womanhood, were drawn together such women as the Countess Fanny de Beauharnais, the Countess d'Houdetot, Mesdames Damas, Caffarelli, Andréossi, Tallien, Bégnauld de Saint Jean d'Angély, and Bourdic Viot, to whose wit Voltaire had bowed. Here for their partners they had such men as Gérard, Hoffmann, Desangiers, Lesnem, Cherubini, Despréaux, and Deschamps,—one and all adding to the splendour of the scene which Madame Bonaparte had prepared for the return of her lord.

It was in this Consular Sans Souci that Napoleon and Josephine, with their children Eugene and Hortense, passed their happiest days. To Malmaison they escaped from the Tuileries, which Napoleon said, in one of his mournful moods, were *triste comme la grandeur*. Indeed, the stories of his Malmaison days are the most charming of his life. In the interval of peace that followed his return from Egypt, he revelled in the pleasures of his



BOOK  
I.

was to the widow of the noble of the old régime that the exiles of the noblesse constantly turned for help, for favour, or for place under the new standard of France.

Malmaison was in its fullest glory immediately after Marengo. In the peace which followed this great battle Napoleon spent many domestic days at his Sans Souci, which had grown in beauty and completeness year by year, and was now perfect, full of surprises and contrasts, of laughing gardens and sober park land, with artfully adjusted streams murmuring where an artists skill had bid them flow. It was perhaps Nature decked in ribands. Watteaus rusticity but there was untouched Nature too, and he who chafed amid the formal parterres could wander to the wood beyond.

The special charms that Josephine gave to her little kingdom, her daughter Hortense afterwards imparted to her married home (sad place though it was to her) at Saint Leu. Josephines gardens and grounds became justly famous for their striking variety, and for the matchless collections of trees, shrubs, and flowers that she got together. Napoleons representatives abroad, and Napoleon himself, always bore in mind Josephines passion for flowers, and gladdened her with fresh favourites from every clime<sup>1</sup>. She peopled her little realm with birds. Hers was the first *jardin d'acclimation* in France. As in her salons she brought the men of the old time and the men of the new time together, so in her grounds she mingled the stiffness of the ruled groves of Le Nôtre with the romantic wildness of Nature, which the French call the English garden.

Everywhere appeared the voluptuous taste of the daughter of Martinique and of Paris, whose dreams were

---

<sup>1</sup> *Description des nouveaux Jardins de la France et de ses anciens Châteaux* Paris, 1808

of the gorgeous nature in which her cradle had been rocked, and who loved her flowers better than her jewels

CHAP  
I

Within the château the same glowing spirit reigned. It was approached under a tented portal. Two obelisks in red marble, covered with hieroglyphs from Richelieu's château in Poitou had welcomed the conqueror from Egypt. Napoleon's working-room was tented—as the chambers of unhappy Hortense were at Arenenberg many years afterwards. The dining, drawing, and billiard rooms were all *en suite*. But the private home of Napoleon and Josephine, and then children, was apart, shut off and lying away from the gay company of the château. This was the home within home.

The galleries were furnished with marbles from the antique, bought out of the ruins of Marly, and with busts, that were brought with the obelisks at the entrance. By degrees a fair collection of pictures filled the rooms. Paul Potter, Teniers, Berghem, Claude Lorrain, Vanloo, Bergeret, Gnanet, Bonton—and, of course, Gérard and Girodet.

The spoils of war were mingled with the arts of peace along the broad galleries; and between them Hortense and her schoolfellows talked or flirted with the great captains, savants, and artists of the Consulate. Had Hortense been free to choose in those giddy and happy days of girlhood, her hand would have fallen into that of Duroc.

In 1801 Malmaison was full of merry people. Saint Cloud and Fontainebleau had not overshadowed the little property which Napoleon, in his simpler days, had calculated might be made to yield 8,000 francs a year, including the sale of the vegetables. It was the home of a happy family, blessed with hosts of friends, and giving welcome to the best company left in France, in the holiday hours at the end of each week. Then, in the

BOOK

I.

grounds, the weeks State-work done, Napoleon and Hortense would lead off the game of prisoners base, with renowned generals and captains in their wake. The graver persons would sit round with Josephine, and give judgment on the fray. An eye-witness of the Sans Souci romps has described Napoleon throwing himself heart and soul into the fun, and rolling upon the ground in a fit of laughter before giving himself up to the enemy, while Hortense, full of audacity and cunning in feints, continued to baffle her pursuers. In the exchange of prisoners two enemies were insisted upon for the conqueror of Marengo, but three for Mademoiselle de Beauharnais.

But there were shadows behind this bright picture. There were heartburns and plots among the company. The quiet, reserved, austere young soldier, who could rarely be persuaded to help in Hortense's theatricals, much less to romp in the park, was chosen by Josephine to be the husband of her light hearted and brilliant daughter. Napoleon was childless—would he look satisfied upon the offspring of his brother Louis and his step-daughter Hortense, as his successors? It appears pretty certain that this speculation dwelt for a time in Josephine's brain and that it was the reason why in those Malmaison days she strove to draw the silent and grave Louis towards her daughter. Napoleon approved the project but Josephine was the soul of it and it speaks well for the heart of Hortense that she never in after life uttered a reproach against the authors of her unhappy marriage.

We may linger over the few happy years of girlhood which Hortense de Beauharnais spent at Malmaison, because they are the only thoroughly bright passages in her life. We see her here, amid her stepfather's dazzling company, at her best. A simple, bright witted, accom-

plished girl, just tinged with the tender melancholy cast over her by the misfortunes of her childhood, but full of enthusiasm, and delighted to escape from the monotonous simplicities of Madame Campan's seminary at St. Germain, she bewitched many of the soldiers whose eyes fell upon her, in her plain white frock, as she sat by the side of the stately and gracious Josephine. The loving element in Hortense's nature disarmed every censor who had once passed within its influence. By this element she held sway and mastery over Napoleon at times even when, full of mortification and suspicion, on his return from Egypt, he would not approach Josephine. She was the good angel in the Malmaison house, and when it was broken up it was to her that the scattered members returned again and again in their troubles.



## CHAPTER II.

LOUIS BONAPARTE.

IN 1796 Citizen Jacques Henri Bernardin de Saint Pierre, in Paris, received the following letter, dated De la Valette, June 22 —

Citizen — Forgive an excited youth the liberty he has dared to take, moved by a natural simplicity which lies at his heart, and which appears to be your own only guide.

‘I have lately established myself at Toulon I left my country to escape the bitter persecutions of a tyrant, exercised over a family, the individual members of which desire to be independent, and whose influence might have been hurtful to the pernicious designs of this unjust man.<sup>1</sup> But I say no more of this, which is only too sad in itself, but is unfelt by the just and free man, or, to use your expression, by *l’homme paria*

This work (‘*Harmonies de la Nature*’) deeply affected me but “Paul and Virginia” cost me many tears, and I have no doubt Paul didn’t shed more when he was separated from his sister If, citizen, I have dared to write to you, it is only to ask you the facts of this work, which has not been the fruit of your imagination You say there is some truth in it What is true? What is false? This is my object this is what I have wished to learn in order that another time, when re-reading it, I may be

---

<sup>1</sup> These words refer no doubt to the Archdiacre Luzen, who became the guardian of the family on the death of Charles Bonaparte in February 1785.

able to say to myself, to soothe my distressed sensibility, 'This is true—this is false.'

'Oh, wise and happy man! oh, man of nature, forgive the liberty I take, but respect my motives. Ah! if ever you should have any feeling towards me, remember that I begged your friendship, not for to-day, when I am young in learning as well as age, and am consequently unworthy to converse with you, but for the future, because then having acquired a little more experience, I shall have the right to pray again for your friendship, or, if I should feel myself unworthy of it, to beg your pardon for the present. I have the honour to be, citizen, with the profoundest esteem for the man and the author, your very humble and very obedient servant and friend, Louis Bonaparte, aged 18 years, of Ajaccio in Corsica.'

Bernardin de Saint-Pierre was to address his reply, if he should honour the writer with a few words, to the Citizen Louis Bonaparte, *post restante*, Toulon. The author of 'Paul and Virginia' replied to the sensitive lad in so kindly a manner, that from the above letter a strong friendship was begun, which lasted through the good and evil fortunes—alike in many points, as the actors were alike in many essentials of character—of prince and author.

The boy whose heart was penetrated with the woes of Paul and Virginia became the shy man who kept in the shady walks of Malmaison while the games were going forward, and remained over-charged with sensitiveness to the end of his days.

Louis Bonaparte, who was born at Ajaccio on September 2, 1778, and was consequently nine years younger than Napoleon I, was the brother whom Napoleon took under his especial care, treating him as his son and pupil. Between the master and the pupil there were natural antagonisms, that could never be reconciled, and

## BOOK

## I

would have trimmed, in some unregarded place, the lamp of the student. His brother was both father and hero to him.<sup>1</sup> Louis loved Napoleon with an ardour that neither ill treatment nor separation could abate with a constancy that was proof against misfortune and death. He served him while honour permitted with thorough forgetfulness of self, and with a power and an intellect equal to his zeal. The Emperor who was a grudging panegyrist of his brother, wrote to Joseph Bonaparte in 1795,<sup>2</sup> that he was much pleased with Louis. 'He is a good fellow—but one also in my style: zeal, *esprit*, good health, talent, punctual habits, kindness—he unites them all. I feel the loss of him acutely. He was of great use to me. No man would be more active, more skilful, more engaging. He did all he liked in Paris. Since Louis is no longer with me I can set about only leading affairs.'

That Napoleon tried the sensitive qualities of his brother's nature to his great injury is only too certain. At no time of his life had the Consul been a boy, and in no part of his career does he appear to have been swayed by the impulse of his heart. He said to De Bourrienne—so De Bourrienne records—in the heyday of his life that *he loved nobody*. 'I do not even love my brothers—perhaps Joseph a little—and Duroc, because he is stern. I really believe the fellow never shed a tear.'<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'You are the eldest of the family,' said the Archdiacre Lucien on his deathbed to Joseph, but there stands its chief (pointing to Napoleon)—never forget that!

'Je suis très-content de Louis. Il répond à mon espérance et à l'attente que j'avais conçue de lui. C'est un bon sujet mais sans cet de ma façon: chaleur, esprit, santé, talent, commerce exact, bonté, il réunit tout. Je sens vivement

la privation de Louis: il m'était d'un grand secours, pas d'homme plus actif, plus adroit, plus manuvrant. Il faisait à Paris tout ce qu'il voulait; s'il eût été ici l'affaire de la pépinière serait finie, ainsi que celle de Millé. Depuis que je n'ai plus Louis, je ne peux vaquer qu'aux affaires principales. — *Correspondance de Napoléon I. à Joseph Bonaparte, le 6 septembre 1795*

<sup>2</sup> According to other testimonies

The sternness which Napoleon admired in the 'fellow' who had never shed a tear, he himself showed when dealing with his brothers. He made them ample partakers of his glory, but he held them firmly within the lines of his general design. They were so many caryatides to the temple of his fame. Two of them, however, he could not subdue absolutely to his will. Lucien kept proudly apart from him throughout, and refused the crown of Naples, saying he would have no kingdom of which he was not king; but it was only when Louis had ceased to be a boy, and could walk 'with the certain step of man,' that he refused to stand always at attention to the Imperial word of command.

At St Helena Napoleon expressed his fear that he had done his good brother Louis wrong, and then he forgave him the 'libel' he published in his own justification.<sup>1</sup> He had refused to see that his brother's heart was unlike his own. Napoleon could bend all his being to his own ambition. Louis was stone-deaf to the trump of glory—was blind to the glittering pleasures of a court and, with reed and book, could have lived the life of a shepherd. Of some such pastoral life he had dreamed, with his first love, Sophie or Émilie, for his shepherdess. Napoleon admitted that he was even a brilliant soldier, always at the post of duty and of danger. He was grave and romantic by nature, but fiery by culture. He would head the fight with ardour, but his phlegm was impenetrable when he was offered the laurel.

Careless of the glories of the field, he was also unfortunate in his home

---

this son of an aubergist was affable, soft, humane, and generous. It is certain that his companions in arms deeply deplored his loss when he fell at Reichenbach in May 1813.

<sup>1</sup> 'Je pardonne à Louis le libelle qu'il a publié en 1820. Il est plein d'assertions fausses et de pièces falsifiées.'

## BOOK

## I

While he was in Paris, just before the Egyptian expedition, his evil star (according to Napoleon) drew him into the company of the daughter of the Marquis de Beauharnais. The young lady in question was Émile de Beauharnais, Hortense's cousin and schoolfellow. Louis, it is said, fell in love with this Émile—*éperdument*, according to Napoleon. In an evil hour he told his love to the intimate friend of the family, Casabianca. This old Republican ally took alarm at the probable consequences of an alliance of a Bonaparte with the daughter of an *émigré*, and disclosed the secret to Napoleon.

‘It is certain, said Napoleon, reviewing his own conduct from the calm and distance of St. Helena, ‘that this marriage would have shocked public opinion, and have given rise to the attacks of party men who were already watching me with alarm. I did not think it possible to teach reason on the subject to a young man of twenty so I thought the better course would be to feign entire ignorance of the matter, and to send him away on a military mission. The next day a post-chaise put the hundred leagues which separate Lyons from Paris between the lovers. But in spite of this precaution, neither absence nor the Egyptian campaign,<sup>1</sup> nor even the marriage of Mademoiselle de Beauharnais with M. de Lavalette during his absence in 1796, could stay the ravages of this first love—which exercised a fatal influence on Louis's future.

This is the commonly received version of Louis's first attachment, and possibly it is that in which Napoleon believed. In a letter twenty pages long,<sup>2</sup> Louis wrote the history of his life to his future wife, a few days before their marriage. In this confession he declares

<sup>1</sup> Louis returned from Egypt, invalided, on March 11, 1799. De Bourrienne says that he carried home with him to Madame de Bourrienne

the first Cashmere shawl ever seen in France.

<sup>2</sup> In the possession of the Imperial family.

that he had passionately loved a young person named Sophie, but he makes no mention of Émilie de Beauharnais. Émilie was in love with Louis, and was sent to Madame Campan's school after her marriage, possibly to be cured of her passion for Louis and her hatred of M de Lavalette, her husband. Queen Hortense believed that Émilie was mistaken in her idea that Louis continued to love her. And she shows good cause for the suspicion, for when Madame de Lavalette applied to the First Consul to obtain a divorce, in order that she might marry his brother, and he referred to Louis for his pleasure, the latter replied that 'were she free he would not marry her, the small-pox had so altered her!'

Louis Bonaparte was, as a lady who knew him well remarked to me, 'dreadfully sensitive to the tender passion'. But this Sophie appears to have been the passion of his early life, and it undoubtedly saddened his younger years.

His brother found him constant employment<sup>1</sup>. At the beginning of 1800 he was despatched to the Czar as Ambassador; but the tragic end of Paul arrested his journey at Berlin, and he returned to Paris to find himself appointed colonel of the 5th Dragoons. Next he fought at Marengo, and then travelled, to divert himself, in Prussia. On his return to Paris Napoleon renewed, but for the time to no purpose, the request he had before addressed to him, that he would marry his adopted daughter, Hortense. Sophie's lover, and the beloved of Madame de Lavalette, refused. Yet Madame Campan has attested that three years before the marriage, when Louis Bonaparte one day saw Hortense taking her

<sup>1</sup> *Au Chef de Brigade Louis Bonaparte*

Paris, 29 ventôse, an VIII (20 mars, 1800)

Vous laisserez le commandement de votre régiment au plus  
VOL. I.

ancien chef-d'escadron, et vous partirez, dans la nuit, pour vous rendre à Brest par Rennes. Vous remettrez la lettre ci-jointe au général Brune, et à Brest les lettres ci-jointes aux

BOOK  
I

simple dinner by the side of her governess, he whispered to this severely discreet lady words which led her to believe that he would not be disinclined to take the pretty and sparkling schoolgirl for his wife. The governess probably mistook Hortense for Émilie—before she had the small pox.

Napoleon says that when the young couple came together they loved each other, while King Louis, in his Memoirs, alludes to his marriage day as a most mournful one, that fully foreshadowed all the unhappiness that was to date from it. But, once married, there is evidence to prove that Louis was moved by the charms and the fine character of his wife, as we shall see presently Louis's heart was a feeling one. He was forced one day, against his remonstrances, to witness the execution of four Chouan leaders at Alençon and he testified his indignation at the death of the men, whom he had endeavoured in vain to save, by shutting himself up in his apartments for the rest of the day, and commanding his officers to follow his example.

Yet, even in these early days, Louis Bonaparte was a morose self contained man. 'In the summer of 1801, says Napoleon, 'he expressed a desire to be present at the manœuvres which were about to take place at Potsdam. I consented willingly, in the hope that a long journey in the north, and the multitudes of objects which would engage his attention, would get rid of a *marasme moral et physique* that alarmed me. He started with the idea of travelling about Europe but events hastened his return to Paris and prevented his

généraux Bruix, Gautaume, et à l'ordonnateur Najac.

Vous visiterez tous les vaisseaux qui restent dans l'arsenal de Brest et tous les forts.

De là vous vous rendrez à Lorient, où vous visiterez tous les vaisseaux qui sont dans l'arsenal ou dans le port, et vous reviendrez par Nantes.

BO NAPARTE.

visiting Russia, as he had intended. Soon afterwards he set out with his regiment to join the Franco-Spanish army that was to enter Portugal. The Peace of Amiens brought his military expeditions to a close<sup>1</sup>

Louis had long since heard of Josephine's desire to have him for a son-in-law, and all authorities appear to agree in fixing the responsibility of his unhappy marriage upon Napoleon's wife. She was fond of Louis. It was Louis who accompanied her on her journey to meet the Emperor, when the conqueror was returning from Egypt, full of suspicions against his consort. Louis alone, among the Emperor's brothers, treated Josephine loyally, the rest were for ever plotting and acting against her, and had, no doubt, a hand in rousing in Napoleon that anger which made his final separation from his wife an easier task to him. In her letters to her daughter, after the marriage, Josephine has always an affectionate message for Louis. In one (January 24, 1803) she writes 'Kiss your husband for me, and tell him I am beginning to love him madly, and thank him for his little notes, which are very gracious'. She may have hoped that Napoleon would be content to see his crown pass to the children of Hortense and his young brother, and would therefore put aside those ideas of divorce which had poisoned her life since the day when Bonaparte became First Consul. But the fact remains that it was Jose-

---

<sup>1</sup> 'La signature du traité d'Amiens le ramena en France, et ce fut alors que son mariage avec Hortense devint l'objet d'une considération sérieuse. Il connaissait depuis longtemps le désir de l'impératrice Joséphine de lui donner le nom de gendre, mais encore sous l'impression de son premier amour, il évitait avec soin toute occasion de se trouver seul avec

elle. Un bal à la Malmaison fut l'écueil où sa résolution vint échouer. Une attaque aussi vive qu'inattendue lui arracha son consentement, et le 4 janvier 1802 la bénédiction nuptiale fut prononcée sur deux êtres dignes de s'aimer, mais que le destin sépara par des impressions que rien ne put effacer.'—*Mémorial de Sainte-Hélène*



BOOK  
L

phine who ardently desired to see her only daughter married to Louis Bonaparte, and that all her powers were exerted to achieve this object. In a worldly sense the marriage was not a brilliant one for Louis. Both yielded to pressure—the wife to that of her mother, the husband to that of his brother. Both had noble qualities, and these appeared afterwards, when they had been long separated, in the courage with which they would act in common for the good of their children.

## CHAPTER III.

HORTENSE EUGÉNIE DE BEAUHARNAIS

CHAP  
III

THE spirited girl, surrounded by Madame Campan's pupils and her schoolfellows, who, as daughter of the hostess, was leader in all the amusements of Malmaison, was full of a soft gaiety. Her sunny curls played over a face remarkable for the sweetness of its expression, for the vivacity and kindness of the blue eyes, and for the delicacy and refinement of every feature. An admirer has said that Mademoiselle de Beauharnais had the grace of the palm. Her figure was at once round and thin, her complexion was of the dazzling whiteness the Creoles often show. She called to the minds of old men the grace, the lightness, and the abounding goodness which her mother showed when she was young.

Nothing could be more charming, Madame d'Abrantès has recorded, than a ball at Malmaison, composed of the crowd of young girls whom the military family of the First Consul had brought together, and who already composed the court of Madame Bonaparte. Of this society Hortense de Beauharnais was queen—not only because she was the First Consul's adopted daughter, but because she had commanding qualities of head and heart even in her teens.

Hortense was early acquainted with sorrow; and the courage with which she bore her cross through many years, meeting slander (not always unprovoked) with deeds of charity, and treachery with a faith in mankind

Chapter of the wildest excitement like school boys broken  
I. loose !  
1809-80

In another letter his brother William\* writes —

I was only twelve years old when he left home on the 4th of December 1831 and I never saw him again. Still the unceasing flow of his affection towards us all which time and distance seemed not in the least to abate kept him as fresh in our thoughts and affections as if we had never been separated. Few families have been so closely knitted together as we have been and this was largely owing to the strong hold he had on us and the self denying generosity which he exerted on our behalf. Though abundantly prosperous and flattered with friendly recognition by the highest he never forgot the auld hoose at hame and its inmates. He left on my youthful mind an unpression of one born to command. There was no resisting him !

On arrival at Calcutta, in July 1832 Login found himself posted to H. M. Buffs and in October accompanied the regiment to Dinapore. Here he learnt that the Commander in Chief had ordered him to be transferred to the 1st Brigade of Horse Artillery and he was appointed to take medical charge of the 3rd Troop at Dum Dum. At this place he was stationed until December, 1833, and here too like many young officers in the Bengal Artillery had cause to bless the earnest religious influences and true Christian piety which pervaded the great headquarter station, and of

---

\* The Rev William S. Login, for thirty years Presbyterian minister of Sale Clipp's Land, Australia.

which Major—afterwards General—Powney, of the Bengal Artillery, was the chief centre.\*

Chapter  
I  
1809-39

John Spencer Login was naturally of a serious and earnest disposition ; but it was at this period of his life that were chiefly laid the seeds of that deeply-rooted piety and strong faith, which were the ruling features of his character in after-life, and which so plainly governed his every word and action, though he was not one to make a parade of his religious convictions indeed, it was this very dignity of reserve with regard to his inmost feelings that impressed those brought in contact with him.

While at Dum Dum he was selected by Government to proceed to Persia as medical officer to the detachment under Colonel Pasmore, sent to organize the army of Futteh Ali Shah, but was induced to withdraw his name in favour of another medical officer who was most anxious for the post.

The appointment of Dr Login to the Horse Artillery at Dum Dum had been in the first instance rather a sore point with the Brigadier commanding there (Sir C Brown, K.C.B ), he having applied for the post for a friend of his own. Login had therefore some natural prejudice to overcome on the part of his commanding officer, but in the end his zealous attention to his public duties so won the heart of the Brigadier, that when in December, 1833, he was made over by Lord

---

\* See Kaye's "*Lives of Indian Officers*"—"Major D'Arcy Todd."

Chapter  
I.  
1809 89

William Bentinck to the service of the Nizam of Hyderabad the Commandant was among the foremost in expressing the regrets of the community at losing him. A silver breakfast service was presented to him and a farewell dinner given in his honour by the corps—rather an unusual compliment to a young assistant-surgeon

The whole is described by him in a letter to his mother —

What do you think of your son being honoured with a farewell dinner given by the station and invitations sent to all my friends to meet me in the name of the Brigadier commanding and the officers of artillery—upwards of forty at dinner the old Brigadier in the chair with your humble servant on his right? After the cloth was removed the Commandant proposed my health in the most flattering terms toast drunk with honours (aye more than honour for there was kindness in the manner they did it) the regimental band playing Logie o Buchan (for which I am indebted to some Scotch friends who were present) and when I attempted to return thanks I fairly broke down—it was too much for me! When I tell you that my breakfast table is now adorned with a handsome silver service and that my old Captain (generally looked upon as a miser) sent me before leaving a cheque for 500 rupees (£50) to help my new outfit and uniform need I tell you that I am sorry to part with all my friends here? I am sure you will not think that I tell you this in any boastful spirit but I cannot withhold expressing my feelings to you besides I know what pleasure it will give you

I am quite an artilleryman now Bluejacket for ever! I have been trying my hand at the great guns too and have made one of the best shots, I assure you! Indeed on the strength of it I

think I shall apply for a lieutenant's commission in the Nizam's Chapter  
artillery!

I.  
1809-39.

On arrival at Bolarum, Login found himself appointed to the medical charge of the 6th Regiment Nizam's Infantry, which he continued to hold at Hengolee, Ellichpore, and on active service with a brigade of troops in the Bheel Country, until December, 1835, when he saw his name in orders as Civil-Surgeon at Howrah, near Calcutta. Proceeding at once to join, he marched from the Deccan, *viâ* Nagpore and the Nerbuddah, to Mirzapore, and found on his arrival there, in January, 1836, that he had been transferred to Fort William as Garrison-Surgeon.

For these appointments he was indebted to Mr. James Ranald Martin—afterwards Sir Ranald Martin—Presidency-Surgeon, who, before Login left Calcutta, had expressed his intention of securing his services at the Presidency whenever opportunity offered. He had not held this post long, when Mr. Martin recommended him to Sir Charles—afterwards Lord—Metcalf, as surgeon on his personal staff, when proceeding to assume the Government of the North-West Provinces. Dr. Login remained with Sir Charles in this capacity at Agra for two years, occupied to his heart's content in such work as he delighted in; for Sir Charles enabled him to set on foot a hospital or dispensary for the poor, and he was further engaged as superintendent of the Famine

Chapter I.  
1809-39 Relief Society, the work of which at that period was extremely onerous, owing to the terrible distress prevalent.

At this time he organized the Orphan Asylum at Secundra, which has expanded since into its present proportions and proved such a boon. He here formed the lasting friendship of James Thomason, afterwards Lieut. Governor N W P, which continued throughout his career. Here, also, he learnt to know Henry Havelock, Broadfoot and Edward Sanders, of the Bengal Engineers, ever after highly valued friends of his.

This was a happy busy time, under a Chief whom he so much loved and respected, and it was a great sorrow to him when at length in December, 1837 Sir Charles Metcalfe left Agra to return to England, where he was appointed to the post of Governor of Jamaica. Login accompanied him to Calcutta and loth to say farewell, went out with him to sea, returning only with the pilot vessel.

Sir Theophilus Metcalfe (brother of Lord Metcalfe) at this period applied for him to be sent to Delhi, but as Dr Ranken elected to return to his duties there, Login was appointed to Hooghley as Civil Surgeon and Postmaster, being posted at the same time to his old corps—the Horse Artillery, at Dum Dum. He was, however, soon to quit this for a locality with which he was afterwards much associated, and where his name was destined to be widely known among

Europeans and natives alike, as the originator of many benevolent and charitable institutions.

Chapter  
I,  
1809-39.

Dr. Stevenson, the Residency-Surgeon, being compelled to leave Lucknow and proceed to England on sick-leave, the acting vacancy was, in April, 1838, offered to Login by Lord Auckland, whose interest had been specially requested by Sir Charles Metcalfe on his behalf. Accordingly, in May, he became Acting Residency-Surgeon at Lucknow, and was soon after appointed Postmaster-General in Oude, in addition to his other duties. It might have been thought that the work of those two appointments would be sufficient to occupy the whole of any one man's time, but such was by no means the opinion of Dr. Login, who was filled with an eager desire to do his part towards alleviating the distress he saw around him among the suffering native population.

The famine which had so terribly prevailed throughout the N W. Provinces, had extended into Oude, and driven thousands of poor starving wretches to seek relief in the city of Lucknow. A large public subscription had been raised a little time before he arrived, at the instance of Colonel Low, the Resident, and Captain Paton, and as Login had had much experience in this work, both at Agra and as a member of the Relief Committee in Calcutta, he was asked to superintend the application of the fund at Lucknow. With characteristic energy he threw his whole soul into the work, and drew up certain proposals on the subject which



Chapter  
I  
1809-89

were unanimously adopted by the Committee. An institution called the "Poors House" or "Gharib-khana, was thereupon established, where the most destitute were received lodged, and fed. Here they were classified according to their needs the sick, the blind, the maimed, and the lame being placed in different wards, while special arrangements were made for the comfort of children and families, and the public report says "Order, cleanliness and excellent arrangements were everywhere manifest, exhibiting a well-conducted and most useful institution." The whole was under his personal and daily supervision

At the same time he was enabled, by the liberality of the King of Oude—Mahomed Ali Shah—also to provide food shelter and clothing for upwards of 500 infirm persons daily, while of those able to work, several thousands were employed on the buildings then in progress at Hoosainabad, under Azimoolah Khan, Derogah There was, moreover, in the city of Lucknow an old native hospital and dispensary, founded by Nusseeroodeen Hyder, the preceding Sovereign of Oude which had fallen into neglect, and this also was reorganized by Dr Login, and rendered capable of treating 140 cases daily

These various institutions were in full swing, and Login had settled down to a life of hard work, "such as his soul loved with every moment occupied, when the *Gazette* announced that Dr Stevenson (who was still drawing his official salary as Residency-Surgeon

and also as A D.C. to the King of Oude) had been promoted to the grade of surgeon, which disqualified him from holding the appointment any longer

Chapter  
I.  
1809-39

On this, knowing how fully satisfied both the Resident and the Governor-General were, with the manner in which he had performed the duties of his position, Login abstained on principle from making any application for the vacancy, having a conscientious conviction that the Government ought to be the best judge of the man most qualified for any particular post. The Resident, as well as the community at large, felt certain that he would be confirmed in the appointment, and in consequence of this general belief no other medical officer applied for it. Dr Stevenson, however, exerted all his private interest to retain his appointment in spite of his disqualification. Owing to Login's scruples, he was enabled to do so with success, and it was arranged that he should be allowed to return to his duties in January, 1839.

In the meantime, Lord Auckland, in August, 1838, offered Login the choice of a civil appointment, or to go on active service with the army of the Indus, then assembling for the invasion of Afghanistan. Login, in reply, expressed his willingness to be employed in any way in which he might be thought most useful, adding that "if appointed to the army, he hoped to be allowed to join the artillery again."

This answer so pleased the Governor-General that he himself requested Sir Henry Fane to post Dr. Login

Chapter  
I.  
1809-39

to one of the troops of Horse Artillery ordered on active service and he was directed to join the army on the frontier as soon as the return of Dr Stevenson set him free from his duties at Lucknow. Such was his eagerness however for service in the field that when he learnt in October that the troop of Horse Artillery to which he was posted was ordered to the frontier, and would have to be placed temporarily in medical charge of the doctor of H.M. 16th Lancers, he wrote to head quarters offering to throw up his present well paid appointment and proceed forthwith to join his troop. Gratified with such zeal the Commander in Chief ordered that his travelling expenses should be paid to Kurnaul where he arrived in November, 1838 and found himself placed in medical charge of *all* the Horse Artillery with an assistant surgeon under him.

Though his residence at Lucknow had been so short barely six months in all many were the expressions of regret and goodwill from all classes of the community on his departure the subscribers to the Gharib-khana especially recording their unanimous admiration of his benevolent zeal and laboured assiduity in personally superintending every department of this Institution, the numerous sick among them having also received daily from Dr Login the great benefit of his own personal medical attendance.

Colonel Low, the Resident at the same time addressed a most complimentary letter to him, in the name of the whole European community, expressive of

their admiration for his untiring efforts for their welfare, and adding—

Chapter  
I.  
1809-39.

I have good evidence of the fact that great numbers of natives of this city have expressed, in their own circles of society, their admiration of the zeal and kind feeling displayed by you at the Hospital, and of the unwearied personal labours which you voluntarily took upon yourself during the late sickly season, in attending upon your numerous patients, while many of the Christian inhabitants have often spoken to myself in the warmest terms of the kindness which they and their families have received from you, in your medical capacity, at their own houses

I sincerely hope that wherever Providence may cast your future lot in life, you may enjoy health and opportunities to continue the practice of similar acts of benevolence and usefulness to those which you have so conspicuously performed at Lucknow, and which will ever produce a pleasing reward, in the consciousness of possessing talents and energies actively exercised for the benefit of your fellow-creatures

I have the honour to be,

*The Residency,  
Lucknow,*

J Low,  
*Resident*

Oct 22nd, 1838

It was also gratifying to Dr Login to find that the improvements he had inaugurated in the Post Office during his short tenure of office were highly appreciated, both by the European community and by the Postmaster-General in Calcutta

The following letter to his mother was written from

Chapter Umballa, November 1838, just after leaving Luck-  
 I now —  
 1809-39

The Commander in Chief was so kind as to order my *dak* to be paid and I was directed to make all possible speed to reach Kurnaul on the 1st instant

The King of Oude sent for me a second time to the Palace before I left he received me most kindly and honoured me by an embrace! (which I assure you is considered by no means a small compliment) and in other respects treated me most liberally presenting me with a dress of honour or *Khillut*

He has thus put it into my power to send a small token of my gratitude to the kind Lord Chief Miss and Mrs Adam and Dr Shortt in the form of some handsome shawls which he himself put on me I hope to be able shortly to send you a sketch of my dress of State which was I understand much more valuable than such as is usually given.

We are on the march to Ferozepore on the banks of the Sutlej where the whole army is to meet to make a grand display before the Commander in Chief Lord Auckland and Runjeet Singh preparatory to proceeding on more active service

I had to walk through at least three miles of tents at Kurnaul before finding Tom Drevor who was encamped at the other end of the lines from me This will give you some idea of the force which is to assemble at Ferozepore for this is only two-thirds of it! The number of fighting men it is true does not exceed 15 000 but of followers there are no less than 150 000!!

I must now conclude earnestly entreating that God's abundant grace may be vouchsafed to us both

Believe me your most affectionate son

J. S. LOON

The bonds of friendship with Henry Lawrence (who

was there on duty with his troop of Horse Artillery) Chapter I. 1809-39.  
were drawn very close during that march, they shared the same tent and were constantly together, being of one mind on every matter which they discussed

Henry Lawrence had not long been married, and had to leave his young wife behind, but she joined him at Ferozepore, and Login was much with them until the army marched for Candahar

On leaving Ferozepore, the army of the Indus, under Sir Willoughby Cotton, advanced through Scinde and Beloochistan to Candahar, where it formed a junction with the main body under Sir John Keane. Login accompanied the force, and shortly after he arrived at Candahar, in May, 1839, he was asked by Major D'Arcy Todd to accompany his mission to Herát, with the option of remaining there, or returning through Turkestan to Cabul with Major Eldred Pottinger.

The military authorities, however, were very unwilling to lose his services, and it was only on his personal application at Lord Keane's headquarters, stating his desire to join the mission, that leave was at last granted.

On his departure, he received from the Commander-in-Chief a most gratifying official letter, testifying to his valuable services

## CHAPTER II

### HERÁT

Chapter II  
1839-40 'For three or four hundred years" says Colonel Malleeson,\* 'the valley and city of Herát were the granary and garden of Central Asia. In that valley and within the walls of that city the desolating presence of the Afghan was, in those days never felt. The inhabitants, of mixed Persian and Turkí blood were industrious, inventive, energetic and pains taking. The fertile valley of the Herirud produced supplies far more than sufficient for their simple wants. Their city lay on the intersecting point of the roads which communicated with the markets of Europe of India, of Bokhara, and of Persia.

' Under these circumstances Herát soon became the most important commercial city in Central Asia. Her streets were adorned with palaces with markets, with aqueducts the remains of which even now excite wonder and admiration. The courts of her ruling princes became centres to which the intellectual

aristocracy of Central Asia resorted—all who were famous in poesy, in science, in astronomy, in architectural acquirements. Her fame was sung by poets, and recorded by historians. Nor was the prosperity confined to the city alone. It spread into the valleys, to the north, and to the west. To this day the valley of the Mughab, even as far as Merv, is strewn with ruins of castles and villas which attested the prosperity of the parent city. Nor was that prosperity transient. Conquerors indeed came, and besieged, occasionally they even stormed, the city. But those conquerors were not Afghans. They did not carry in their hands a withering and perpetual desolation. After coming to conquer they remained to repair. And so inherent were the advantages possessed by the city, that after each new conquest she rose again almost immediately from her ashes, and recovered her former prosperity. Herát still remained the commercial queen of Central Asia . . . . until the year 1717"—when the Afghans first captured the city.

In such glowing and eloquent language does the able pen of Malleson describe the famous city. Some idea of its size in former times may be gathered from the fact, that when in 1219 it was taken by Chingiz Khan, it was found to contain 12,000 retail shops, 6,000 public baths, caravansera, and water-mills, 350 schools and monastic institutions, and 144,000 occupied houses. One million and a half of men perished in the siege. Again, in the time of Tamerlane (1381), the pro-



Chapter II. 1839-40 verb was universal Which is the most splendid city in the world? If you answer truly you must say Herát!"

But it is not only on account of its wealth and commerce that Herát has such a paramount position in Central Asia and it was chiefly its strategical importance as dominating the road to India which induced Lord Auckland to despatch thither the mission under Major D Arcy Todd. His aim was not only to further the commercial interests of the East India Company by opening its markets to British trade, but also to cultivate amicable relations with the ruler of Herat Shah Kamran and by aiding him with grants of money and the support of the English name enable him to maintain his independence, and withstand the attacks of Persia instigated by Russian agents.

The distress among the starving population was great and the want of confidence in their ruler crushed all heart out of the people and prevented their making any effort to better their condition. Shah Kamran was at this time a perfect cipher in the hands of his Wuzer Yar Mahomed but his own character for brutality, cruelty and deceit was such that there was no hope of matters being better conducted in his own hands.

He was the son of Mahmoud, the last of the Sadokse Kings of Cabul, and had in his fathers lifetime been made by him Governor of Herát When

Mahmoud was driven from Cabul and deprived of his kingdom, he retreated to Herat, which place still remained faithful to him, and calling himself "King of Herát," under the suzerainty of Persia, remained there until he died by the hand of his son Kamrân, who thereupon proclaimed himself King.

Chapter  
II  
1839-40.

Shah Kamrân soon proved himself a very troublesome vassal, frequently making raids on the neighbouring tribes and villages wherever he could obtain spoil; and having constantly to be called to account for his filibustering behaviour, he was seldom in favour with his suzerain, who was at last provoked into attacking him in his stronghold.

The renowned siege of Herát by Mahmoud Shah, King of Persia had taken place only two years before the mission arrived there, when the brave Eldred Pottinger was the instigator and leader of the successful defence made by the Herátis against the Persian army.

The following extract from a letter written by Login to his mother gives his first impressions of Herát —

*July 29th, 1839*

. . . You will be glad to hear that we have reached this famed fortress in safety. Our political negotiations are, I think, going on well, and I hope ere long that British influence may be fully established here. The city and its environs have suffered severely from the siege, not one-fourth of its former population remains. Under a good Government it might in a short time

Chapter II. 1839-40 regain its former prosperity but such is not Shah Kamrán's! We expect to be allowed to spend part of the money we have brought in repairing the fortifications giving advances to the cultivators and supporting the poor of which there are an immense number but these Asiatics are so jealous of our interference and so suspicious of our motives that there is no certainty as to what we may be permitted to do. The people of the surrounding country are wild and lawless but they have a very high opinion of individual British skill and prowess and consequently respect us greatly. I have no doubt that with God's blessing much good may be done amongst them. I believe it is almost decided that I am to remain here for some time. I cannot say that I at all dislike the idea of doing so. the country is very fine climate to an European delightful snow for four months in the year fruit of all kinds in great abundance only man is vile!

I think I *ought* to remain here—a wide field of usefulness is open to me and I may through Divine blessing be preparing a way for a Christian mission in this centre of Asia ere long. Colonel Stoddart who was here lately with Pottinger is now at Bokhara sent as an agent from the British Government. The Usbeks affected to treat him as a Russian spy and put him in prison but he has found favour with his jailor and is by no means uncomfortable. I believe him to be a sincere Christian and who knows but what the city Holy Bokhara as it is called may yet feel his influence.

There are several families of Jews here. I had yesterday a long conversation with two of them. they were much delighted with part of the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans which I read to them in Persian\*. While here my allowance may be about

Jews are settled in great numbers over Eastern Persia and Turkestan though only a few families were then to be found at Ilrat who however were well affected to the mission.

Among themselves they use the Persian language written in the Hebrew character and as they appeared much delighted with the small tract which

700 rupees per month, but expenses are very great      The pool of Chapter  
the city are to be my special charge      II

There is something unique in the idea of our Government 1839-40  
strengthening itself by acts of benevolence in the interior of the  
city, while its walls are being repaired without

The courier starts immediately.      God bless you all

Your affectionate son,

JOHN

The Herát Mission was composed of the following  
officers —

Major D'ARCY TODD, Envoy ,  
Capt EDWARD SANDERS, Bengal Engineers ,  
Lieut EDWARD CONOLLY, Bengal Engineers ,  
Lieut JAMES ABBOTT, Bengal Engineers ,  
Lieut RICHMOND SHAKESPEAR, Bengal Artillery ,  
Lieut. CHARLES F NORTH, Bombay Engineers ,  
Dr. RITCHIE, Bombay Army ,  
Dr LOGIN, Bengal Army ,

joining Major Eldred Pottinger at Herát in August,  
1839.

Login had got one of their Rabbis to transcribe for them, he was induced to  
employ the same man on a similar transcription of Martyn's Persian Testament

This was not finished when the mission left Herát, so Login took the manu-  
script with him to Cabul, where he met a son of the old Rabbi, just arrived with  
letters from Stoddart at Bokhára      Him, Login engaged to complete the work,  
leaving him in the charge of Major Daves, B H A , who took the Jew with him  
to Jellallabad, where the transcription was finished during the siege and sent  
down to Peshawur by the first *kafilá*, which traversed the Khyber after Pollock's  
advance      Thirteen years after Login had the happiness of hearing that this  
last named Jew had through this work been led to enquire into the truth of the  
Gospel, and died a Christian at Bombay — *Ferrier's "Caravan Journey,"*  
p 123.

Chapter  
II  
1839-40

Login undertook the charge of the poor amounting to 2 000 who had for some time before the arrival of mission been supported by Eldred Pottinger, at the expense of the British Government

As soon as arrangements could be made by the Engineer officers, a portion of the destitute people were employed in the fortifications of the city but a large number of females and infirm persons remained to be provided for and continued under charge of Dr Login during the stay of the mission. For those of this class who were unable to earn a livelihood an asylum was established by him, in which employment was given to the blind and infirm according to their various circumstances, and with a success that was truly gratifying To those able to work at their own homes (the custom of the country preventing out-door work for females) he endeavoured with great success to re-establish the manufacture of carpets for which Herát had always been famed—the women being employed in spinning the cotton and wool required for the purpose and receiving a supply of food (*attah*, flour) for their labour

On the success of these arrangements being reported to the Court of Directors a sum of 700 rupees per mensem was ordered to be placed at Dr Login's disposal to carry on this work, and also that of a dispensary and hospital which he had established and which was daily attended by crowds of the sick poor of the city and surrounding country

In addition to these duties above mentioned, the Commissariat and Post Office were placed under Dr. Login's charge, the former being of great importance, owing to the famine at Herát after the siege, and the necessity of obtaining supplies from a great distance, *i.e.*, Seistan and Meiv—not only for the mission, but also for the numerous poor dependent on it, and the latter including the establishment of horsemen for the protection of travellers between Herát and Candahar, a distance of 400 miles. Dr. Login personally inspected all the intermediate stations, conciliating the Douani tribes in the neighbourhood (by which the safe passage of the mission was afterwards much facilitated). The arrangements on this line were so successful, that the members of the mission were able to communicate with Candahar in less time than letters took to go from Candahar to Cabul, though the distance in the former case is greater by 100 miles, while so efficient was the protection of the road under the system employed—*viz*, that of keeping at each station two or more Afghan foot-soldiers belonging to the *Sir-i-Kharl* (chief of the tribe) of most influence in the neighbourhood—that during the whole eighteen months only two or three trifling robberies took place throughout the whole distance.

During 1840, Login was despatched on a special mission to Candahar. His chief object was to convey despatches and presents for transmission to England, and to bring back the treasure (sovereigns) for use of

Chapter II. 1839-40 the mission at Herát He made a most successful journey, meeting with the utmost courtesy and kindness at every *Khail* he passed through probably owing as much to his control over the guards on the road and his well armed party of twelve, as to his reputation as a *Feringhi Hakim*

At one of his halting places however, he was near falling a victim to Afghan treachery. He had been received by an Afghan chief in the neighbourhood of Washeer in a most courteous and hospitable manner, and honoured with an *istigbal* in Afghan style—the eldest son of the chief having been sent out to meet him with display of feats of horsemanship. The principal men of the tribe were also invited to a feast in his honour.

It was arranged before parting for the night that the Khan with an escort should accompany Login next morning for a short way towards Ghurishk. It happened however that the latter awoke very early, and could not again fall asleep (*the Afghan pilau may have been indigestible*) so finding the moon bright and the weather favourable he left his little tent which was pitched in the courtyard of the caravanserai and walked to the gate where he found a Pharosân holding the horse of the sleeping Afghan who was supposed to be sentinel. After a little conversation with this man during which he was considerably enlightened as to the character of his host Login determined to wake up his men and proceed on his

journey to Ghirishk as soon as possible. This was done, and a message sent to the Khan of apology and thanks, accompanied by a small present. The Khan speedily appeared, and endeavoured to dissuade him, but failing in this ordered out his party to escort him. This was civilly declined by Login, who after a trying march of nearly fifty miles reached Gnishk in safety, and was cordially welcomed by Captain E—— in charge of the district.

Chapter  
II.  
1839-40

On the following day, Captain E——'s agents brought information that the Khan of Washeer had, while entertaining his guest, despatched messages to Aktar Khan, a Douani chieftain then encamped not far from Sadaat, urging him to intercept Login, who would pass at a certain time, and who would prove a valuable prize !

Had it not providentially happened that the aforesaid "prize" had been induced to start two hours earlier than was expected, he might not have reached Ghirishk so safely, and a valuable copy of the "Shahnameh" presented by Shah Kamrán to Her Majesty, of which he was the bearer, and which he afterwards had the pleasure of recognizing in the Royal Library at Windsor, might have failed to reach its destination.

Being deeply interested in carrying out his various duties, Login, at the earnest desire of the Envoy, declined to avail himself of the option given him to return to Cabul with Major Pottinger.



Chapter  
II.  
1839-40

In the following March, 1840, he received a letter from the Commander in Chief Sir Jasper Nicoll, intimating that he had, on the recommendation of several medical authorities in Calcutta appointed him as surgeon on his personal staff hoping he could make arrangements to join. On hearing this, the Envoy at Cabul represented so strongly to the Governor General, at the instance of D Arcy Todd the great importance of Dr Login's work at Herât and the difficulty there would be to replace him that Lord Auckland requested Sir Jasper Nicolls to appoint another surgeon to officiate for him till he could be spared from his present post intimating to Sir Jasper at the same time that he (Lord Auckland) intended giving Dr Login a permanent appointment as soon as he could.

After Eldred Pottinger had left taking with him Dr Ritchie the number of the mission was still further reduced by Conolly's departure to Seistan and at Christmas Abbott and later on Shakespear, were sent by Todd on a mission to Khiva on behalf of the Russian captives.

The small remnant became entirely dependent for news of the outer world on the *cossacks* or runners whom Login had established on the roads to carry the posts and their appearance at stated periods was anxiously looked for. Mitford's arrival was therefore an event eagerly welcomed and as his description of the position of affairs at the time and the life led by the mission

at Herat, is the most detailed and interesting on the subject, some extracts from his work are inserted, in spite of its being already so well known

Chapter  
II  
1839-40.

\* Oct 27th, 1840

Reaching Herát at sunset, I entered the gate, and made my way through a long street crowded with people and strings of camels, and proceeded immediately to the Residence of the British Envoy, Major D'Arcy Todd, by whom I was most kindly and cordially welcomed. Major Todd's party at this time consisted of Lieut North, Bombay Engineers, and Dr Login, of the Bengal Army. I experienced the most assiduous kindness from those gentlemen, and once more felt myself at home with countrymen and friends, most thankful that I had not been marched as a slave to Khiva by the Turcomans. My wardrobe, as may be imagined, was in a very precarious condition—my flock-coat was dilapidated at the elbows, the buttons had made their escape from their cases, and altogether I was scarcely fit to appear in civilized society, but by the kindness of these friends I was soon furnished with a fresh outfit.

The British Envoy arrived at Herát in August, 1839, since which time a great change has been effected in the condition of the place, the town reviving from its ruins, the population returning, the peasantry are restoring their villages, resuming the cultivation of their fields, and caravans of Herátis are daily arriving from Meshed and other places where they had taken refuge, to re-occupy their deserted homes under the protection of the English name. These people had fled, not as might have been supposed, from the Persians, but to escape the tyranny of the Wuzeer, and actual ruler, Yar Mahomed, the greatest oppressor of his own people. He carried on a trade with the Turcomans in

---

\* Mitford's "*Land March* "

Chapter II  
1839-40 slaves, receiving in return horses and cash he is said to have disposed of over 80 000 of his own people in this nefarious way! and nothing but our protection induces the people to return within reach of this miscreant

Dr Login informed me that when the Envoy first arrived the place was full of beggars the remains of the ruined population scarcely amounting to a thousand but now there is a well stocked bazaar crowded with people and a beggar is rarely seen Dr Login has contributed much by his praiseworthy exertions to the rising prosperity of the place he employs the people in various works and branches of industry and has re-established the carpet manufacture for which Herát was always celebrated.\* These carpets are very handsome and the colours bright. I visited some of the looms and was struck with the rapidity with which they worked they had no pattern to guide them but worked from memory yet never made a mistake by inserting the wrong coloured worsteds

When the Envoy arrived he found no house that he could occupy but was assigned a large garden surrounded by the ruins of the Shah's palace in this place called the Char Bagh there was not a room entire and he was forced to pitch his tent until a house could be built There is now abundant accommodation the Residency being large and commodious Dr Login has also built a pretty house on a more European plan at the opposite side of the garden—which gives the place a most uniform appearance in the centre of the garden is a large square tank where several broad pathways intersecting the garden meet the different partitions being full of trees and shrubs

The people of Herát seem well-disposed towards the English

\* The Herát carpet is famed above all others for the brilliancy and purity of its colours. They are made in all sizes and prices from £1 to £100. Consolly pronounced the best piece he saw to equal the Turkey carpet, and their price to be moderate. —*Mallison's Herát* p. 92.

and well they may, considering the benefits they reap from them Chapter  
 They are protected from tyranny, they are profitably employed, II  
 as well as assisted by us, the villagers are advanced money and 1839-40  
 grain to plant their fields, but what reliance can be placed on a  
 fickle populace if their chiefs are inimical? \*

When the Envoy first arrived he had with him a detachment  
 of Sepoys These were sent back to Candahar, as he considered  
 himself safer without them He has a pretty little castellated  
 walled village on the Herirúd, three miles from the town,†  
 where in case of danger he might take refuge and maintain  
 himself until events turned in his favour . At the  
 Residency they have adopted the precaution of giving appropriate  
 conventional names to all the people of importance, to prevent  
 servants who may know a little English from understanding the

\* Writing so late as 1863, Vambéry says, "I find no exaggeration in the  
 opinion that the Heritees long most for the intervention of the English, whose  
 feelings of humanity and justice have led the inhabitants to forget the great  
 differences in religion and nationality They saw during the government of  
 Major Todd more earnestness and self sacrifice with respect to the ransoming of  
 slaves than they had ever even heard of before on the part of a ruler "

† A beautiful garden at Herát is mentioned in Ferrier's "*Caravan Journey*,"  
 described as a new one laid out by Yar Mohamed, this, according to Login's  
 notes must be "one which originally belonged to Hajee Ferozeodeen (grand-  
 father of the present ruler) It is situated on the Candahar road, within a short  
 distance of the Herirúd Like all the other gardens in the neighbourhood, it  
 had been destroyed by the Persians during the siege, but after the retreat of  
 Mahomed's army it was made over to Eldred Pottinger, who expended a small  
 sum in restoring it and repairing the garden-house Major D'Arcy Todd  
 continued to keep it up and embellish it, and all our party, especially Major  
 James Abbott, while he remained at Herát, took more or less interest in putting  
 it into order Seeds and plants of various kinds were procured for it by Todd  
 from India and England, with a view to make it useful as a nursery for the  
 improvement and restoration of other gardens Besides this garden, which was  
 made over to the mission, a farm, at some distance up the valley, of about 200  
 acres, was presented to me by Shah Kamrán, but at my request assigned for the  
 support of a dispensary and poor-house that had been established in the city  
 during our stay there The farm was remarkable for its fertility, especially for  
 the quality of the melons which it produced"—J S L

Chapter II. conversation Shah Kamran for instance living in the ' Ark, \*  
 1839-40 was given the appropriate name of Noah The  
 prosperity of the country is now fast reviving † If  
 Herat were occupied by us and agriculture encouraged any  
 moderate-sized military force could be maintained here on the  
 supplies of the country and hold its own against all-comers

The grapes of the Herat valley are particularly luscious. "The cultivators of this happy valley," says Conolly, in 1831 'enumerate if I remember rightly seventeen different sorts of grapes which they grew'

During his residence in Herat, Dr Login often came in contact with the members of Shah Kamran's household and was in great favour being constantly called upon for professional advice which he afforded willingly to all. This was frequently used merely as a pretext to get him to give the news of the outer world to those who were kept in seclusion Shah Kamran himself often requesting him to come ostensibly to prescribe for some passing ailment but more for the purpose of getting him to talk of England its power and greatness in contrast with Persia and Russia, the Queen and that very mysterious power known as Jan Kumpany Bahadoor whose existence he marvelled at being permitted by the great

---

\* Persian for citadel.

† The town of Herat, destroyed by the siege of 1839 rose by degrees from its ruins, thanks to the gill that the English had so profusely scattered around it — *Fraser's Caucasian Journal*

Queen, in case they should rebel against her some day !

Chapter  
II.  
1889-40.

On many of these occasions, there would be an unseen, *though not unheard*, audience, listening in wrapt attention to his descriptions, and many were the audible "*wah ' wah's'*" Kamián's favourite wife was very intelligent, and full of anxiety to hear all about Englishwomen, and especially everything that could be told her about her sister the Queen ! She always called the Hakim Sahib "*bhai*," or brother, and this originated his *soubriquet* among his colleagues, the Begum, at the same time, being known as "Login's sister" The needlework done by the ladies in the harem was beautiful, and they were always sending him specimens of their skill—embroidered vests, and quilted *chogas* and *resais*. Covers were made for Login's Bible and Prayer Book, and this opportunity was made use of by him to send a Persian Testament to have a cover made for it ; and when he found it bore marks of having been read (by whom he never discovered), he offered to exchange it for a volume of Hafiz's poems, which offer was eagerly accepted

Though the common speech of the people of Herát is Pushtoo, they have no literature in that language, it being merely a colloquial dialect or corrupt form of the Persian Consequently, as Login says —

The first book in Pushtoo ever seen by Shah Kamran and his family, or by any other person, I believe, at Herát, was a New

Chapter II. Testament which I had brought from India and which had been published by the missionaries at Serampore in the Persian character It excited great interest among them and was read by some of their learned men. It was if my memory serves me right in possession of Shahzadah Mohamed Yussuf the present ruler of Herát (1856) at the time of the departure of the mission. At all events he had got it from me a short time before May I hope that it has been equally as useful as the Hebrew transcript! After the siege Eldred Pottinger commenced a translation into Pushtoo of a part of the Holy Scriptures but discontinued it on finding I had brought a copy

In connection with this I may mention that I gave away several copies of Martyn's New Testament in Persian to people of influence at Herát and a Testament in Turkí to the Khalifa of Merv a man of considerable sanctity among the Turcomans. With this latter I had perhaps more intercourse than any other member of the mission, from the circumstance of almost every one who came in with *kafilas* from Khiva and Bokhara being anxious to consult the Feringhi Hakim at the dispensary either for their own maladies or for those of their relations and few of them went away without asking to see the *hikmut* by which the blind were taught to work in the poor house

I must confess it was not a little gratifying to me to learn from Wolff's *Journal* that kind inquiries were long afterwards made at Merv for a gentleman of the name of Luggan with whom Dr Wolff said he had not the pleasure of being acquainted \*

The Hindostani servants who had accompanied the mission to Herát not caring to remain there for an indefinite period became clamorous to return and they were allowed to depart to Candahar with the first

safe escort, leaving their masters to supply their places as best they could with Herátis. Login was the only one unaffected by this move, as his faithful Khalípha, Ali Bux, would not desert him, he said that he had been with him from the first, and meant to die in his service. He also declared his intention to make himself comfortable in Herát, and take a Heráti wife, as it might be years before he again visited Lucknow, where he had left his wife. He found no difficulty in making his selection, and with the consent of her family, Fatimah, whom he declared "fair like a *Belati Bibi*,"\* cast in her lot with the mission, and when its departure was decided on, refused to leave her husband, and with her child, accompanied him through many dangers and forced marches, proving herself a fearless rider.†

Chapter  
II.  
1839-40

Poor Khalípha was not always able to preserve the peace between his rival wives when in after life he settled down in Lucknow, as Derogah of the Gharīb-

---

\* i.e., European lady

† On one occasion Khalípha, who was in charge of the baggage animals, saved the papers and valuables from loot by marauders. Solemnly opening one box he displayed a number of terrible looking surgical instruments (of which they stand in great awe), and declared that these and some marvellous *dawaie* (medicine) formed the sole contents of the boxes, which were the property of the world-famed Hakim and Wizard who had worked such wonders at Herát, emphasizing his assertion by pointing at the same time to his enchanter's staff which he carried in his hand, and to which the wild tribesmen instinctively salaamed with deep reverence. The staff was Login's favourite walking stick, a very formidable bludgeon, a gift from D'Arcy Todd, having a coiled snake around it, and being covered with hieroglyphics all carved by him; it bore also the inscription, "Bhuggut Ram (Todd's *soubriquet*), his work"



Chapter  
II.  
1839-40

khana, surrounded by his various belongings, but to the last he was devoted to the fair Fatimah.

Hinghan Khan an orphan boy of good family, one of the captives rescued by Eldred Pottinger from the Turcomans used to follow Login about like his shadow, sleeping at his door all night until at last the Hakim Sahib took him into his service. He proved himself invaluable adapting himself to all circumstances and places. He was like all his countrymen a splendid rider and was of great service on several occasions when there were difficulties with the tribesmen on the march.

With these two servants Login was very independent at Herât though of course the style of living was decidedly primitive and the Persian mode was perforce adopted. Still life with all its attendant roughnesses was thoroughly enjoyed by men who led such a busy, well-occupied existence doing good to their fellow creatures and by their blameless lives, in the midst of debauchery and excess shedding lustre on the name of Englishmen and during the whole stay of the mission the fanatic Mahomedans had before them a living example of Christianity in that band of devoted, self sacrificing soldiers.

The Envoy kept an excellent Persian cook to whose abilities Englishmen and Afghans at our morning meals says Login (to quote again from the notes previously mentioned) did ample justice with such knives and forks as may have been used by

Abraham ; but we generally *dined* alone in the English style, and Chapter  
 I think the prudence of this arrangement cannot be doubted II.  
 The Heráti Afghans are a very drunken lot, and cannot under- 1839-40.  
 stand the self-denial of Christians in declining to drink, when  
 wine is not prohibited to them by their religion

Shortly after our arrival at Herát, in walking across the garden one dark night after dinner, without waiting for the lantern, on my return from the Envoy's to my own residence, I struck my foot against the ledge of the *houz* (cistern surrounding the fountain), which happened that day to have been nearly emptied for the purpose of cleaning it out, and fell to a depth of about eight feet, receiving a severe concussion. It was at once supposed by the people of Herát that I had been drunk on this occasion, although by habit almost a "teetotaler!" and all the kind condolences with which I was honoured by Shah Kamrán and his family, and Yai Mohamed and his chiefs, were evidently offered under this impression. Nujoo Khan, the "*topshce bashee*," himself a noted toper, wished me quietly, in confidence, to acknowledge that I had taken "*kudrezeadah*!"\* and it was not till my habits were better known that I was exonerated from the suspicion.

About a year afterwards, happening to go up to the citadel to the King, I found him drinking some Shiraz wine, which he also desired the "*athar bashee*," after I had been seated, to offer to me ; and on observing that I merely tasted it, the Shah said, with a knowing look, "Don't be afraid, there is no *houz* here!"

During the Ramazan, the public Afghan breakfast gave place to private English ones, but we were then honoured with the presence of Sirdar Sheer Mohamed Khan, brother to the Wuzeer, who, to entitle him to the privileges of a *traveller*, had, while the fast lasted, pitched his tent outside the gate of the city, and came to learn the European mode of eating with knife, fork, and

---

\* *Anglicè*, "a drop too much"

Chapter spoon (Travellers in Mussulmann countries being exempted  
 II. from the necessity of observing fasts )  
 1839-40

It will thus be seen that the Afghans are not altogether rigid Mahomedans, as regards the abstention from wine and the due observance of fasts but their hatred to heathen *Kafirs*\* is very marked, and they carefully avoid all intercourse with them. Consequently in Afghanistan the Hindoo servants who had followed the mission found their position towards their Christian masters with respect to caste and purity, exactly reversed to what it would be in Hindostan. At Herat and beyond the Indus generally Christians—as *people of the Book*—were freely admitted to eat with Mahomedans so long as they abstained from the forbidden food and we were often asked Why we allowed unclean *Kafirs* like Hindoos to be freely admitted into our houses?

When travelling between Candahar and Cabul we were met by a few horsemen of one of our irregular cavalry regiments—Mahomedans from India. Our servants Afghans and Parsevans to show their hospitality offered them a *lutan* which had just been smoked by Major Todd.

The Indian Mahomedans asked if they intended to insult them by offering a pipe smoked by a *Kafir*? whereupon our people retorted, that the Indian Mussulmann were *Kafirs* in following the customs of Hindoos and a battle royal would have ensued had we not interfered.

For eighteen months previous to the arrival of the English mission Shah Kamran had never stirred out of the citadel and was only induced to ride for the benefit of his health at my suggestion. One reason he gave for not showing himself in public was that the Wuzeer did not allow him a proper retinue. He never rode out during our stay without asking me to accom-

pany him ;\* though whether this partiality for my society arose from any mistaken idea as to my official importance, I cannot say !

Chapter II  
1839-40.

The influence which the "Hakim Sahib" has generally exercised in the British Embassy at Teheran, and the employment of such men as Campbell, Jukes, McNeill, Riach, Bell, Lord, and others, in various important duties in those countries, has naturally led the chiefs of Herát to suppose that "physicians" occupy a higher place in the councils of the English than is accorded them, and they attribute much of the prosperity of the English nation to their "*hikmut*"

There was much personal and social intercourse between the members of the mission, and some of the Afghan Sardars, and amongst those who were fond of being seen in their company was Syud Mohamed, the Wuzer's eldest son. This youth, who by no means inherited his father's great abilities, was frequently an unconscious source of amusement to the English officers.

During one of his visits to the Char-Bagh, he expressed a wish to learn English, upon which a wag of the party offered to teach him a sentence, and under the impression that it was merely an ordinary English salutation like "*Khoosh amedeed*," taught him to say "You are a spoon !"

Full of importance of the acquisition—though somewhat doubtful of the exact meaning—on meeting his father on his return home, he accosted him by saying, "*Agir-be-adebi*" (If it be not disrespectful !) "you are a spoon !"

There is a certain grim humour in the intense inappropriateness of such a mild epithet as applied to the ferocious Yar

---

\* On one of these occasions, Shah Kamrán proposed to exchange horses with Login as a seal of friendship. Login named the Turcoman "Kamrán," and found him invaluable on a march—Turcoman horses are noted for their power of endurance.

Chapter II. 1839-40 Mahomed whose atrocious cruelties—practised not only on criminals but on his political opponents—are past belief. He is said to have flayed a chief of the Bardooranis alive and afterwards stewed him in a large cauldron! not long before Pottinger reached Herât.

Colonel James Abbott and General C F North are the only two living members of the Herât Mission at this date The former writes as follows —

Login's fine temper and cheerfulness under difficulties on the march won all our hearts and he was voted a most important acquisition Though we were beset with constant rumours of intended treachery nothing of the kind actually occurred on that usually desert tract which we traversed by marches averaging twenty miles each.

On arrival at Herât, Login obtained permission to set up a hospital for native patients the scanty remnants of the once dense population being in the utmost misery from long starvation during a siege of ten months To his care also were made over the children whom Eldred Pottinger had rescued from the Turco-mans He also took charge of our post-office arrangements He was a first-rate man of business and invaluable to the mission his benevolence equalling his zeal and his capacity Whatever could be done to alleviate the terrible distress and misery in which we found the remnants of that once thronged population the Envoy (with Login's loving aid) carried out The people marvelled that a nation strangers to them in faith should thus lavish lakhs of rupees and all their energies to alleviate the sufferings of wretched beings who could never hope to be even useful citizens They marvelled but one man execrated what excited wonder in the rest He believed the whole work of benevolence to be part of a plot or scheme on our part to render his own detestable conduct more abhorrent to the people he ruled!

About Christmas, 1839, the Envoy despatched me on a mission to Khiva, and I parted from Login, whom I met but once again, and that casually. He, however, remained with the Envoy to the last, rendering excellent service and retuning with him. The Envoy's value for him was very great

Chapter  
II  
1839-40

General North writes :—

Soon after we got settled in Herat, Login set himself to work to assist the poor, who were in a starving condition. Herát, when in its prosperity, had been famed for the manufacture of Persian carpets or large rugs, but at the time of our arrival, there were only two or three men who knew anything about it, but this was enough for Login, who at once started a carpet manufactory, giving employment to many people, and although their first productions were coarse they sold well, and he was encouraged to persevere, until before we left, the Herat looms turned out articles that vied with the best made in Persia. Login also established a dispensary, and was continually employed in one way or another in exercising his truly benevolent disposition for the benefit of those among whom he found himself.

Our Indian servants soon left, and we had to replace them with natives of the country. We had a train of baggage mules and camels, which required a good many men to look after it. About sixty horses were at different times presented to the Envoy, and we put men on them and made them into an irregular cavalry escort. Besides these there were numerous *Pesh-kudmuts*, or personal servants, and *Farrashes*, house servants, natives of the place. All these were placed under the control of the assistant to the Envoy, which office I held after Abbott's departure to Khiva, and a very troublesome lot I found them! for as they were half Soonees and half Shiáhs, they were always quarrelling among themselves—these two sects among Mahome-

Chapter dans being as inimical to each other as Protestants and Roman  
 II Catholics in Ireland.

1839-40 One day the Envoy asked me North how do you manage those fellows? Abbott was always asking me to settle some dispute but you never do? I replied When they come to complain against each other as they lie so abominably that truth cannot be arrived at nor justice done I just order the *Farrash Bashee* to put one foot of the complainant and one of the defendant in the *fullukh* (the pole to which feet are tied for bastinadoing) and to bastinado them both, and so the right man gets punished and complaints diminish whatever quarrels do! Altogether they are not bad fellows and we get along very well with them

(

When our Indian servants left we adopted the Persian style of living all meals taken on the floor no chairs or tables no knives or forks all food put into the mouth with the fingers and thumb of the right hand we soon became expert at it but our first attempts at this mode of feeding were rather ludicrous On the occasion of our making our entry into Herat we were all in full-dress uniform and went to the Palace to pay our respects to the King After our reception Shah Kamran sent us a dinner which was of course served on the floor In addition to the officers attached to the mission there were present the Wuzer Yar Mahomed Khan and eight or ten of the Sirdars of Herat It is not etiquette to sit cross legged like a tailor but on one's heels in a kneeling posture the spurs on the heels of our boots prevented our doing this with any degree of comfort The sight of some half-dozen tightly buttoned up men encumbered with swords and cocked hats kneeling around more than fifty dishes spread on the floor and awkwardly endeavouring to get their food into their mouths with their fingers kept us in perpetual stifled bursts of laughter while the Afghan chiefs stared at us in wonderment keeping grave faces all the time When the dinner was over it was quite a relief to us to be allowed to cross our legs for which

we begged permission of our host When Todd explained the cause of our merriment, the Wuzeer said, "That to see us stooping over the dishes with our cocked hats and feathers reminded him of a lot of fowls picking up grain!"

Chapter II  
1839-40

The chief dish at a Persian dinner is *pillaou*—rice cooked with butter—in which is the mutton or fowls, and there are numerous small dishes to be eaten with it. At a large entertainment there would be a whole sheep stuffed with fowls, and these each stuffed with raisins, pistachios, and spices. To cook this, a hole is dug in the ground and lined with smooth round stones, a fire of wood is made in the hole, and when the stones are very hot vine leaves are laid over them, and the sheep put in, and the hole covered over, the sheep comes out perfectly cooked by the steam, and the meat is very tender.

Owing to the sudden withdrawal of the mission, much valuable property, as well as paper, diaries, &c., were sacrificed, as we left in light marching order

The following was written by Login from Herát to his brother-in-law, John Beaton.—

HERÁT, Nov 16th, 1840

. We have already had letters by this route (*via* Eizeroum), c/o H M Chargé d'Affaires, in seventy-three days from Paris, though for upwards of 700 miles the letters are carried by a single runner or "cossid" on foot. As soon as I hear of the return of our mission to Teheran, I shall endeavour to get a regular mail established between that place and Herát, and have no doubt that it will prove most useful. Within the last few days we have had good news from several quarters. From Khiva, of the delivery over to the Russian authorities of all the Russian captives by Captain Shakespear, and of the probable settlement of the differences in that quarter, from Bokhára, of Col Stoddart being released



Chapter from jail and being entrusted with the command of the Ameer's  
 II Artillery of the surrender of Dost Mahomed to the Envoy  
 1839 40 and Minister at Cabul of the defeat of the Belooch Army at  
 Dádar of the occupation of Kelat by our troops under General  
 Nott of the submissive answer of the Sikh Durbar to our demand  
 for passage of our troops through the Punjab and an explanation  
 of their treacherous conduct in assisting the rebels in Afghanistan  
 —all these providential occurrences have assisted us to strengthen  
 our position

Within the last month we have lost many promising officers  
 among them Broadfoot of the Engineers an Orkneyman Dr  
 Lord who was in political charge of the northern frontier a  
 distinguished officer has also been killed in one of our engage-  
 ments with the Dost

Here we have been very quiet but had matters not turned out  
 as they have done I doubt whether such would have long been  
 the case

If ever nation has had cause to say "the Lord has been  
 gracious unto us" assuredly we have it has not been by the  
 power of man that all these things have been brought to pass

I see little prospect of being allowed to join my appoint-  
 ment on the Commander in Chief's staff but I am contented  
 here

Those of our readers who may be interested in the  
 general aspect of affairs in Central Asia at the period of  
 the First Afghan War will find an account of the  
 causes which led to the despatch of the mission to  
 Herát and of the political history of that mission in  
 notes and appendix to General Ferrier's "*Caravan  
 Journey*" which Sir John Login compiled many years  
 after at the request of the author—a portion of which

is also quoted in Kaye's "*Lives of Indian Officers*" Chapter II. Sir John Login's views are there given on this question, and also a description of the duplicity, arrogance, and avarice of Yar Mahomed and his nominal master, Shah Kamrán, which will serve to explain Todd's reasons for the sudden withdrawal of the mission. Though upwards of nineteen lakhs of rupees had been advanced to the Herát Government\* and people to assist them against the Persians, Yar Mahomed not only demanded more, but continued to insult the British Envoy, while he kept up a secret correspondence with the Persian Minister, in which he declared himself the *faithful servant of the Shah-in-Shah*, that he merely tolerated the presence of the English Envoy from expediency, but that his hopes rested in the "*Asylum of Islam*"

When this glaring breach of treaty became known to Major Todd, he determined to mark his opinion of such duplicity by stopping the monthly payment of 25,000 rupees until the pleasure of Government

---

\* A short abstract or memorandum of expenditure found amongst Sir John Login's papers may give some idea of the amounts expended on the Herátis. It runs as follows —

Abstract of expenditure on charitable establishments by the Herat Mission for six months, 1st May to 31st October, 1840, inclusive

Total received by J. S. Login	Rs. 6,378, 8, 4½
-------------------------------	------------------

Disbursed on account of hospital, dispensary, pauper establishment, orphans, carpet-weavers, cultivators, &c	Rs. 6,378, 8, 4½
--	------------------

should be known and notified his intention to the Wuzoor

1839-40

Finding himself in consequence of the Envoy's resolution, in great straits for money, Yar Mahomed ventured on the bold step of declaring that unless money was forthcoming the British Mission must depart from Herát.

Shah Kamrán \* says Login in the Notes before mentioned, for a long time back had felt that the lives of the Englishmen were in imminent danger and he told me in August 1840 that such was the case but that the *Sahibán Inglis* need be under no apprehension as he was our friend but that had he not protected us not a Feringhi would have been left alive His Majesty was pleased to conclude by asking if he did not 'deserve credit for behaving so differently to us from what the Ameer of Bokhara had done to Stoddart Sahib?

In reply I thanked His Majesty for his kindness but said that we were under no apprehension that we were conscious of having done *only good to Herát* and we feared no ill that could befall us especially as we knew that to pluck even a few hairs from a lion's tail was somewhat dangerous

At this time it was no secret in Herát that the Wuzoor was only waiting his opportunity to seize the officers of the British Mission He lived utterly in a state of intoxication and the prospect of seizing and plundering their property was seriously discussed by himself and his drunken associates as the easiest way of replenishing his coffers

The Envoy seeing that nothing could be gained by remaining at Herát and that a catastrophe would involve the Government

in serious complications, decided to retire, and accordingly Chapter the mission left, and they had scarcely gone when the Residency II. was sacked and pillaged by a howling mob, headed by the 1839 40 Wuzeer's own soldiers.

A good deal of private property had been sacrificed; as a large baggage guard could not be provided, many valuable papers and diaries were left behind

## CHAPTER III

### CANDAHAR AND CABUL

Chapter III  
1840-41 THE departure of the mission from Herát is thus described by Login —

Our party under Major D Arcy Todd consisting (with the escort commanded by Sirdar Futteh Khan) of about 300 persons passed unmolested through the Herát territories, by ordinary marches receiving marks of good will and respect from the inhabitants but on reaching the Candahár frontier we found that Aktar Khan a Douráni chief was on the watch to intercept us with a considerable force we therefore determined to conceal our route

With this view we turned out quietly during the night from our encampment at Dilaram and pursued our march

Accompanied by Sirdar Futteh Khan who was in the secret of our councils and whose conduct always gave us cause to trust him I pushed on with an advance party of horsemen a little in front of the main body under charge of Major Todd until early dawn when we made a rapid advance to take possession of the first set of wells which we were apprehensive might be held by a party of Aktar Khan's men.

Finding these however unoccupied the advanced party halted there until the main body came up within a sufficient distance to secure them when it again pushed on to occupy

another small pool in the same way, and thence reached the appointed halting-place, a distance of fifty miles from Dilaram, where it waited the arrival of the main body

Chapter  
III.  
1840-41

Halting only a sufficient time for a slight refreshment to men and animals, the order of march was again formed as on the previous evening, but as it was considered dangerous to show any lights for fear of attracting the notice of the Afghans, much difficulty was experienced in finding the proper pathway, and heavy clouds having for a time obscured the stars by which he guided us, our one-handed *cossid*—a man well known in these parts for his wonderful intelligence as a guide—actually had to *feel* for the trodden path on the surface of the desert, and so found it. By occasionally sending back a horseman from the advanced party communication was kept up with the main body during the night, but as soon as day dawned our advance was pushed on more rapidly.

On approaching some broken ground near the "Houz," said to be a favourite *rendezvous* of Beloochi marauders, and likely to be occupied by Aktar Khan's men, our advance was made with great precaution, covered by files of horsemen in front and on our flanks. A signal being made from our right flank, and a horseman riding in to report that a large number of saddled horses were to be seen in a ravine near the Houz, we immediately prepared for action in the Afghan style. *Chogas* (cloaks) were put in saddle-bags, *kummerbunds* (waist-belts) were tightened, turbans firmly bound, loose sleeves turned up, arms bared to the elbow, and matchlocks and bucklers unslung! The signal of the horseman had been observed by the main body, about a mile distant, and we were shortly joined by a party detached in support. They came up at full gallop similarly prepared, each man wishing to appear a very Roostum \*

Thinking it strange none of our horsemen from the front had

---

\* Famous Persian hero

Chapter fallen back, the broken ground preventing our seeing them, I  
 III. proposed to the Sirdar to ride on with him to ascertain the  
 1840-41 cause and on descending a ravine we came suddenly in view of  
 a *kafila* of *asses* laden with corn and butter from the Helmund  
 on its way to Bukwa escorted by many Afghans on foot! They  
 had just been laden when seen by our vedette and in the haze of  
 the morning mistaken for horses.

After passing through the ravines, and again emerging on the  
 level desert our main body closed up and we proceeded together  
 to Ghirishk having safely accomplished a distance of upwards of  
 100 miles with only a few hours halt, though hampered with  
 camels and other slow travelling animals

It was afterwards reported that we had got over our difficulties  
 only just in time a detachment from Aktar Khan having been  
 sent to intercept us but arriving too late

Lord Auckland blamed Todd for not being conciliatory enough, and thus precipitating a rupture but men accustomed to deal with Orientals in a semi barbarous state know that they only respect those they fear, and Yar Mahomed naturally thought that want of power to punish was the cause of his insults and treachery being rewarded with money

From Candahar Login writes to his sister, Mrs. Beaton as follows —

CANDAHAR April 25th 1841

You will probably see mention of the departure of the mission from Herat in the papers It has already caused much discussion in India, and Lord Auckland is highly displeased with Todd for having adopted this measure It must no doubt

seem very extraordinary to His Excellency that a man should be so blind to his own interests as to act towards us as Yar Mahomed has done, and I can even understand his being doubtful whether Todd, under the circumstances, has been sufficiently conciliatory. Chapter III. 1840-41

Lord Auckland will, however, find ere long that Yar Mahomed is *not to be won by conciliation*, that to have influence over him *we must command*. Everything which conciliatory manners could do towards retaining our position *with honour* was done.

To have yielded one single iota more to the demands of such a man would have been unworthy of the British name and character, and would have lowered us in the estimation of Central Asia

Lord Auckland may be laudably anxious to avoid the necessity of marching troops to such a distance, but our hesitation to do so *after what has occurred* will be construed into weakness by these people, and make them even more arrogant

I have not the least doubt that were 4,000 men and a few guns sent at once against Yar Mahomed, he would immediately submit, and we should have no more trouble with him. It tries one's patience to think of it, when one might so easily put them down. I have been waiting here in hopes of a force being ordered towards Herat, but as there seems now little prospect of it, I shall start to-morrow for Cabul on my way to India

I have heard from the Residency at Lucknow that I am to be appointed there permanently, I shall, therefore, endeavour to make my way there as quickly as possible

Let me see! Any more news? Yes! You have heard from me of Stoddart's captivity in Bokhara, where he has been most cruelly treated by the Ameer

He might have made his escape if he wished, but being a chivalrous man and anxious only for his country's honour, he would not avail himself of the opportunities purposely offered him, and determined, it is said, not to leave the place until ample



Chapter III. apologies were made for the insult shown to a British representative

1840-41 This bold tone on Stoddart's part, the influence which Shakespeare has established over the Khan of Khiva and the friendly manner in which Conolly has been received by the other Turkoman (Usbeg) state Kókán has brought the Ameer to his bearings and induced him to pay the utmost attention to Stoddart whom he now consults on everything

Stoddart instead of being anxious about his own liberty is arranging the release of all the Khan's prisoners (Russian) at Bokhára

Nothing you see like working on the fears of these rascals! Thrash them first, to their heart's content is our only policy then they will be in a fit condition to appreciate conciliation and forbearance!

If Lord Auckland should after all determine on moving a force on Herát I think I shall almost be tempted to return from India to join it We have done our utmost to do these people good and spent money in great abundance for that purpose but the greatest boon we could confer on Central Asia would be to show our power by removing Yar Mahomed and his myrmidons from authority

We should then find our efforts at conciliation fully appreciated and without doubt most successful. However I doubt Government being prepared for such a bold measure

Your most affectionate

JOHN

As all further attempts at conciliation seemed only to have a bad effect on Yar Mahomed there is no doubt that Major Tedd adopted a wise course in withdrawing the mission before any overt insult had been

offered, thus leaving Lord Auckland free to adopt any line of policy he might think expedient. For this step, however, he was not held excused by the Governor-General, who, before he even received Todd's explanation of his reasons, declared him unfit for political employment, and remanded him with disgrace to his regiment.

Chapter  
III.  
1840-41.

When the mission left, Yar Mahomed became greatly alarmed, he had never believed that he would be taken at his word, and he now trembled at the probable consequences, but in this extremity his proverbial good fortune did not forsake him. When he expected nothing less than the advance of a brigade of British troops across his frontier, he was delighted by the receipt of two friendly letters, assuring him of the high consideration of the British Government, and of their deep regret that anything unpleasant should have for a time estranged their very faithful friend ! To give him a better opportunity to explain his conduct, the Government disavowed all the late proceedings of Major Todd, and begged that the Wuzer would favour them with his own statement of the case ! And greater effect was at the same time given to these conciliatory letters, by our small force being withdrawn from the Helmund to Candahar, leaving the Dourani again at full liberty to renew his rebellious proceedings in Zemindawar.

Satisfied by these conciliatory overtures that he had no immediate cause to apprehend an attack, and that

Chapter  
III.  
1840-41

the British Government were as anxious as ever to retain his friendship Yar Mahomed put the letters from the British Government in his pocket, and replied that he could give no answer to them until—through his brother whom he had sent to Teheran—he received the commands of the '*Imperatur : Rus !*'

During his stay at Candahar, Login wrote the following letter to Todd —

CANDAHAR April 1841

Although aware that any expression of my opinion as to your conduct towards the Wuzeer and chiefs of Herat can be but of little service I consider it a duty which under present circumstances I owe to the cause of justice and to you to offer it at your request

Having had very favourable opportunities during the last eighteen months of observing your conduct towards the Herat authorities I can have no hesitation in stating that it has been marked throughout by the utmost desire to secure their friendship and that your anxiety to gain their good will has on many occasions led you to carry your efforts far beyond the limits which in my opinion ought to have been assigned them Judging indeed from the character of the Wuzeer and his chiefs it is my *firm belief* that your evident anxiety to conciliate them and the necessity imposed on you of overlooking many just causes of offence have led them to attach too high a value to their friendship and that had a less conciliatory tone and more commanding line from the first been adopted your efforts to secure British influence at Herat might have been more successful With regard to your personal intercourse with the Wuzeer it has always been of the most friendly nature and I have frequently heard him and his principal advisers express their obligations to

you for the lenient consideration with which you treated him Chapter  
and your readiness to exculpate any part of his conduct which III.  
appeared dubious So convinced was he of these obligations, 1840-41.  
that he studiously avoided meeting you for some time before our  
departure from Herát, lest personal friendship, as *he stated*,  
should induce him to forego all the schemes which false ideas of  
his power had led him to entertain, or make him acknowledge  
the justice of your advice.

I cannot conclude without acknowledging my sincere regret for  
having on several occasions expressed myself to you very freely  
on your great leniency to the Wuzeer The evidences of his  
tyranny, of which my duties made me a daily witness, and the  
knowledge thus acquired of the people's sentiments towards him,  
had led me at an early period to the opinion that the uncontrolled  
power and influence of Yar Mahomed Khan were incompatible  
with the happiness and welfare of his subjects, and had induced  
me to believe that his removal from power would be esteemed  
the *greatest benefit* which British benevolence could bestow on  
the people of Herát In this opinion, I need not say, I am more  
than ever confident

J S LOGIN

In his "*Caravan Journey*" M Ferrier gives a very  
amusing account of an interview with Yar Mahomed,  
who was then virtual King after Kamrán's death He  
evidently believed M Ferrier to be an Englishman,  
sent to open up negotiations with him, and he urged  
him to declare his mission as he was quite ready to  
treat. He said that during Todd's mission he had  
lived in fear of his life from the old drunkard, Shañ  
Kamrán, (!) whom Todd was instigating against him,  
but that now all authority centred in himself, and

Chapter that his view of the matter was "pay me well and  
 III I will be your humble and devoted servant.'  
 1840-41

What I heard and saw in Afghanistan (says General Ferrier) gave me the most profound conviction that the moment the British flag is seen in an Asiatic State the shameless government in force under a native ruler is replaced, if not by abundance certainly by security and justice. However burdensome the taxation of the English may be it is always far less so than that extorted by native princes who add persecution to rapacity. The Sirdars Mollahs Syuds and soldier classes who live by plundering the industrious inhabitants were always declaiming against the English because under them they could not practise their iniquities. The people were irritated, it is true because their prejudices had been shocked and rose to shake off their yoke but now they regret them. They remember with gratitude their justice their gratuitous care of the sick in hospitals the presents of money and clothes when they left them cured the repairs of their public works and the extension of commerce and agriculture and after exhausting their praises they would finish up by— 'What a pity they were not Mussulmaun like us! we would never have had any other masters!' After hearing such expressions is it not allowable to regret in the name of humanity and civilization that the British power was not consolidated in Afghanistan whatever means might have been employed to attain that end?

Leaving Candahar in April still in company with D Arcy Todd Login proceeded towards Cabul, being present at some military operations against the Ghilzies on the way, and he had the satisfaction of affording professional aid to the wounded, amongst

them his dear friend and comrade, Edward Sanders, of the Bengal Engineers, who had been with the mission during the first year in Herat. After a short stay at Cabul, being prevented crossing the Punjab by orders from Government, in consequence of the disturbances after the death of Nao-Nehal Singh, Login accompanied Major Pottinger to Kohistan, and whilst there wrote the following letter to his sister —

Chapter  
III.  
1840-41

CHARIKAR-KOHISTAN, *June 21st, 1841.*

I have been detained at Cabul by the Envoy, Government having notified to him that passage through Punjab is not safe at present, so I have come out here with Eldred Pottinger, being tired of being idle at Cabul. I shall remain some time with Maule, an old Artillery friend, who commands a regiment here. I am sitting writing this in an arbour in his beautiful garden, a lovely murmuring stream flowing round it, and, excepting the flies being very troublesome—a big fellow has just settled on my nose—exceedingly pleasant. At this moment Purwan Darrah, the site of the disgraceful affair with our cavalry last year, and the places rendered most classical by recent events, are under my eyes. Nor do recent events only contribute to render this place historical. Within eight miles are the ruins of a Bactrian city, Alexandria, whence coins innumerable are to this day dug up. I have been collecting some, but so many have already been sent to England that I fancy they are no longer rare. Here, also, are places celebrated in the history of Baber, Emperor of Hindostan. Altogether, it is a beautiful country. As Alexander Burns said to me when describing it one day—"Above, the Alps, Hindoo Koosh! below me, Lombardy!" and certainly it realizes the description.

I must confess that were it not for other great advantages

Chapter attending an Indian appointment, I should much prefer remaining  
 III. as I might do at Cabul. Within three miles of the Residency  
 1840-41 and cantonment is a fine large lake on which there are now two  
 boats built by Lieut Sinclair of H.M. 18th Light Infantry  
 a Caithness man from near Thurso and considering that no Cabul  
 carpenter (*mistree*) had ever before seen a boat they are certainly  
 most creditable to Lieut. Sinclair as a boat-builder Sinclair him-  
 self was however the only man that could manage them until I  
 arrived and as you may imagine was not a little delighted to have  
 an Orkneyman to cope with. We have had many pleasant  
 cruises on this same lake of Cabul rather odd that an Orkney  
 and Caithness man should be having races and matches in boat  
 sailing in such a place! Sinclair was born within sight of Hoy  
 Head has been in Long Hope St Margaret's Hope and Scape  
 Floe but never in Stromness He however knows the merits of  
 the Stromness boats built by the Wards the Moores and  
 Louttets He is a great favourite with his regiment

Login was recalled by the Envoy and Minister to  
 Cabul from Kohistan, to take the place of John Conolly  
 as private secretary *pro tem* Conolly was sent to  
 Candahar and Login was fully occupied by Sir W  
 Macnaghten till he started with Todd for India,  
 proceeding by raft down the Cabul river from Jellalabad  
 to Attock and marching across the Punjab in  
 September 1841 very shortly before the insurrection  
 at Cabul broke out

Before parting from Todd, the following official  
 letter was addressed to him by his late chief —

MAJOR D'ARCY TODD, *Political Envoy at Herát,*

to J. S. LOGIN, M.D

CAMP, NEAR ATTOCK, *August, 1841*

SIR,

I take this opportunity of thanking you for the very Chapter  
zealous and able manner in which you not only performed your III.  
duties at Herát, but exerted yourself in carrying into effect the 1840-41.  
benevolent intentions of Government towards the inhabitants of  
that place Indeed, I may truly say that had it not been for  
your kind assistance I should have found it impossible to give  
full effect in this respect to the views of Government I have, as  
you are aware, already brought to the notice of the Envoy and  
Minister at Cabul the numerous duties which you took upon  
yourself at Herát, the main object of which was to apply  
judiciously the means placed at our disposal by Government in  
relieving the wants and alleviating the miseries of the distressed  
inhabitants of Herát I need only say there is *scarcely an*  
*individual* in that city who has not reason to be grateful for *your*  
*unwearied assiduity, kindness, and patience*, and the effect of  
your zealous and philanthropic exertions has been to establish in  
Herát, and to diffuse throughout the neighbouring states, the  
fame of British humanity and liberality It was from the high  
sense which I entertained of the value of your services, and from  
the difficulty which I felt certain would be experienced in  
supplying your place, that I requested you might be detained at  
Herát, when in February, 1840, you were appointed to the staff  
of His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief

I was aware that your detention at Herát would entail upon  
you some pecuniary sacrifices, I hoped that this would be made  
up to you by an increase to your salary. I have been disappointed



Chapter in this hope and I have also to regret the losses which you have  
 III. sustained on the sudden departure of the mission from Herât  
 1840-41

I have &c ,

E D ARCY TODD,

*Late Political Agent Herât*

J S LOGIN Esq

Soon after joining his appointment at Lucknow as Residency Surgeon the storm burst in Afghanistan and the insurrection at Cabul thrilled the hearts of all the English in India.

The following letter from Havelock at Jellalabad urging the need of chaplains with the army is interesting —

SIR HENRY HAVELOCK to DR. LOGIN

JELLALABAD Dec 14th 1841

MY DEAR LOGIN

I have just seen it announced in the paper that you had arrived at Agra and were to proceed to Lucknow You will have heard that we have had a grand crisis here in Afghanistan which can hardly be pronounced to be over though the symptoms have become decidedly more hopeful.

I should define the affair to be a struggle of the Chiefs to maintain their power to misrule of which they dreaded the annihilation of certain tribes especially the Eastern Ghilzies to revenge the wrong of the reduction of their stipends and finally of the whole people to get rid of the Feringhees

The facts are that Sir Robert Sale's Brigade with its

auxiliaries, having been moved down towards Tazeen and Chapter Gundumuk, with the double purpose of freeing the passes and III. retiring to the provinces, that opportunity was seized to spring 1840-41. the mine of a Cataline plot. Sir A. Burnes was assassinated with all our adherents in Cabul, and our troops driven by the force of a general insurrection to confine their efforts to maintaining themselves on the two points of the Bala Hissar and the intrenched cantonment. This they are yet successfully doing, and I trust, by God's blessing, will continue to do until reinforcements arrive.

Sir R. Sale's force, to which I was temporarily attached with General England's sanction, fought its way inch by inch to Gundumuk, and on the news of the general outbreak, retired on this place, which it has made too strong for any Asiatic force without artillery to get at any price. It has twice sallied, and utterly defeated its assailants in open field.

This is an epitome of things here. Dawes is within these walls, and well, and we have contrived to re-establish ordinances amidst the din of arms. And having said this much, I come to a subject I have much at heart. Peruse the enclosed letter, and if you do not think this voice from Afghanistan will decidedly do harm, kindly send it on to his Lordship, whose address or whereabouts nobody here can tell us.

There may yet be time to send a chaplain up with the second reinforcement. If he can be spared, let him come at any time with troops, and the sooner the better. I trust that Todd has got safely through his journey, and that his affairs are prospering.

Believe me, dear Login, ever truly yours,

H. HAVELOCK

Login forwarded Havelock's letter to the Governor-General, and also wrote to the good Bishop (Daniel

Chapter Wilson), from whom he received the following character-  
 III. istic reply —  
 1840-41

BISHOP'S PALACE Jan 8th 1842

MY DEAREST FRIEND

I read every word of your interesting letter to the Governor General. The very first opportunity that presents itself we must and will send a chaplain. We had one in view a kinsman of the Envoy but he is uncertain in his movements and I am afraid odd in his habit of mind. The Governor General tells me he has given you Lucknow there you will have a charming station and when you are settled there I shall send you my subscription paper for 200 rupees per annum for five years which I know you will not grudge as a contributor to my new cathedral—but of this hereafter. I have not yet seen your paper about Yar Mahomed. You may rely on my doing all I can for your friend Todd with the Governor-General. How you could imagine my dear Login that I could forget you! No no! I remember you and love you as when we first met at Agra. You have never been long out of my mind and I shall always be

Your affectionate

D CALCUTTA

## CHAPTER IV.

### LUCKNOW.

It was a great delight to Login to resume the old work he had set on foot at Lucknow during his previous tenure of the appointment of Residency-Surgeon. He found that Captain Paton, the first Assistant to the Resident, had carried on the work at the Ghaib-khana on the old lines on which he had established it, and he had only to resume the reins. Having so lately left Afghanistan, he was deeply interested in all that was occurring there, and his friend, Sir Robert Hamilton, Resident at Indore, kept him accurately informed of the progress of events, forwarding to him all the intelligence that could be ascertained of the fate of the prisoners, many of whom were Login's personal friends.

Before the hot weather had fully set in, the 56th Native Infantry arrived in Lucknow Cantonment, and the commanding officer, Major Hope Dick, was joined by his wife and her sister (Miss Campbell), from England. The young lady had accompanied her sister, on the death of her parents, at her eldest brother's

Chapter  
IV.  
1842-48.

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

request, Captain Charles Campbell of the 42nd Bengal Native Infantry *Buzee* or Paymaster at Cawnpore and she intended to join her brother as soon as her sister was settled at Lucknow. But it was otherwise ordained for on July 28th 1842 John Spencer Login and Lena Campbell\* were married at Lucknow her brother coming over to give her away. The newly married couple settled down at the Residency—in the house afterwards famous as the scene of Sir Henry Lawrence's death during the memorable siege in 1857—after having spent their honeymoon at Beebeepore Palace kindly placed at Login's disposal by the King.

The post which Login held at Lucknow was generally considered as one of the plums in the medical service of the Company and as being an extremely lucrative one.

It was customary for the Residency Surgeon to increase his pay by accepting other employment at the native Court and by taking large fees from natives of rank and wealth in return for medical attendance. But Login had such a high sense of the dignity and honour of the British name and of the duty which devolved upon every officer who held a position under

---

\* Lena Campbell was the youngest daughter of John Campbell, of Kinloch Port Arthur, representative of the London Campbells; the third son in the family. His first wife Mary Campbell only child of James, fifth Earl of Loudoun. Lady Fanny married the first Surgeon-General of the Government of India. See *History of the Campbells of Scotland and Kinloch*, 1st ed. 1842, p. 66.

the British Government (especially near a native Chapter  
Court), to show himself entirely free from all desire IV.  
of gain or hankering after "filthy lucre," that he, 1842-48  
perhaps, went rather to the opposite extreme, and was  
considered Quixotic in his ideas

To his mind, Englishmen in the service of the King  
of Oude, especially if they were at the same time  
officers of the East India Company, were already in a  
false position, and it behoved them to avoid anything  
which could endanger their independence, self-respect,  
or influence for good in the eyes of *any* native. Hence,  
though he at all times willingly gave gratuitous  
professional advice to natives of all ranks, privately  
as well as at the dispensary and hospitals, he had,  
perhaps, an over-scrupulous dislike to ask fees from  
them, but he often instead took the opportunity to urge  
and encourage his wealthy native patients to assist in  
promoting useful works in their native city and its  
neighbourhood. One native friend, Azimoolah Khan,  
Derogah to the King, who was greatly indebted to him,  
spent a large sum at his suggestion in opening up a  
street from the heart of the crowded bazaar to the old  
bridge of boats over the Goomtee, greatly adding to  
the healthiness of the city.

Thus, though his professional services were more  
sought after by the nobles than those of any of his  
predecessors, he derived little personal advantage, still  
he had the honest satisfaction of knowing that, in the  
opinion of those best qualified to judge, he did more

Chapter for the public good and for the poor of the city than  
 IV any who had held the appointment before him.  
 1842-48

After his marriage, the eagerness of his native friends that Mrs Login should visit their zenanas was great, and her opportunities of insight into the manner of life of ladies of the highest rank were unique

When she became intimate with the wives of the King (Malika Geytee in particular) a special request was always made when they were ill that she should accompany her husband, on the ground that she would be able to describe symptoms and appearances more fully to him from her observations, as of course *he* was not permitted behind the *purdah* !\*

The scene sometimes was very comical. The patient was brought close to the curtain to answer the doctor's questions a large hole being made for the purpose of feeling the pulse but when it came to the operation of getting the lady's *tongue* through the hole in such a way as not to exhibit her face it was often too much for the gravity of the visitor in spite of the air of solemnity and dignity with which the eunuchs supported their mistress and opened her

---

Login had a great dislike to any underhand way of teaching Christianity in the harems, and thought that, unless with the full consent and approval of the husbands, there should be no tampering with the religion of their wives. He placed more faith in the effect of a good life and a character for strict integrity and truthfulness, in those who bear the name of Christian and believed that no blessing could rest on work, which gained the women of India at the expense of the respect of the men.

mouth for the purpose, though even their features sometimes relaxed into a broad grin !

The Wuzeer Ameenoodowlah's only child (a daughter) was supposed to be dying of consumption, and her death was daily looked for, all the wise women and native *hakims* having given her over, after trying all their cures and spells to no effect. The Wuzeer was in great distress and grief, for although only a girl, she was his only child. Dr. Logan asked to see the little girl, and on closely examining her, he found that her whole skin was encrusted with a coat of armour, formed by the unguents and ointments that had been successively rubbed on by each new adviser called in, without removing by washing the previous application (washing during illness being looked upon as fatal), thus the pores of the skin could not act, and unless this could be secured it was no use ordering remedies

He suggested a warm bath first, which terrified them all, and a great wailing of women and eunuchs ensued! After a time, the Begum, listening to his persuasions through the *pardah*, consented, *if only* the Mem-Sahib would come and see it properly carried out in the zenana

She came therefore, taking her Mussulmauni *ayun* with her, and a supply of soft towels, scented soap, and sponges. The poor child was very weak, and great care and tenderness was exercised before the hard shell could be softened enough to come away, and show what



Chapter the little Begum, Wuzeeroolniza, was really like  
 IV without the husk or shell she had been encased in.  
 1842-48

Poor little mite! She was a perfect skeleton of thinness and so weak there seemed little hope for her life.

Dr Login said he could only undertake the case, if the child was made over to his care in the cantonments where he was then residing with a few trustworthy servants to carry out his orders. He knew that in the zenana with such a number of excited slave girls and jealous wise women to counteract his directions there would be small chance of a cure. The parents eagerly grasped at this chance of getting their child restored to health and a bungalow was taken for her with a retinue of women and eunuchs as near as possible to the house in cantonments where Dr Login was then residing with his family.

It was rather ludicrous to see the astonishment of the Begums and their attendants in the zenana at the large sponge used in the bath operations. They were at first alarmed and shrieked with fright when it filled with water thinking it was an animal that would bite the child! but they were delighted with the gift of it and amused themselves for hours filling and squeezing it out again and throwing it at each other amid peals of laughter! The scented soap was also a great delight to them.

The recovery of the child though tedious owing to her weakened state was wonderfully rapid when she was once removed out of the hot city to the purer air

in cantonment, and under the doctor's eye as to food, air, exercise, and amusement

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48.

It was an amusement to her to learn to read and write with the Mem-Salub, whom she always afterwards called her "mother."\*

The Chota Begum was an object of great curiosity and interest, to all the English children in cantonments, as she took her daily drives morning and evening in a gorgeous chariot, in the form of a peacock, painted to represent the bird with tail outspread, under which she sat, attended by her zenana guards

This most enviable carriage was presented to the Login children when the little lady became convalescent

One morning there was a great uproar ! A messenger arrived at the Residency to say that the Prime Minister, Nawab Ameenoodowlah, who had been out in the district enquiring into a case of a refractory Zemindar, had been waylaid by dacoits, attacked, and murdered, and that his corpse was being brought in Login spoke to the excited messenger, who was one of the Nawab's horsemen, told him to dismount, go to the Nawab's house, and prepare everything to receive him He then put some surgical necessaries in his pocket, mounted and galloped off to where the Wuzeer's camp was Had he delayed, the Wuzeer

---

\* Many years afterwards, when he was in England, Login received a letter from the little Begum in question (then the wife of a Nawab), commencing, "My dear Pappa and Mamma," and ending, "your affectionate daughter "

Chapter must have bled to death from his wounds, as it was,  
 IV Login met a mournful procession of the Nawabs  
 1842-48 people carrying home as they believed their master  
 dead. He recovered however after long and anxious  
 nursing and attendance and was ever after truly  
 grateful for his life at Login's hands. His right arm  
 had been nearly hacked off and he was otherwise  
 fearfully wounded but his arm was saved in the end  
 and to his delight he could again use his sword and  
 gun.

Many were the odd expedients resorted to by some  
 of the nobles to express their gratitude and apprecia-  
 tion of Dr Login's professional services. One morning,  
 during her husband's absence Mrs. Login was informed  
 that a messenger from the Palace requested an  
 interview. A stately *chobedār* in the royal livery,  
 scarlet and gold carrying his golden mace (*chobe*),  
 made his salaam and pointing to the entrance gates  
 where stood a splendid barouche and pair informed her  
 with all the graces of Oriental language that this was  
 presented to her by the Wuzzeer by the King's special  
 desire as he thought it was most suitable from its  
 style to carry the wife of so distinguished a gentleman  
 as the Doctor Sahib, who was so considerate to all,  
 and 'the protector of the poor'.

The lady's astonishment and consternation was  
 great! Well did she know the equipage in question—a  
 distinguished and much admired feature in all the  
 Royal processions which it invariably headed!

No doubt, it was London built, and gorgeously lined with satin and gold; but it was scarcely such an equipage as the doctor's wife would choose for her evening drive. The horses were large milk-white creatures with pink noses; and then tails, which literally swept the ground, were dyed a *brilliant scarlet*. Their pace was a sort of slow canter, lifting their feet very high, as if pawing the air, or rather, as if moving along majestically on their hind legs! This remarkable action of theirs was particularly admired in the processions—there was something so *distingué* about it! The harness, also, was all bound with red morocco, and had solid silver mountings

It required great diplomacy to avoid offending the King and the Prime Minister by declining this present, but it *was* accomplished after making a few ceremonious visits of thanks in this magnificent turn-out, by suggesting to the King that the Royal processions would suffer, and be shorn of much splendour, by the absence of this admired carriage, and assuring both King and Minister, that Dr. Login could *actually forego* the pleasure and delight of seeing his wife driving about in this truly regal conveyance, if he could thereby attain the object he had long desired of adding to the healthiness of the city, by the opening up of a new street, and by getting the King and Prime Minister to push forward the scheme for the new road between Lucknow and Cawnpore, with its splendid bridge over the Goomtee, which had lain in abeyance since 1839.

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

This was now urged on the King by the Resident Mr Davidson at Dr Login's suggestion and was agreed to by the Oude Government, Captain Hugh Fraser Bengal Engineers being appointed to carry out the work.

Other strange offerings were presented in lieu of fees—for instance two baby elephants each attended and led by a young negro slave (with nothing but a necklace of large bright beads and a waist-cloth as clothing) were sent by the King's brother in law after recovery from an illness. It was represented to the Nawab that Englishmen kept no slaves but he begged that these boys who had been born in his own harem should be bred up in close attendance on the Mem-Sahib and her children for whom they would be ready to die if necessary !

Although the little elephants who were gaily painted and adorned were as black as their grinning negro attendants they would have proved veritable *white* elephants to Dr Login as in virtue of his office as A D C to the King and Superintendent of the *Royal Hospitals an elephant establishment* was already kept up for him at the King's expense.

On another occasion two huge Persian cats male and female more like small cheetahs or hunting leopards each chained to a separate miniature *charpoy* carried on the head of an attendant keeper were sent by a grateful patient a cousin of the King's as *play mates for the children*. As, however, their food was

raw flesh, and they were allowed to kill and eat, they would not have been safe companions, indeed, they did not seem much more amiable than tigers !

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

It was surprising how the Gharīb-khana cleared the streets of beggars, who had been a great pest. Children were made to see that it was better to learn to work for a livelihood than to beg. Many boys from the Gharīb-khana were placed out in situations, and made some of the best servants in Lucknow and throughout Oude.

The hospital drew so many patients that Dr. Login was obliged to apply for a qualified sub-assistant surgeon (native) from Calcutta, to help in the work.

Cases of snake-bite and of cholera were of constant occurrence. The patients were brought in from the surrounding districts in numbers, and as they invariably preferred to be carried to the Doctor Sahib's house first, there was frequently of a morning to be seen at the entrance gates, a ghastly assemblage of poor wretches writhing in agony in the *doolies* or on the *charpoys*, on which they had been conveyed from distant villages, sometimes, alas ! expiring before they reached their harbour of refuge.

In Login's time there occurred only one of those extraordinary cases of so-called "wolf children"—i.e., children carried off by wolves when infants and suckled with their cubs—of which there have been several known in Oude.

In this instance, the child, who was found in the

Chapter  
IV  
1849-48

district near the Terai \* appeared to be about four or five years old. The body was covered with soft hair, and though undoubtedly human, it was very animal in its instincts and ways. It walked and ran on hands and feet, and could only utter a sound or cry like an animal. It was looked after carefully, but still managed several times to escape to the woods. In spite of all efforts to coax it it refused food, and soon pined and died in captivity.

Colonel Low the Resident, Login's kind friend, knowing how anxious he was to get his next brother an appointment, exerted his influence to this effect, and an assistant-surgeoncy was offered him and eagerly accepted.

James Dryburgh Login after taking his degree of M D in Edinburgh had walked the hospitals of Paris and Vienna and was looked upon as a surgeon of great promise. He was appointed to an European regiment on his arrival in India, and was only able to pay a flying visit to his brother *en route* to the frontier where his regiment was stationed.

John Login being now able to offer a home to his sisters after their mother's death, which took place while he was at Herat two of them came out to him and married respectively Colonel—afterwards General—Joseph Graham, Superintendent of the Thuggee

---

Large district of jungle and swamps on the confines of Oudh and Nepal, the resort of tigers and all sorts of game.

Department, and Captain—afterwards General—Alfred Wintle, Bengal Horse Artillery. His youngest brother Tom, after practical training at home as a civil engineer, he brought out, and through Mr. Thomason's interest got him appointed under Colonel—afterwards Sir Proby—Cautly, who was then commencing the Ganges Canal. He proved himself to have talents of no mean order in his profession, he rose to great distinction as an engineer, and died some years ago Superintending Engineer of the Punjab (Second Circle).

Chapter  
IV.  
1842-48

Patrick Vans Agnew was one of the assistants to the Resident at Lucknow, and a great friendship grew up between him and Login, after he left they corresponded frequently, until Agnew's melancholy death by assassination at Mooltan

The King of Oude had several English officers and gentlemen in his service, besides those in his military employ. Colonel Wilcox (Trigonometrical Survey) was Astronomer to the King, and Mr. George Beechey (son of Sir William Beechey, Royal Academician) was his painter, and had to take portraits of the Governors-General and Commanders-in-Chief for the King's gallery.

These gentlemen had always been treated with great distinction by Mahomed Ali Shah; but when he was succeeded by his son, Wajid Ali Shah—who was afterwards deposed by Lord Dalhousie—a marked difference began to display itself. The young King was anxious



Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

to show his courtiers that these Englishmen were merely his servants who could be treated with arrogance and contempt. This was felt very galling by the Englishmen, who were unable to take notice of it as they knew it would be seized on by the King's favourites as a means of getting rid of them. Matters came to a climax when instead of the customary courteous invitation from His Majesty to attend some grand public function at Court a circular invitation was brought, with only the names of the gentlemen invited on the outside of the envelope in a column, with space opposite each for their signature in token of acceptance.

Login's name headed the list in virtue of receiving pay from the King as Superintendent of Hospitals. Instead of signing his name he confiscated the paper, and took it straight to the Resident Sir George Pollock who made a special representation to the King on the subject. His Majesty was quite alarmed at this unexpected turn of affairs and ordered an ample apology to be made decreeing that the title of 'Bahadoor' was henceforth conferred on 'Login Sahib' and a huge silver seal set with stones was ordered to be engraved with his name and title, to be used as his seal and always to be attached by him to any paper he might send to the King. A day was appointed for his reception at the Palace to have his title and seal presented with a *khullat* or dress of honour.

Instead of losing influence by this independent course, he was more highly appreciated than ever.

Chapter  
IV  
1842 48

The King's public dinners, followed by entertainments of nautches and fireworks, were always a great amusement to strangers. These dinners were more breakfasts or tiffin, being given during the day. Every sort of delicacy was provided, and the King himself had some special dish served up for him. It was considered a great mark of Royal favour to have a portion from this dish sent round to some favoured guest.

On one occasion, after a *khullut* had been presented to Dr Login, before the dinner, for some special reason, the King took it into his head to show a public mark of his approval, and taking up a *handful* (!) of *kabobs*\* and rice, which he was eating, placed it on a plate and sent it round with his salaam to Mrs Login, who, it is to be feared, did not fully appreciate this delicate attention !

The eyes of all the assembly were fixed on her, for of course she was expected to eat the dainty thus *honoured by the royal hand* !

A crowd of servants stood behind the royal chair, each having his separate office. One waved the regal *chowree* over his master's head to keep off the flies, a second, the royal *punkah*, or fan, another bore his *hookah*, a fourth, the golden *chillumchee* and *lota*, † a

\* Small pieces of meat roasted on tiny wooden skewers

† Ewer and basin

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

fifth stood by the King's side to wipe his mouth with a napkin after every morsel a sixth lifted his glass of sherbet to his mouth, whilst the seventh held in readiness the royal pocket-handkerchief and wiped his royal nose !”

It was etiquette that he should not appear able even to *walk about* without support, and he was lifted into his carriage like a bale of goods ! This did not appear so extraordinary in the case of the old King Mahomed Ali Shah who was both aged and infirm but it did strike the European community as absurd when the young Wajid Ali Shah who had prided himself on his great activity suddenly seemed by his accession to the throne to have been deprived of the use of his limbs On one occasion alone did he dare to set etiquette at defiance This was on his first visit of ceremony to the Resident. He submitted to be hoisted up the steps and into the Residency, but on taking his leave to his attendants' dismay he actually *ran up* the ladder to the *howdah* of his elephant, amid the applause of the Europeans present. Is it surprising that this life of inaction so rapidly produces in their *sovereigns the amount of corpulence which in Oriental ideas is essential to the kingly dignity ?*

That Login had the faculty of gaining the hearts of his subordinates is proved by the devotion shown by his servants to himself and his family and the length

of years they remained in his service, following his fortunes often into strange and distant lands.

Chapter  
IV.  
1842-48.

The faithful Khalīpha Ali Bux, who had been with him at Herāt and Cabul, was now made Derogah of the Gharīb-khana. He took up his abode there with his *two* wives, and was indefatigable in his duties. Fatimah, the fair Herāti, was a great favourite with everybody. Khalīpha used to compare himself to Jacob, with whose history he was quite familiar, and would say, with a twinkle in his eye, that whenever he saw signs of a little domestic “breeze” getting up, he threatened to send for the Doctor Sahib, and that was enough!

Hinghan Khan, the Herāti boy, had accompanied his master to India. He was a light weight, and being like most of his countrymen a splendid rider, often rode postillion with Mrs Login’s pretty phaeton, drawn by a pair of Cabulis. These animals had a most inveterate love of fighting, in which they frequently indulged, even when in harness. To cure them of this habit, an extra rein was fastened to the “off” pony, tying his head away from his fellow, but this did not prevent the “near” horse, when his rider was off his guard, making a snatch at his companion across the pole—and then the fight began. At it they went, “tooth and hoof,” to the terror of the bystanders, whether at the bandstand of an evening, or on the road!

Mrs. Login became so used to it, that she would sit

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

patiently till the combatants were either separated or tired out, helping Hinghan by pulling the rein that held back the "off" pony in order to stop the fight and save his leg from being crushed against the pole. When herself driving these animals she was obliged to have both of them kept apart by reins. Strange that this quarrelsome disposition only showed itself after they came to India at Herat and Cabul they lived together in one stall and were most affectionate.

Poor Hinghan was devotedly attached to his master's children and his gallantry and presence of mind helped on one occasion to save them from an awful peril.

The Kings of Oude used to delight in elephant fights at their entertainments and for this purpose a certain number of male elephants were kept in a place apart from others where they were trained and made *must* (mad or ferocious) to prepare them for these fights.

One morning very early the boy Hinghan Khan was out exercising his master's horse *Kamran*. On passing this place he found a terrific battle going on, between the *mahout* and a large elephant who was to fight next day at the Palace entertainment.

Hinghan only remained long enough to see the poor *mahout* thrown down and trampled to death while the elephant rushed out quite mad straight through the city. Suddenly it flashed on him that the two babies

of the Doctor Sahib had started for their early morning airing with the *ayah* on their elephant, and would be now on their way home, right in the track of this infuriated beast, whose trumpetting was rousing the whole city ! Instead of turning home, therefore, the boy gave the rein to the Turcoman he was riding, and flew like the wind to give the alarm to the children's attendants. He met them returning about a mile and a half away, then elephant already excited by the distant roaring of the mad one, and refusing to proceed. Instead of obeying the *mahout's* goad, it stood still, quivering with rage, and trumpetting loudly, eager for the fray—for it was a large and powerful animal, noted in the *shukar* after tigers for its courage and speed,\* and could hardly be induced to turn its back on the prospect of a fight. When, therefore, Hinghan appeared shouting "*Hathee' hathee' must' must'!*" (Elephant ! mad elephant !), and waved to the *mahout* to leave the road and strike into a by-way, it was with the greatest difficulty that the man endeavoured to follow his directions. When at length he succeeded, the *must* elephant was almost upon them, and then ensued a terrible race for life !!

It requires practice to accommodate oneself to the pace of an elephant, even when the animal is only walking, and what the motion is like when at a gallop,

---

\* It was afterwards nearly blinded by a tiger in the Terai, when out on *shukar*.

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

or in a race is past description! Suffice it to say that the *mahout* managed to outstrip the mad brute whose terrific roaring seemed to strike terror into all other animals. Hinghan Khan created a diversion in every way he could to distract the *must* elephants' attention, and would have succeeded better had not his poor Turcoman been wild with terror and unmanageable.

Throughout this mad gallop the *ayah*, though distracted with fright yet bravely seated herself in the bottom of the *howdah* clasping the two children with one hand while she held on with the other. The children, fortunately, were too young to understand their danger and were only indignant at the rude treatment and knocking about their 'dear *ayah*' had sustained in trying to save them.

That Login's coolness and determination approached stoicism when his own sufferings were in question was sometimes rather curiously illustrated.

He had been badly bitten by a horse in the hand the brute having seized the whole thumb in his teeth had regularly crunched the bone. Nothing would make him let go and he kept throwing up his head out of reach, so that Login was unable to free himself. Fortunately, Mrs. Login, who was—with him had the presence of mind to pass her hand into the horse's mouth behind the teeth, and seizing the animal's tongue to give it a violent twist at the same time

startling him with a blow on the nose. This manœuvre Chapter  
 was successful in making him leave go of his victim ; IV.  
 but the injury was already so severe, and in such a 1842-48.  
 dangerous position, that it was feared *tetanus* must  
 supervene. In view of this, Dr. Login himself made  
 all the preparations for the amputation of his thumb ;  
 as it was his right hand that was wounded he could  
 not perform the operation himself, and there was no  
 other surgeon to be had. He therefore sent for his  
 European apothecary, and gave him the most minute  
 instructions how to proceed, and arranged that he  
 himself would do all to assist him, short of using the  
 actual knife. Mercifully the amputation was not  
 found to be necessary

General Claude Martine's\* noble legacy to the City  
 of Lucknow, the Martinière College, was inaugurated  
 at this time, and Login was the most active member  
 of the Board of Management

As Honorary Secretary he drew up all the rules of

---

\* Claude Martine, the Founder, was a Frenchman, a true soldier of fortune, he amassed great wealth while in the service of successive Kings of Oude, and at his death he left it in equal portions between the cities of his birth and adoption, Lyons and Lucknow. His splendid house, or rather palace, named Constantia, which he had built near Lucknow, he specially endowed to be a college called by his name La Martinière. Knowing that there was a risk that his master, the King, might choose Constantia as a royal residence when he died, he took the precaution to direct in his will that his body should be placed in a mausoleum underneath the house, with access through it, so as to be actually in the building, thus defiling it for Mahomedans. His tomb was one of the sights of Lucknow, being quite French or Napoleonic, figures large as life dressed in full uniform guarding the coffin, and a light always burning



Chapter the College, and had the satisfaction of setting it  
 IV afloat under its first Principal Mr Clint—a very  
 1842-48 learned man sent out from England. He was succeeded,  
 on his retirement after a short period by Dr Sprenger,  
 a much more practical man for a new college on its  
 trial. After Dr Sprenger's appointment Login had  
 the opportunity he had longed for of securing another  
 dispensary for the poor of Lucknow

To effect this purpose he generously offered to give  
 up his allowance of 100 rupees per mensem for medical  
 duties at the College in order that a well qualified  
 sub-assistant surgeon (native) might be entertained,  
 who could perform the duties of a dispensary as well

At the same time he offered gratuitously his own  
 assistance and advice to the person appointed. In  
 proposing this he had in view the suggestion which he  
 had submitted to the Secretary to Government two  
 years before and which was approved of to endeavour  
 to attach a medical class to the College as soon as it  
 was fairly established, as it would be a great benefit if  
 some of the students could have the opportunity of  
 being trained in the medical profession

On Henry Lawrence being appointed to the post of  
 Resident at Nepal he came with his wife and little  
 boy Alick (Tim) to pay the Logins a visit on his way  
 to Khatmandoo. Lawrence's energetic character found  
 a ready response in Login and the two friends were  
 perfectly happy during this visit in conceiving and

carrying out all sorts of schemes for improving the condition of the natives, and for stirring up the indolent nobles and opulent merchants to a sense of their responsibility to their poorer brethren \*

Chapter  
IV.  
1842-48

Lawrence at that time was writing articles for the *Calcutta Review*, of which Kaye was editor, and he urged Login to do the same. Observing that the idea of improving the means of carriage for our wounded soldiers in the field was exercising his mind, he got him to write several articles on that subject.†

All Lawrence's staff of servants were hired in Lucknow for the new appointment at Khatmandoo, and when he took up his abode there the intercourse between the two friends did not slacken.

Henry Lawrence's faith in Login's powers as a Post-master was very great, and they were indefatigable in stirring up their respective native Courts, of Oude and Khatmandoo, to facilitate traffic by post and *dâk*.

\* Could those two friends have foreseen, as they sat together over their *chota hazere* in the verandah, in the delicious cold weather mornings, after their early ride, that on a day not far distant Henry Lawrence would be carried, amid a very hail of bullets, wounded unto death, from the Residency hard by, to die on this very spot!

† Login had seen, when on active service, so much of the suffering experienced, and borne so patiently, by the sick and wounded, in the wretched *doolies* in use, that he employed his inventive powers (which were great) in perfecting a litter which would be comfortable in itself and easily carried by bearers, or on the backs of elephants, camels, bullocks, or ponies. It was named "Blessière," and was found so pleasant as a conveyance that it was often used by invalid travellers going *dâk*, in preference to palanquin or *doolie*, as it allowed of change of posture.

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

the College and had the satisfaction of setting it afloat under its first Principal, Mr Clint—a very learned man sent out from England. He was succeeded, on his retirement after a short period by Dr Sprenger, a much more practical man for a new college on its trial. After Dr Sprenger's appointment Login had the opportunity he had longed for of securing another dispensary for the poor of Lucknow.

To effect this purpose he generously offered to give up his allowance of 100 rupees per mensem for medical duties at the College in order that a well qualified sub-assistant surgeon (native) might be entertained, who could perform the duties of a dispensary as well. At the same time he offered gratuitously his own assistance and advice to the person appointed. In proposing this he had in view the suggestion which he had submitted to the Secretary to Government two years before and which was approved of to endeavour to attach a medical class to the College as soon as it was fairly established, as it would be a great benefit if some of the students could have the opportunity of being trained in the medical profession.

On Henry Lawrence being appointed to the post of Resident at Nepal, he came with his wife and little boy Ahick (Tim) to pay the Logins a visit on his way to Khatmandoo. Lawrence's energetic character found a ready response in Login and the two friends were perfectly happy during this visit in conceiving and

carrying out all sorts of schemes for improving the condition of the natives, and for stirring up the indolent nobles and opulent merchants to a sense of their responsibility to their poorer brethren \*

Chapter  
IV.  
1842-48

Lawrence at that time was writing articles for the *Calcutta Review*, of which Kaye was editor, and he urged Login to do the same. Observing that the idea of improving the means of carriage for our wounded soldiers in the field was exercising his mind, he got him to write several articles on that subject.†

All Lawrence's staff of servants were hired in Lucknow for the new appointment at Khatmandoo, and when he took up his abode there the intercourse between the two friends did not slacken.

Henry Lawrence's faith in Login's powers as a Postmaster was very great, and they were indefatigable in stirring up their respective native Courts, of Oude and Khatmandoo, to facilitate traffic by post and *dâk*.

\* Could those two friends have foreseen, as they sat together over their *chota hazree* in the verandah, in the delicious cold weather mornings, after their early ride, that on a day not far distant Henry Lawrence would be carried, amid a very hail of bullets, wounded unto death, from the Residency hard by, to die on this very spot!

† Login had seen, when on active service, so much of the suffering experienced, and borne so patiently, by the sick and wounded, in the wretched *doolies* in use, that he employed his inventive powers (which were great) in perfecting a litter which would be comfortable in itself and easily carried by bearers, or on the backs of elephants, camels, bullocks, or ponies. It was named "Blessiere," and was found so pleasant as a conveyance that it was often used by invalid travellers going *dâk*, in preference to palanquin or *doolie*, as it allowed of change of posture.

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

The Lucknow post-office became famous for its speed and punctuality and Login received a special letter of thanks from Government, to whom he was recommended by Thomason, Lieut. Governor of the North Western Provinces, for a special gratuity on this account but there was some rule which prevented this being granted though the recommendation was recorded.

Some letters of Henry Lawrence's may prove interesting —

NHPAL, Jan 20th 1844

MY DEAR LOGIN

I have just written to Thomason about post-office matters. I have asked him if the report is true that I hear that he is to appoint a young civilian to the Postmaster Generalship?

I said he ought in justice to the country to give the post to the best man in the department one able to do the duty and willing to do it, and who would *stick* to the berth. I have told him there should be three grades—500 800 and 200 rupees and raise men of acknowledged zeal and ability that the natives would then trust their valuable letters to us which they don't do at present and the post-office funds would soon pay the increased salaries

Thomason is a queer fellow and dislikes interference. If therefore he values my opinion at all he will take it best in the shape I have given it and I heartily hope soon to see you in office as Postmaster-General of the North West Provinces for I earnestly believe you would do it full justice and would expedite the *ddks* in a manner the slow coaches little think of. You would also make the *ddk* as valuable to the natives as it is to our selves

I have given Thomason numerous instances of how native Chapter  
 letters are neglected                      Our love to you both                      IV

Yours,

1842-48

H M L

NEPAL, Dec. 19th, 1844

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I hear from many quarters that there is every prospect  
 of your being our new Postmaster-General

I thought Thomason could not be so foolish as to put in a young  
 civilian, for then it would only be temporary

You will make a first-rate head of the department and work  
 up the men under you into something like your own energy and  
 capability.

Alick has been very ill again Oh ! I wish we had your brother  
 the medico here, I would have every confidence in *him* The  
 little fellow is so pulled down, and my wife is so sadly weak, that I  
 feel very anxious The Lucknow *ayah* is a great comfort I  
 hope you are busy with your "Beggai" article Follow your  
 own bent, and I doubt not that it will take immensely, and be  
 very acceptable to the *Review*. Please have it ready by the end  
 of February at latest, and any information you can give as to  
 relief societies, and the effects of the great famine, will be  
 very interesting.

Our Prince here has put down his papa, and has been giving  
 me a lot of trouble Last week they murdered (*killed, they call*  
*it*) sixteen of the opposition party, and all hands have now called  
 the boy to the throne Do give me a slight biographical sketch  
 of Hakim Mhendī and Agameer, and the Treasurer, or Dewan—I  
 forget his name—stating who and what each of them were

Yours sincerely,

H M L

NEPAL Feb 11th 1845

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

MY DEAR LOGIN

My wife has been very ill, so ill that for a week I feared for her life To-day she is better and I hope out of danger but terribly reduced

I am sorry to hear that your dear wife has been so ill. I regret much that you did not make up your minds earlier to spend your hot season with us here it is now of course too late for a delicate lady to travel through the Terai but your brother Tom might still come if you and he like the idea and you think it is for his good to do so I shall be right pleased to have him Write by return and start him off without delay so as to reach Segowlee by the 7th or 8th of March.

He must travel *dak* of course and the less he brings with him the better beyond his clothes It is not safe to pass through the Terai after the 15th March. I repeat my offer to give him 100 rupees per mensem and a *moonshes* to teach him the languages on condition that he gives me (in my own room) his time for two hours a day to write letters for me I have books of every kind and will be glad to assist his studies in any way My invitation is for the whole year for certain. After that we'll launch him and if he is *your* brother he'll find his own legs!

If he agrees give him a copy of what I have written that there may be no mistake between us I limit the time to a year because I never feel sure that I will care to remain here longer than this year

I have heard from Thomason he does not like my saying that his post-office arrangements are not so good as they might be Good as he is he has crotchets and not a few

He says he finds it very difficult to do always as he would like

My dear wife will gladly undertake the office of godmother to the last arrival (remember our compact, that the next boy is to be my godson)

When your wife's letter reached Honoria, she was so ill that I Chapter  
feared much you would have need to apply elsewhere Her illness IV  
seems very strange, certainly Dr C—— does not understand it 1842-48  
I called in Prince Waldemar's\* doctor, and he was so far useful  
in supporting C——

Yours,

H M L.

NEPAL, Aug 9th, 1845

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I am glad to hear you are all flourishing . . . I was  
pleased that you approved of the Oude article in the *Calcutta*  
*Review* If I had known I would have been kept so long  
before printing, I would have sent the manuscript to you for  
revision, to be sure that I had grasped your meaning always, as  
it is, there are some absurd misprints You are mysterious in  
what you say about Shakespear's movements I have no wish to  
get Lucknow unless I were allowed full swing to carry out my  
schemes for the amelioration of the people, in that case I would  
undoubtedly accept, and as a matter of conscience consent to  
sacrifice my own comfort for the good of the country, but if I  
were employed in Oude I should certainly stipulate to have the  
benefit of your services Don't you think we could make some-  
thing of that fine country between us? I certainly would not  
have men with me who are idle lie-a-beds like ——.

I hope your young brother likes his work I hear from Thoma-  
son that he finds him well "worth his salt" on the Ganges  
Canal I am very glad, although you would not accept my offer  
to help him

How I wish we had your brother James here as doctor, and  
also for companionship, for my rides are very lonely—only fancy

---

\* Prussian Prince then travelling in India



Chapter ——— never once has ridden with me since he came though often  
 IV asked! I fancy he and his wife dislike us at least it looks like it  
 1842-48 They are respectable people according to the fashion of the  
 world's respectability but their hearts are 'gizzards' He has  
 only three ideas in his head—there is no such thing as poverty  
 in England—the English Church is purity and propriety personi-  
 fied and— Antigua We have never any disagreement simply  
 we don't *milao* (assimilate) but my dear old Login I know  
 you hate scandal and I never meant to write any when I began  
 We don't like to see Tim grow so weedy and nervous I don't  
 want him to be girlish but he has lost all courage of late My  
 wife begs I will give you the enclosed description of his state  
 Will you think it all over and give us directions or prescriptions  
 as you think best? My wife has such faith in you that if you  
 take him in hand she will be at rest

Yours

H M L

When Lawrence was sent from Nepal to Lahore to be Resident he still kept up a friendly correspondence. Here is a letter written when preparing to go home on leave to recruit his health, sadly broken down, leaving the Punjab as he and Lord Hardinge believed, tranquil if not quite settled down —

LAHORE Nov 5th, 1847.

MY DEAR LOGIN

Many thanks for your kind *chit* just received I answer in a way at once lest it get laid aside in the bustle I want you to tell Tom to qualify as a surveyor for there will be work for him hereafter in the Punjab

I don't think it would do for Lord Hardinge to do anything just as he is leaving ; but I think that his successor should do much what you propose, and I agree with you that John is the best man they could get to carry out the arrangement, and I shall tell the Court of Directors so when I get home. Chapter IV 1842-48

I leave Lahore on the 1st December, and go down to Calcutta I am better, but very seedy and rickety, and want a thorough setting-up I'll keep your secret, and advise you to write a great deal more of same sort for the *Delhi Gazette* I thought the article *very good* and very like *you*—certainly not written by Delhi folks. The paper wants a little help, a little would enable it to floor that scoundrel at Meerut. I trust that Mrs Login's health holds out My kindest regards to her and you

Yours,

H LAWRENCE

Previous to this Lawrence had succeeded in getting Login's brother, James Dryburgh, appointed to be Residency-Surgeon at Nepal, where he remained after Lawrence was appointed to the Punjab frontier on the breaking out of the war The young surgeon's influence over the Minister, Jung Bahadoor, was remarkable He inspired him with a great desire to go to England to judge for himself what sort of people they were who ruled India

Jung Bahadoor applied for permission to Government that Dr James D Login should be permitted to accompany him to England and to visit the Continent of Europe

The permission was granted ; but before the informa-

Chapter  
IV  
1842-48

tion reached James Login he was dead, having been attacked by cholera at Dinapore, and carried off after a few hours' illness. It was brought on by exposure to a fierce sun on the river, working and superintending the fitting up of a boat to carry a patient the wife of a friend to Calcutta on her way to England.

It is satisfactory to know that although he was not permitted himself to carry out his desire to open Jung Bahadoor's eyes to the power and greatness of England, yet that the visit was productive of great results and that it was the cause of making a friend of that astute and wily native, whose friendship proved so useful in the Mutiny.

It was expected that when Dr Login's promotion to the grade of full surgeon took place that he also (like Dr Stevenson his predecessor) would be permitted to remain in the appointment of Residency Surgeon until there was a vacancy for him as Postmaster General. No doubt this would have been the case had either of his former chiefs Low, Nott Pollock, or Davidson been the Resident for they would have applied for him Login himself on principle, always acting on the belief that the Government knew best who was the fittest man for a particular office, had made it a rule never to ask for anything. It happened however, that the Resident and his first Assistant had taken offence at Dr Login, because on public grounds he (as a member of the Council of Management and Secretary) opposed their wish to appoint a very unfit man

as the Sub-Assistant Surgeon in charge of the Martinière Dispensary. Colonel Richmond took the extraordinary step, as soon as he saw Login's promotion in the *Gazette*, of appointing another Assistant-Surgeon till his successor was gazetted, and ordered the native Sub-Assistant Surgeon to take charge at once of the King's hospitals, thus virtually ousting Dr. Login.

Chapter  
IV.  
1842-48

This appointment, when sent up to the authorities for confirmation, brought down a severe rebuke on the Resident, who was told by the Governor-General that the appointment was a most improper one; he had, therefore, himself to pay to his nominees the allowances he tried to deduct from Dr. Login.

Login had arranged to send home his wife and children when he became full surgeon. And had it not been for the disturbed state of the Punjab at the time, he would have taken furlough and gone home with them, as it was, he applied to be sent on active service with the army then assembling

He was again appointed to the charge of the Horse Artillery, and joined the 6th Battalion at Deenanuggur, under Brigadier Wheeler, in the autumn of 1848

## CHAPTER V

### THE SIKHS

Chapter V THE Punjab or Land of the Five Rivers,\* was first known to Western nations as the kingdom of Porus. The Greeks under Alexander who defeated that monarch, gave to the country he ruled over the name of India." This name later ages extended to those vast territories which lie betwixt the Indus and the Irrawaddy and stretch from Cape Comorin to the farthest Himalayas.

The Punjab itself is about the size of the present kingdom of Prussia (including Hanover and Schleswig Holstein) though its population is not quite so dense as that of northern Germany † It enjoys every variety of climate from the drifting snows of Ladakh to the dust storms of Mooltan ‡ The products of the

---

from porch five ab water "

† The total population of the Punjab including the Native States, was, in 1881 2,712,120. Exclusive of the Native States, it is 18,850 437 The population of Prussia is about 27,000 000

‡ Cunningham's *History of the Sikhs*, p. 2.

soil are equally varied, and though it is not so marvellously fertile as parts of Bengal and the basin of the Ganges, even in the days of Runjeet Singh the revenues were estimated at two and a half millions sterling, while under British rule they have nearly doubled!\* The wealth of the country, however, is largely owing to its trade in shawls, carpets, and silk goods (the shawls of Cashmere and carpets of Mooltan being almost equally famous), and to its export of salt—the salt-mines of the Jhelum district forming a valuable source of revenue to the British Government. The inhabitants are of many races, the most numerous in the central plain, about the cities of Lahore and Amritsur, being the Jats—a tribe of Central Asian origin—and it was amongst these people that the Sikh theism had its birth.

It must not be forgotten that the Sikhs in origin were a *religious body*, and not a *race*. They were banded together, not by the ties of kindred or common ancestry, but by the ardour and religious zeal of one earnest soul searching for Divine truth, who formed them into a brotherhood of enthusiastic disciples, sworn to carry on his mission to succeeding generations, and bring all who would accept their teaching, of whatever tribe, language, or religion, from the darkness of idolatry and debased superstition,

---

\* Gross receipts for the year ending March 31st, 1884—£4,810,825.

Chapter V which disgraced all the creeds of India, to the simple worship of the one Supreme Deity. Unlike the followers of Mahomed, the Sikhs made no converts by the sword.

1469 Nānuk, the founder of the Sikh religion, was born in the year 1469. The *Adi Grunt'h*, or sacred book of the Sikhs which contains his writings shows that the doctrines he taught breathe a high spirituality and truly exalted moral character. Here and there, indeed they bear a strange and shadowy resemblance to some of the precepts of the Christian faith. Nānuk taught that God was One, Eternal, Incomprehensible, the Creator of all that *all* creeds were to be tolerated, and *all* founders of religious systems honoured as teachers sent to reveal some portion of Divine truth, but they were on no account to be regarded as deities themselves. The Hindoo religion and that of Mahomed is thus placed on equal terms.

1695 Nānuk was succeeded by nine Gūrūs or teachers, whereof Govind\* was the tenth and last. Govind proclaimed the foundation of the Khālsa† or sacred commonwealth of the Sikhs. Caste was to be done away and all Sikhs were equally to receive the *pahul*,

---

Govind assumed the Gūrūship in 1695

\* The word *Kādas* signifies "pure special free." According to the teaching of Govind, every Sikh as such, was equally a member of the Khālsa, which was regarded as the depository of Divine authority upon earth, and in whose collective body God Himself was held to be mystically present.

or initiatory rite,\* the locks of the faithful were to remain unshorn, and they were told to assume the surname of “Singh” (lion). Chapter V. 1695

Govind also formed the Sikhs into a military and political organization, and when he died, in 1708, told his followers that the mission of the appointed “Ten” was fulfilled; and henceforth the Gûrûship was absorbed in the general body of the Khâlisa. 1708.

Politically the Sikhs were divided into a number of separate “Mîsils” or confederacies, each headed by a Sirdar or chief. These associations are peculiarly Sikh institutions, and the name being derived from an Arabic word signifying “alike or equal,” implies that they were associations of *equals*, under chiefs of their own selection. The Sirdar’s portion being first divided off, the remainder of the lands and property acquired by these bands of freebooters was parcelled out among his followers—whether relatives, friends, volunteers, or hired retainers—who had followed his banner in the field, and who each took his part as co-sharer, and held it in absolute independence †

\* The essentials for this were 1st The presence of five Sikhs (disciples) “Where five Sikhs are assembled,” says Govind, “there is the Khâlisa.” 2nd Some sugar and water stirred together in a vessel with a two edged dagger or other iron weapon. The candidate repeats the articles of his faith, a portion of the water is sprinkled over him, and he drinks the remainder with the exclamation, “Hail Gûrû!” See Cunningham, *Note*, p. 76

† Prinsep’s “*History of the Sikhs*,” p. 28. The principal Mîsils were twelve in number, viz —1 Bhungee 2 Kuneia or Ghunneya 3 Sooker Chukea 4 Ramgurhea 5 Phoolkea 6 Nukeia 7 Aloowalea 8 Dulecala 9. Nishanwalea. 10 Krorea Singhea 11 Shudeed and Nihung 12 Fyzool lapoorea or Singhpoorea.



Chapter V  
1762 It is in the year 1762 that the name of Churhut Singh Chief of the Sooker Chuksa Misl, first rises into notice, he having then established a stronghold in his wife's village of Goojranwallah, famous in after years as the birth place of his grandson, the renowned Runjeet Singh

1774 When, in 1774 Churhut Singh was killed by the bursting of his own matchlock, and was succeeded in his chieftainship by his son, Maha Singh the revenues of his Misl were estimated at three lakhs of rupees (£30 000) \*

Maha Singh overthrew and slew Jai Singh, the chief of the Kuneia Misl who had become the most powerful amongst the Sikh Sirdars, and married the infant grand-daughter of Jai Singh to his only son Runjeet Singh That youth therefore, on his father's death, in 1792 found himself, at the early age of twelve years, paramount chief of the Sikh nation.

1799 In the year 1799 in return for services rendered to the Afghan Shah Zuman Runjeet Singh received a royal investiture of the city of Lahore Thus was the first step gained towards the establishing of kingly power in the Punjab, though it was not until ten years later, that his predominance over the other Sirdars was firmly fixed, and a formal treaty entered into with the British (April 25th, 1809), in which he was acknowledged as ruler of all the Sikhs (except those of Malwa

and Sirhind, south of the Sutlej, which were under British protection), and whereby perpetual friendship was secured between the British Government and the State of Lahore—an engagement faithfully kept throughout his life by the Maharajah

Chapter  
V  
1799.

Runjeet Singh left at his death (June 27th, 1839) 1839 six sons, of whom *four* were legitimate, or “acknowledged,” viz, (1) Khurruck Singh, born 1802, (2) Shere Singh, born 1807, (3) Tara Singh, said to be twin-brother of Shere Singh, (4) Duleep Singh, born September 4th, 1831.

There were also two illegitimate, or “adopted,” sons, viz, Cashmera Singh, born 1819, and Peshawua Singh, born 1823

Of the “legitimate” sons, born of his wives, only two, however, Khurruck Singh and Duleep Singh, were fully acknowledged as such by the Maharajah, Shere Singh and Tara Singh having always been supposed by him, and generally believed, to have been substituted for a daughter by his first, or principal, wife, Mehtab Kour, daughter of Goorbuksh Singh, and heiress of the Kuneia chieftainship. To neither of them did the Maharajah ever show any parental affection\*. Shere Singh was commonly reported to be the son of a carpenter, and Tara Singh that of a weaver

---

\* *Memorandum drawn up for Her Majesty by Sir John Login* See also Cunningham, p. 186.

Chapter  
V  
1839

Runjeet Singh was succeeded by his eldest son, Khurruck Singh whose reign lasted barely five and a half months. Khurruck Singh was of weak intellect and the government rested entirely in the hands of his son, Nao Nehal Singh. This Prince conspired with the famous three "Jummoo Brothers" \* to murder one Cheit Singh the favourite of the Maharajah, his father. The crime was perpetrated at daybreak on the 8th October 1839, within a few paces of the terrified monarch who himself died soon after (November 5th), prematurely old and careworn.

That same day retribution overtook Nao Nehal Singh for as he was returning from the performance of the last rites at the funeral pyre of his father, the masonry of a gateway under which he was passing gave way and he, together with the eldest son of Golab Singh who was at his side was crushed under the ruins. The Jummoo Rajahs were of course suspected of causing his death and it is possible that self preservation may have been their motive as they well knew that Nao Nehal Singh had determined on their destruction.

For some time the government was assumed by Chund Kotir, the widow of Khurruck Singh, but on

Rajah Golab Singh (made afterwards Maharajah of Cashmere by the English), Dhy Singh and Suchet Singh three brothers who were powerful favourites of Runjeet Singh

+ See Cunningham, p. 211; also Smyth's *Reigning Family of Lahore* St Intach Henry Lawrence's "*A Treasurer in the Punjab*" &c.





the 18th January, 1841, through the influence of the Jummoo Rajahs and the army, Shere Singh, the reputed son of Runjeet Singh, was proclaimed Maharajah

Chapter  
V.  
1841

In 1843, Rajah Dhyan Singh, who was Wuzeer, finding that his influence with the Maharajah was on the wane, conspired with two Sirdars of the Sindhanwallah family,\* named Ajeet Singh and Lena Singh, to murder both Shere Singh and his eldest son, Pertab Singh, a boy of thirteen or fourteen years. Dhyan Singh, however, gained little by his treachery, for he was murdered by his accomplices within an hour or two of his master. His death was avenged by his son, the youthful Heera Singh, who made an appeal to the army, and Ajeet Singh and Lena Singh were slain in their turn †

1843

Duleep Singh was then proclaimed Maharajah (September 18th, 1843), and Heera Singh raised to the "high and fatal office" of Wuzeer. ‡

Duleep Singh was born in the palace at Lahore on the 4th September, 1838, about three months before the interview at Ferozepore between Lord Auckland and the ruler of the Sikhs, which preceded the advance of the army of the Indus to Afghanistan. He was at

\* Descendants of Nodha, an ancestor of Runjeet Singh.

† Smyth's "*Reigning Family of Lahore*," p. 76

‡ Cunningham, p. 271. Shere Singh had left a son (Sheo Deo Singh), then an infant of four months, and also three adopted sons — *Memo by Sir J. Logan*

Chapter  
V  
1848

once acknowledged by the Maharajah Runjeet Singh as his son, and much attention and kindness was shown to his mother, the Ranee Jinda or Chunda. After the death of the "Great Maharajah," which occurred when the child was about ten months old and during the reigns of Khurruck Singh and Shere Singh, the young prince continued to reside in the palace under his mother's care, receiving but little notice from either of his elder brothers, the reigning princes, or their ministers.

Since the death of Runjeet Singh and the dissolution of the Misls the army had been the real power in the State. Claiming to represent the Khālsa itself it took upon it to discuss all national and important matters and to have the selection of the occupant of the *guddee* (throne). It maintained a rigid internal discipline in itself, as far as drill and military duties were concerned but its relation to the Executive Government was determined by a council or assemblage of committees composed of delegates from each battalion or regiment. These committees were termed

Punchayets, from the word *panch* (five) the mystic number of the Khālsa, and the system is a common one throughout Hindostan where every section of a tribe or district has its *punchayet* or village parliament.

The Maharanee Jinda was made Regent for her son. She was a woman of great capacity and strong will, who had considerable influence with the Punchayets being a skilful intriguer and endowed with undoubted

courage, though her moral character left much to be desired

Chapter  
V  
1843

Dissensions soon broke out among the Jummoo family. Suchet Singh, the youngest of the three "Jummoo Brothers," was mortified at the ascendancy of his nephew, Heera Singh, and determined to supplant him. He broke at length into open rebellion, but was overthrown, and died, fighting to the last. Suchet Singh left no heirs, and his immense estates and wealth were the cause of much dispute later on. He had buried about one and a half million rupees' worth of treasure at Ferozepore on British territory, and this the Lahore Government claimed, both as escheated property of a feudatory without male heirs, and as the confiscated property of a rebel in arms, while the British Government contended that the claim must be pleaded and proved in a British court of justice \*

Rajah Golâb Singh had supported his nephew Heera Singh. He was the eldest and most crafty of the "Jummoo Brothers", his wealth and territories were enormous, and this overgrown vassal was a source of serious embarrassment to the central power. He was, however, reduced to submission by the army, and obliged to pay a fine of three and a half million rupees (£350,000), which was afterwards increased to six and three-quarter millions (£675,000).

---

\* Cunningham, p 278



Chapter  
V  
1845

Jowahir Singh, the brother of the Maharanee, was now ambitious of power. He conspired against Heera Singh, caused him to be put to death, and himself became Wuzeer in his place, but falling under the displeasure of the Punchayets, was himself publicly shot by their order in the presence of his sister and his nephew, the little Maharajah.

In the December of the same year (1845), the Sikh army crossed the Sutlej, and there followed what is known as the First Sikh War.

On the news reaching the capital of the annihilation of his army at Sobraon, the young Maharajah set out for Kussoor to offer his submission to the Governor General, Sir Henry Hardinge\*. Some days later, at another durbar held at Lahore Sir Henry asked to be allowed to see the famed Koh-i-noor. It was produced for his inspection, and afterwards passed round to the other Europeans present. Colonel Balcarres Ramsay thus describes the incident —

I arrived at the camp at Lahore just as the Governor General was going out with his *cortege* to meet the young Maharajah and receive his submission. There was a grand durbar afterwards and when the Koh-i-noor was handed round for our inspection Mr Edwards the Under Secretary to Government in the Foreign Department was put in charge of it. He was evidently extremely nervous and carried it round himself from one staff officer to another. Just as he placed it in my hands Sir Henry Hardinge

sent for him; I naturally passed it on to the next officer, but when Edwards hurried back and demanded the precious jewel, I never shall forget the agony depicted on his face, as he rushed down the ranks of staff officers, frantically demanding it! \*

Chapter  
V  
1845

Sir Henry then, with a pleasant smile, fastened it himself on the arm of the little King, afterwards patting him on the back in a kindly manner.†

On the 20th February, 1846, the British troops entered Lahore, and the whole Punjab lay at their feet.‡ It was theirs by force of arms and the fortune of war, yet Sir Henry Hardinge had no thought of annexation. He contented himself with annexing the Jullundur Doab, or country between the Sutlej and the Beas, and demanding an indemnity from the Lahore State of a crore and a half of rupees (one and a half million sterling). This sum the Lahore Treasury was unable to produce, and the Governor-General took Cashmere and the Hill States, from the Beas to the Indus, in lieu of two-thirds of the indemnity, and transferred this territory to Rajah Goolab Singh, as a separate sovereign, for a sum of one million sterling. As, however, it was found advisable to retain

---

\* "*Life of Lord Lawrence*," vol. i., p. 191.

† "*Maharajah Duleep Singh and the Government*," p. 71. See also "*Life of Sir Herbert Edwards*," vol. i., p. 44.

‡ The war had cost the victors dearly in men and officers. Among fifty-six of the latter, who fell in the bloody fight of Ferozepore, was the noble-hearted D'Arcy Todd, Logan's late chief at Herat, to whom he was attached by the closest bonds of intimacy and affection.

Chapter  
V  
1846

a portion of this territory in the hands of the East-India Company this latter sum was reduced by one-fourth, and the liquidation was rendered still more easy to the Jummoo Prince, by considering him as heir to the money buried by his brother, Suchet Singh, at Ferozepore and which was already in the possession of the East India Company

When it is considered says Cunningham \* that Goltab Singh had agreed to pay sixty-eight lakhs of rupees as fine to his paramount (and had never done so) it appears that he ought to have paid the deficient million of money into the Lahore Treasury as a Lahore subject instead of being put in possession of Lahore provinces as an independent prince His rise to sovereign power excited the ambition of others and Tej Singh offered twenty five lakhs of rupees for a princely crown and another dismembered province †

Later on (March 11th) an additional clause was added to the Treaty, to the effect that a British force should remain at Lahore till the close of the year, to protect the Maharajah and his Government while the reorganization of the Khālṣa army was in progress, but as the time approached when this force would be withdrawn, the uneasiness of the durbar, or council of ministers prompted them to ask the Governor General to continue to assist them in the administration of

---

*History of the Sikhs* pp. 331-33. See also ante p. 107

† His offer however was rejected.

affairs, during the minority of the Maharajah, and the Treaty of Bhyrowal (December 16th, 1846) was the outcome of this request \*

Chapter  
V.  
1846

By this new Treaty, the Punjab was placed "under the dictatorship of a British Resident, who was to have full control over every department of the State. It provided for the continuance of a British force at Lahore until the Maharajah Duleep Singh should attain the full age of sixteen, which would happen on the 4th September, 1854. The sum of twenty-two lakhs annually was to be paid by the Lahore State for the expenses of the occupation. The administration of the affairs of the country was to be continued, under the direction of the Resident, by a Council of Regency. . . . The Ranee was to be provided with a fitting maintenance, but was by this new arrangement to be virtually excluded from any share in the government "†

By the selection of Henry Lawrence to fill the arduous and delicate position of Resident at Lahore, and virtual ruler of the Punjab, Lord Hardinge showed at once his foresight and desire to conciliate the Sikhs.

By the terms of the Treaty, the Resident was vested with supreme and despotic powers, subject only to the instructions of the Governor-General.‡ In a letter dated 3rd July, 1847, Lord Hardinge reminds the Resident that the articles of government "give to the

---

\* See "*Treaty of Bhyrowal*" Appendix.

† Quoted from "*Maharajah Duleep Singh and the Government*," p. 30.

‡ "*Punjab Papers*," 1849, pp 35, 48, 53

Chapter  
V  
1846

Government of India, represented at Lahore by its Resident, full power to direct and control all matters in every department of the State. It is politic," he says "that the Resident should carry the native Council with him the members of which are, however, entirely under his control and guidance, he can change them and appoint others and in military affairs his powers are as unlimited as in the civil administration he can withdraw Sikh garrisons, replacing them by British troops, in any and every part of the Punjab " \* In a subsequent letter Lord Hardinge again urged on Henry Lawrence the advisability of keeping a tight hand on all native officials, and making his own personality felt in every department of the government.† The following extract from another letter of his will show what the real scope of the Treaty was and that the Resident was to be entirely responsible for the administration of the country —

October 23rd 1847

1847 In all our measures taken during the minority we must bear in mind that by the Treaty of Lahore March, 1846 the Punjab never was intended to be an independent State By the clause I added the Chief of the State can neither make war nor peace nor exchange nor sell an acre of territory nor admit an European officer nor refuse us a thoroughfare through his territories nor in fact perform any act (except its own internal administration)

without our permission. In fact, the native prince is in fetters, and under our protection, and must do our bidding. I advert hastily to this point because, if I have any difference of opinion with you, it consists in your liberality in attempting at too early a period to train the Sikh authorities to walk alone, I wish them to feel and to like our direct interference by the benefits conferred \*.

Chapter  
V.  
1847.

The Resident thus describes the practical working of the Council of Regency (August 1847):—

On the whole, the durbar gives me as much support as I can reasonably expect, there has been a quiet struggle for mastery, but as, though I am polite to all, I allow nothing that appears to me wrong to pass unnoticed, the members of the Council are gradually falling into the proper train, and refer most questions to me, and, in words at least, allow, more fully even than I wish, that they are only executive officers—to do as they are bid †.

Although the Maharajah was too young to share the councils of those who ruled in his name, he was always present in state at the durbars, and all dignities and honours were conferred by his hand.

It chanced that at a grand durbar held on the 7th August, 1847, it was arranged that distinctions should be given to various Sirdars who had rendered important services. Amongst other dignities, the title of "Rajah" was to be conferred on Tej Singh, Commander-in-Chief

---

\* "*Life of Sir Henry Lawrence, K C B*," vol. II, p. 100

† "*Punjab Papers*," 1849, p. 32

Chapter  
V  
1847

of the Lahore army, betwixt whom and the Maharanee Jinda there reigned a bitter enmity. The latter, therefore, delayed her son's arrival at the durbar for upwards of an hour though all the Sikh Sirdars and English officers were assembled and waiting. When at length he did appear the Maharajah refused to put out his hand to mark the forehead of the new Rajah on his investiture and by Colonel Lawrence's orders the ceremony had to be performed by a Sikh priest.

The scene is thus described in a private letter from Lord Hardinge to Sir Frederick Currie\* —

He resolutely played his part tucked his little hands behind him threw himself back in his chair and one of the priests performed the ceremony. In the evening she (the Maharanee) would not allow the Prince to be dressed to see the fireworks. In short she is breeding him up systematically to thwart the Govt. and the English connection. I am now in *confidential* correspondence with L. and I see no remedy but to remove her from Lahore. Sooner or later it must come to this as he grows older it is our duty as his Guardians to remove him from her evil example.

For this open insult to the Resident and durbar for which she was known to be responsible, the Maharanee was consequently separated from her son, and removed to Sheikopoor about twenty five miles from Lahore (August 19th 1847)

---

Dated August 19th, 1847 *Private Papers of the late Sir F. Currie* (by kind permission of Lady Currie.)

The constant strain of work at the Lahore Residency was too much for Henry Lawrence's health, and he was obliged to return to England on sick leave, in company with his friend Lord Hardinge, whose period of office had just expired, and who was succeeded as Governor-General, by the Earl of Dalhousie, on the 21st of January, 1848.

Chapter  
V.  
1848.

Owing to Henry Lawrence's absence, the post of Resident at Lahore was temporarily filled by Sir Frederick Currie, but as he was not able to assume his duties till March, 1848, the affairs of the Punjab remained, in the interim, in the able hands of Henry Lawrence's younger brother, John.

Sir Henry Lawrence had left the Punjab, as he believed, in a condition of internal peace; and so little anticipation was generally felt of any serious outbreak in that quarter, that Lord Hardinge had assured his successor, on handing over the reins of government, that, so far as he could see, "it would not be necessary to fire a gun in India for seven years to come!"\* How speedily was this fair prediction to be falsified, and these bright hopes dashed to the ground!

"The thunder-bolt fell, as it were, out of the blue sky"† Towards the end of April, the Punjab was ringing from end to end with the intelligence of the murder of Vans Agnew and Anderson at Mooltan, and

---

\* "*Life of Lord Lawrence*," by Bosworth Smith, vol 1, p 245

† "*India under Victoria*," by Captain Trotter, vol 1, p 171



Chapter  
V  
1848

the revolt of Moolraj, the Dewan and Governor of the province who had raised once more the standard of the Khalsa, calling on all true Sikhs to join him in freeing their country from the rule of the foreigner

There is no need to tell over again the story of that revolt. Had the military authorities either at Lahore or Simla shown only one tithe of the energy displayed by Lieutenant Herbert Edwardes who with a single native infantry regiment 300 horse and a couple of horse artillery guns as a nucleus set about collecting and raising troops, defeated the Dewan in two pitched battles and finally confined him within the walls of his own city and fortress of Mooltan the whole rebellion might have been suppressed as rapidly as it rose and the necessity for the Second Sikh War have never existed.\*

Although by the terms of the Treaty of Bhyrowal (see Articles vii viii ix) a British force was specially provided for the preservation of the peace of the country," for whose services the Lahore Government were annually to pay the sum of twenty two lakhs of rupees,† and although Lord Hardinge had specially arranged

---

Alone unsupported he (Edwardes) achieved a result of which a British army might have been proud. And it is not too much to affirm that had he been then and there supported by a few British troops and guns, placed under his own orders, he might have taken the fortress, and possibly have nipped the rising in the bud.—Melleson's "*Decisive Battles*," pp. 351-352.

† If this sum was not paid annually into the Calcutta Treasury the matter was entirely in the hands of the British Resident who had supreme control over the revenues and finances of the Punjab. See Articles ii. and vi. of the Treaty of Bhyrowal.—Appendix.

for such an emergency, by providing a British movable brigade to be kept always in readiness at Lahore, Sir Frederick Currie hesitated on his own responsibility to order the march of that brigade. Sending instead for the Sikh Sirdars, he told them that they must put down the rebellion and bring the offenders to justice, by their own means, as their only hope of saving their Government. The astonished Sirdars, "after much discussion, declared themselves unable, without British aid, to coerce Dewan Moolraj in Mooltan, and bring the perpetrators of the outrage to justice"\*

Some little light is thrown on this seemingly unaccountable action of Sir Frederick Currie, when we recollect that, as Foreign Secretary to the Government of India and as Member of Council, he was doubtless cognizant of many considerations then influencing the new Cabinet at home, but which were unknown to the general public, and we find from a perusal of certain private letters which passed between him and Lord Hardinge,† that, as far back as April, 1847, Currie was aware that matters at home pointed more and more "decidedly to eventual annexation of the Punjab"

Believing, therefore, that any serious revolt among the Sikhs, which should necessitate the employment of British arms to suppress it, would only hasten this

---

\* "*Punjab Papers*," 1849, p. 140

† *Unpublished Correspondence of Sir Frederick Currie*

Chapter  
V  
1884

measure, Currie, in thus sending for the Sirdars had apparently in his mind, the desire to offer them another chance for the continuance of the native Government, so far as it then existed.

The Sikh Durbar having acknowledged their incapability of coping unaided with the rebellion, Sir Frederick Currie strongly urged on the Governor General and Commander in Chief the advisability of the interposition of the British Government, and the immediate despatch of a sufficient force of troops and siege-guns from Ferozepore, but to this Lord Gough would not agree, and the only support given to Edwardes was a force of 5,000 Sikh troops, under Rajah Shere Singh Atareewalah.

Meanwhile, on the 8th May, a plot against the Resident and British officials was discovered at Lahore, in which the Queen Mother was implicated. Her *vakeel*\* Ganga Ram, was one of the chief conspirators, and together with one Kanh Singh, late a Colonel of Sikh Artillery, was convicted and hanged.† On the 15th of May the Maharanee was removed from the fort of Sheikopora by the Resident's orders, and conveyed under escort to Ferozepore on her way to Benares. Here she remained a State prisoner for nearly a year, until removed for greater security to the fortress of Chunar. Not long after her arrival at this last place however, she, on the 18th of April

---

\* Ambassador or accredited agent.

† Trotter

1849, managed to effect her escape in the disguise of a *fakeernee*, and took refuge in Nepal, where she came under the charge of Dr James Dryburgh Login, who was then Acting-Assistant Resident at Khatmandoo

Chapter  
V  
1848

The order for the removal of the Maharanee Jinda was signed by three members of the Council of Regency, and by Goláb Singh, on behalf of his absent brother, Rajah Shere Singh Atareewalah “The venerable Fakeer Noor-ood-deen, personal friend and adviser of the late Maharajah Runjeet Singh, and a person greatly respected by the Sikhs generally,” \* personally saw to the order being carried out.

So urgent was Major Edwardes in appealing to Lahore for a few regular regiments, heavy guns, &c, offering with the help of these “to close Moolraj’s accounts in a fortnight, and obviate the necessity of assembling 50,000 men in October,” † that Currie, on the 1st July, on his own responsibility, and against the advice of the Commander-in-Chief, ordered the march of the movable brigade under his orders, yet

\* “*Punjab Papers*,” 1849, p 169 On her removal to Sheikopoor the Ranee’s stipend had been reduced to 48,000 rupees (£4,800), on her banishment to Benares it was made 12,000 rupees (£1,200)

† “*Punjab Papers*,” p 223 I am one of those who believe to this day, and perhaps ever shall, *that had that brigade, under a fine soldier like Brigadier Campbell, marched AT ONCE upon Mooltan (say on April 25th) the rebellion would have been nipped in the bud by the escape and surrender of Moolraj* Moolraj did not rebel because the Sikhs were ready to back him up The Sikhs backed up Moolraj because the British Government did not put him down The Sikh insurrection was created out of the materials collected to put down the Mooltan rebellion —*Remarks of Sir Herbert Edwardes* (see his “*Life*,” by Lady Edwardes, 1886, vol 1., p. 145, 147).

Chapter  
V  
1848

so many delays ensued, owing to want of carriage, and references back and forwards between Simla and Lahore that it was not until the 24th of the month that the brigade left Lahore under General Whish, and it did not reach Mooltan till the 18th August—the siege-guns only coming into camp on the 4th of the following month

On the 14th September the siege was raised owing to the defection of the Durbar troops under Rajah Shere Singh,\* and was not resumed until the 26th December, after more than three months and a half of inaction. On the 2nd January 1849 (seven days after the siege was undertaken in earnest), the city was taken by assault, while on the 22nd the citadel was breached, and Moolraj had surrendered unconditionally

But by this time the Punjab was in a blaze and Shere Singh defiant at the head of 30 000 men !

This is not the place to tell over again the history of the Second Sikh War, with its surprising blunderings and bloody victories—victories won at the point of the sword, from an heroic foe driven to desperation, the Sikh Khālsa at bay, and battling for its very existence ! Suffice it to say that on the 18th December Lord Gough crossed the Chenab with his army, that on the 13th January, 1849, with 15,000 men, he

---

When Currie consulted the Sirdars, they warned him then that these troops were disaffected and not to be depended on.— *Punjab Papers* " p 140.

fought the battle of Chillianwallah, late in the afternoon, with darkness creeping up, and with troops who had been under arms since early day-break \* On the 21st February, having on the previous day been joined by General Whish's force, set free by the fall of Mooltan, Lord Gough retrieved all the previous errors of the campaign, by gaining the crowning victory of Goojerat, driving the Sikh army of 34,000 men, totally routed and in confusion, across the Jhelum. On the 14th March, Shere Singh, Chuttur Singh, and the rest of the Sirdars, gave up their swords, and the last remains of the Khâlsa army—to the number of 16,000 men—flung down their arms at the summons of General Gilbert, on the upland plains of Rawul Pindee.†

Thus ended the Second Sikh War, whose origin and motive we must look for in the ranks of that residue of the Khâlsa army which, contrary to the advice of the Sikh Commander-in-Chief, we retained as the standing army of the Punjab,‡ while at the same time we took from them the authority and influence they had arrogated to themselves in the government of the

\* Trotter

† Malleon Trotter, p 221 See also the description of this scene in Mr Bosworth Smith's "*Life of Lord Lawrence*," vol 1, p 276

‡ "Rajah Tej Singh said, *two years ago*, and has always adhered to the opinion, that it was less dangerous, and would prove less embarrassing, to disband them all and raise a new army, than to continue a man of them in service"—*Sir F. Currie to Government*, September, 1848

Chapter  
V  
1848

country and reduced the pay and privileges they had been accustomed to fix for themselves at their "own sweet will." Discontented, sullen, and revengeful, they formed a tempting instrument ready to hand for any turbulent and intriguing spirit, desirous of upsetting the present state of affairs and involving the Punjab in general confusion for their own advantage\*.

On this subject Major Edwardes thus wrote to the Resident† —

The people of the Punjab repose contentedly under the protection our courts of justice afford them against the great and our only enemies are the Sikh army whom we spared in 1846

A proof that the discontent was not universal is seen in the fact that the rebellion spread very slowly. Up to October 4th no Sirdar had joined Chuttur Singh, "who was in despair at the refusals he had received from the Sikh officers at Peshawur. It was not until October when Moolraj had been six months in rebellion that the troops at Bunnoo and Peshawur broke into mutiny. The disaffection was throughout mainly confined to the Sikhs who were dreading the extinction of the Khil'sa and a large proportion of the inhabitants especially the Mahomedans' as Lord

---

June 2<sup>nd</sup> 1 the Resident wrote:—The Sirdars are true I believe; the soldiers are all false I know — *Punjab Papers* " p. 220

† August 27th, 1848. *Unpublished Correspondence of Sir F. Currie.*

Dalhousie says in one of his despatches, "took no part in the hostilities, and had no sympathy with the Khâlsa army." Even among the Sikhs, *who form but one-sixth of the population*, there were thirty-four Sirdars, who with their relatives and dependants took no part in the rebellion. Six out of eight members of the Council of Regency remained loyal, and one of these was Bhare Nidhan Singh, called in the official despatches "head of the Sikh religion." Sirdar Khan Singh (whom Vans Agnew was to instal as Dewan in Moolraj's place), and Guldeep Singh, the commandant of the escort, openly defied Moolraj, and were put in irons and most cruelly treated, both died in confinement. Several Sindars and officers of the Durbar did good service throughout the war, on the British side, notably Sheikh Imam-ood-deen and Mîsr Sahib Dyal, who co-operated with Lord Gough's army, the latter being attached to the Commander-in-Chief's headquarters as "chief officer on the part of the Durbar,"\* and the Resident, writing to the Governor-General on the 16th August, assured him that "the conduct of the Durbar, collectively and individually," had been "entirely satisfactory in everything connected with this outbreak, and indeed in all other respects for the last two months."

Chapter  
V.  
1848.

---

\* "*Punjab Papers*," p 444. These Sikh forces are said to have numbered 20,000.—"*Maharajah Duleep Singh and the Government* "



Chapter V  
1849

conciliate to peace " and it then became known that Mr Henry Elliot, the Secretary to the Government of India had been despatched to Lahore where he arrived on the 28th of the month, commissioned by Lord Dalhousie to offer terms to the Council of Regency on the annexation of the country to the British dominions.

### LAST TREATY OF LAHORE

LAHORE *March 29th* 1849

Terms granted to the Maharajah Duleep Singh Bahadour on the part of the Honourable East India Company by Henry Miers Elliot Esq Foreign Secretary to the Government of India and Lieut Colonel Sir Henry Montgomery Lawrence, K C B Resident in virtue of the power vested in them by the Right Honourable James Earl of Dalhousie Knight of the Most Ancient Order of the Thistle one of Her Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Council Governor-General appointed by the Honourable East India Company to direct and control all their affairs in the East Indies and accepted on the part of His Highness the Maharajah by Rajah Tej Singh Rajah Deena Nath Bhacca Nidhan Singh Takeer Noorodeen Gundur Singh, agent of Sirdar Sher Singh Sindunwallah and Sirdar Lal Singh agent and son of Sirdar Uttur Singh Halcowallah members of the Council of Regency invested with full powers and authority on the part of His Highness.

I His Highness the Maharajah Duleep Singh shall resign for himself his heirs and his successors all right title and claim to the sovereignty of the Punjab or to any sovereign power whatever

II. All the property of the State, of whatever description and wheresoever found, shall be confiscated to the Honourable East India Company, in part payment of the debt due by the State of Lahore to the British Government and of the expenses of the war. Chapter V 1849

III. The gem called the Koh-i-noor, which was taken from Shah Sooja-ool-moolk by Maharajah Runjeet Singh, shall be surrendered by the Maharajah of Lahore to the Queen of England.

IV. His Highness Duleep Singh shall receive from the Honourable East India Company, for the support of himself, his relatives, and the servants of the State, a pension of not less than four, and not exceeding five, lakhs of Company's rupees per annum

V His Highness shall be treated with respect and honour. He shall retain the title of Maharajah Duleep Singh Bahadour, and he shall continue to receive during his life such portion of the above-named pension as may be allotted to himself personally, provided he shall remain obedient to the British Government, and shall reside at such place as the Governor-General of India may select.

Granted and accepted at Lahore on the 29th of March, 1849, and ratified by the Right Honourable the Governor-General on the 5th of April, 1849.

(Signed)

DALHOUSIE—MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH

H. M. ELLIOT—RAJAH TEJ SINGH

H. M. LAWRENCE—RAJAH DEENA NATH

BHAAEE NIDHAN SINGH \*

FAKEER NOOROODEEN

GUNDUR SINGH

(Agent to SIRDAR SHERE SINGH, Sindunwallah)

SIRDAR LAL SINGH

(Agent and son of SIRDAR UTTUR SINGH, Kaleewallah)

---

\* Head of the Sikh religion.

Chapter  
'V  
1849

Sir Henry Lawrence had by this time returned to his post at Lahore having hurried out from England in hot haste on receipt of the news of the outbreak at Mooltan. Landing at Bombay in December he lost no time in joining the camp of the besiegers—was present at the capture of the city of Mooltan and on the 9th of January took the news of that event to the Governor General. He then joined Lord Gough's headquarters witnessed the battle of Chillianwallah and proceeded on the 18th to take up his duties at the Residency.

It would be affectation to conceal the fact that Lord Dalhousie's views and Sir Henry Lawrence's did not coincide as regards the policy of annexation, and indeed the Governor General's decision was a sore grief to the generous hearted Resident and a reversal of many cherished hopes and projects. Speaking in vindication of this dearly loved friend of his in after years Login says —

Lawrence acted in the best faith for the interests of both Governments and so far from desiring the annexation of the country on finding that it could not be avoided and that all his efforts to uphold the native Government were unavailing he was only prevented from resigning his high position and returning to his regiment as a Captain of Artillery by the earnest entreaty of his friends. He remained at Lahore with the sole object of exerting his influence to conciliate the chiefs and people of the Punjab to our rule \*



Chapter  
V  
1849

be accomplished without him he should come to the Residency unless he really was seriously ill Upon this he came his looks giving no warrant for his excuses and was accompanied by Dewan Deena Nath

After the first compliments had been exchanged I explained to them the purpose for which I had come that the Punjab would be annexed to the British dominions at all events but that it was for them to decide whether this should be done in an unqualified manner or whether they would subscribe to the conditions which I was about to lay before them

The Rajah, who was more than usually nervous and garrulous, opened out in a strain of invective against Rajah Shere Singh and all the rebellious Sirdars who had brought the Council to this pass acknowledged that the British Government had acquired a perfect right to dispose of the country as it saw fit and recommended that it should declare its will without calling upon the Council to sign any conditions I replied that if they refused to accept the terms which the Governor-General offered the Maharajah and themselves would be entirely at his mercy and I had no authority to say that they would be entitled to receive any allowance whatever

The Dewan who was much more deliberate and reserved than his colleague commented on the severity of the conditions and particularly on the expatriation of the Maharajah and when I told him it was intended to exclude also the female relatives of the Maharajah from the palace in order that the citadel might be exclusively in British occupation he remarked that immediately they were relieved from the restraints which their present residence subjected them to they would begin leading licentious lives and bring scandal upon the memory of Runjeet Singh and his descendants

After many inquiries from them about the distance to which the Maharajah was to be removed I observed that his destination would not improbably be the Deccan, but after they had

requested reconsideration, on account of the remoteness of that country, "where," said they, "God knows whether the people are Hindoos or Mahomedans," I promised that the Maharajah should not be sent anywhere to the east of the Ganges, pointing out Hurdwar, Guhmuktesir, Bithoor, and Allahabad as being all of them places of high sanctity in their religion. They seemed to be thankful for this as a concession. But they had no definite notion of the exact position of any of these places except Hurdwar. The Rajah, indeed, was astonished to discover that Lahore was not so far from Allahabad as from Benares.

They seemed fully satisfied with the personal allowance assigned to the Maharajah, which I told them would be about 10,000 rupees per mensem.

Other subjects were then discussed, and they enquired anxiously about their own future position. I told them that it was not intended to deprive them of their *jagheers* or salaries, and that, for this indulgence they would be expected to yield the British Government the benefit of their advice and assistance whenever they were called upon to do so, that, if they did not subscribe to the conditions, I could not promise that any consideration would be shown to them. The Dewan enquired whether the *jagheers* would be continued to future generations. I replied, certainly not, unless the grants conveyed a perpetual title, and that would be left to the decision of the officers, who would shortly be appointed to investigate the validity of all rent-free tenures.

After much more parley, during which, while I told them that they were at perfect liberty to decline, or to accede to, the conditions I had been instructed to lay before them—at the same time I convinced them of my resolute determination to yield no point, they expressed their willingness to sign the paper, and signed it accordingly, not without evident sorrow and repugnance on the part of the Dewan.

Upon this I requested that Fakeer Nooroodeen and Bhaee Nidhan Singh, the only other members of the Regency resident

Chapter at Lahore might be sent for and upon informing them of what  
 V had passed they said they would abide by whatever their  
 1849 colleagues were prepared to do

They then affixed their seals and signatures to the paper in duplicate and Sir H M Lawrence and myself then added our counter-signatures It was agreed that next morning a Durbar should be held at seven o'clock a.m. in order to promulgate the Articles subscribed to and to obtain the Maharajah's ratification

The members then took their leave after the conference had lasted about two hours

Sir J Login commenting on the above report in 1860 remarks —

' It indicates feelings more creditable to the members of the Lahore Durbar (whose personal interests were separately worked upon) than to the British official, who describes the scene with so much undignified exultation.'

To continue Mr Elliot's report —

Next day at the appointed hour \* after the troops had been prepared against possible tumult I proceeded to the Durbar accompanied by Sir H M Lawrence K.C.B. and the gentlemen of the Residency and escorted by a squadron of the body-guard which Major Mayne had brought over by forced marches from Ferozepore We were met by the Maharajah Duleep Singh outside the gate of the citadel After the usual

---

\* Report by Mr Elliot, March 29th 1849

salutations, and giving and taking of presents, we conducted the Maharajah to a seat at the end of the Hall of Audience, and took our places on either side of him. The Maharajah, who is endued with an intelligence beyond his years, and cannot be supposed to have been ignorant of the purpose for which the Durbar was now convened for the last time, conducted himself throughout with cheerfulness and self-composure.

The hall was filled with spectators, who ranged themselves on each side of the centre seats—the Europeans on the right, the natives on the left. The latter were in such numbers as almost to give cause that, with a view of counting popularity, the Council of Regency might refuse to abide by the terms which they had signed the evening before.

After we were seated, the following note, declaratory of the intentions of the Government to assume the sovereignty of the Punjab, was read out in Persian, and afterwards translated into Hindostani, for the comprehension of every one present —

#### MANIFESTO TO THE LAHORE DURBAR

For many years, while the wisdom of Maharajah Runjeet Singh ruled the people of the Punjab, friendships and unbroken peace prevailed between the British nation and the Sikhs.

The British Government desired to maintain with the heirs of Runjeet Singh the same friendly relations which they had held with him. But the Soudas and Sikh army, forgetful of the policy which the Maharajah's prudence had enjoined, and departing from the friendly example he had set, suddenly crossed the frontier, and, without any provocation, made war upon the British power.

They were met by the British army—four times they were defeated—they were driven back with ignominy across the Sutlej, and pursued to the walls of Lahore.



Chapter  
V  
1849

The Maharajah Duleep Singh tendered there, to the Governor General of India, the submission of himself and his chiefs and implored the clemency of the British Government

The Government of India had acquired by its conquest an absolute right to subvert the Government of the Sikhs, by which it had been so grossly injured. But in that time of victory it showed the sincerity of its declarations and gave signal proof of the moderation and forbearance by which its policy was directed.

The kingdom of the Punjab was spared the Maharajah was replaced on the throne of Runjeet Singh, and treaties of friendship were formed between the States

How have the obligations of these treaties been fulfilled?

The British Government has with scrupulous fidelity observed every promise which was made and has discharged every obligation which the treaties imposed upon it

It gave to the Maharajah the service of its troops. It afforded him the aid of its treasures in his difficulties. It meddled with none of the institutions or customs of the people. By its advice to the Council it improved the condition of the army and it laboured to lessen the burdens and to promote the prosperity of every class of the Maharajah's people. It left nothing undone which it had promised to perform. It engaged in nothing from which it had promised to abstain. But there is not one of the main provisions of those treaties which the Sikh Government and Sikh people have not on their part faithlessly and flagrantly violated. They bound themselves to pay an annual subsidy of twenty two lakhs of rupees. No portion whatever has at any time been paid.

The whole debt due by the State of Lahore has increased to more than fifty lakhs of rupees and crores have been added by the charges of the present war. The control of the British Government which the Sirdars themselves invited and to which they bound themselves to submit has been rejected and resisted by force.

The peace and friendship which were promised by the treaties have been thrown aside British officers in the discharge of their duty have treacherously been thrown into captivity, with women and children.

Chapter  
V.  
1849.

Other British officers, when acting for the Maharajah's interests, were murdered by the Maharajah's servants, after having been deserted by the Maharajah's troops

Yet, for these things, the Government of Lahore neither inflicted punishment on the offender, nor made reparation for the offence It confessed itself unable to control its subjects It formally declared to the British Resident that its troops would not obey its command, and would not act against the chief who had committed this outrage against the Government of India

Not only did the army of the State refuse thus to act, but it everywhere openly rose in arms against the British. The whole people of the Sikhs joined in its hostility The high Sirdars of the State have been its leaders, those of them who signed the treaties of peace were the most conspicuous in its ranks, and the chief by whom it was commanded was a member of the Council of Regency itself They proclaimed their purpose to be the extirpation of the British power, and the destruction of the British people, and they have struggled fiercely to effect it

But the Government of India has put forth the vast resources of its power The Army of the Sikhs has been utterly discomfited, their artillery has been captured, the allies they invited have been driven from the Punjab with shame, the Sikh Sirdars, with their troops, have surrendered, and been disarmed, and the Punjab is occupied by the British troops

The Government of India repeatedly declared that it desired no further conquest, and it gave to the Maharajah, by its acts, a proof of the sincerity of its declarations.

The Government of India has sought and desires no conquest now.

Chapter  
V  
1849

But when unprovoked and costly war has again been wantonly renewed the Government of India is bound by its duty to provide for its own security for the future and to guard effectually the the interests and tranquillity of its own people

Punishment and benefit alike have failed to remove the inveterate hostility of the Sikhs. Wherefore the Governor General as the only effectual mode which now remains of preventing the recurrence of national outrage and the renewal of perpetual wars has resolved upon declaring the British Sovereignty in the Punjab and upon the entire subjection of the Sikh nation whom their own rulers have long been unable to control who are equally insensible to punishment or forbearance and who as past events have now shown will never desist from war so long as they possess the power of an independent kingdom

The Governor General of India unfeignedly regrets that he should feel himself compelled to depose from his throne a descendant of Maharajah Runjeet Singh while he is yet in his early youth

But the Sovereign of every State is responsible for and must be affected by the acts of his people over whom he reigns

As in the former war the Maharajah because of the lawless violence of his subjects whom his Government was unable to control was made to pay the penalty of their offence in the loss of his richest provinces so must he now be involved in all the consequences of their further violence and of the deep national injury they have again committed

When a renewal of formidable war by the army and the great body of Sikhs has forced upon the Government of India the conviction that a continuance of Sikh domination in the Punjab is incompatible with the security of the British territories the Governor General cannot permit that mere compassion for the Prince should deter him from the adoption of such measures against the nation as alone can be effectual for the future

maintenance of peace, and for protecting the interests of the British people.

Chapter  
V.  
1849

Upon the conclusion of this Manifesto, silence was observed for a few minutes, when Dewan Deena Nath observed, that the decision of the British Government was just, and should be obeyed, but he trusted that the Maharajah and servants of the State would receive consideration at the hands of the British Government, and that some allowance would be granted to maintain them in comfort and respectability.

"If France," he observed, "after the defeat and captivity of Buonaparte, had been restored to its legitimate ruler, though the country yielded thirty crores of revenue, it would be no very extraordinary act of British clemency if the Punjab, which yielded less than three crores, should be restored to the Maharajah. However, let the Governor-General's will be done "

I replied, that the time of concession and clemency was gone, that I was ready, on the part of the Governor-General, to confirm the conditions to which the Council had subscribed yesterday, and which should be read out in Persian and Hindostani, for general information.

This was listened to with the deepest attention, but it called forth no observation. To the former signatures were then added those of Gundur Singh, the accredited Agent of Sirdar Sher Singh, Sindunwallah, and Sirdar Lal Singh, Agent and son of Sirdar Uttur Singh, Kaleewallah, thus completing the entire number of the members of the Council of Regency, who have remained nominally faithful to their engagements. The paper was then handed in duplicate by Rajah Tej Singh to the Maharajah, who immediately affixed his signature, by tracing the initials of his name in English letters. The alacrity with which he took the papers when offered to him, was a matter of remark to all, and suggested the idea that, possibly, he had been instructed by his advisers that any show of hesitation might lead to the substitution of terms less favourable than those which had been offered.

Chapter  
V  
1849

When the document had thus been fully ratified, I directed the proclamation to be read aloud in the native languages.

I then handed one copy of the terms to the Maharajah and having thus fulfilled the object of my mission I took my leave with the usual etiquette and dissolved the Durbar

The whole ceremony was conducted with grave decorum No Sirdar was armed. The costly jewels and gaudy robes so conspicuous in the Sikh Court on other public occasions were now thrown aside. I did not observe the slightest sign of wonder sorrow anger or even dissatisfaction upon the countenance of any one present, except that of Dewan Doena Nath and from the nice inquiries he had made during the private conference respecting his own interests it would not be uncharitable to suppose that his sadness arose more from the loss of the immense influence he possesses in every department of the State than from regret at the subversion of his master's dynasty But neither did I observe any signs of gladness The whole announcement appeared to be received with a degree of indifference bordering on apathy and not a word or whisper escaped to betray the real feelings pervading the hearts of that solemn assembly which had met to witness the ratified dissolution of the great empire established by the fraud and violence of Runjeet Singh

As I left the palace I had the proud satisfaction of seeing the British colours hoisted on the citadel under a royal salute from our own artillery at once proclaiming the ascendancy of British rule and sounding the knell of the Khalsa Raj'

That the annexation of the Punjab was a politic measure ' says Sir John Login \* "few were inclined to question but, *inasmuch as it involved the deposition*

of a young Prince whom the British Government had solemnly engaged to protect in his position during his minority, and who had throughout crined the utmost confidence in us, it was, to say the least, a harsh proceeding, and one which demanded from our Government towards the person whom our policy had despoiled, the most liberal and generous consideration

Chapter  
V.  
1849.

“Unfortunately, however, in the Maharajah’s case, there were circumstances which had the effect of placing the position of His Highness in unfavourable contrast to that of his ministers and chiefs, and which, *unless obviated in a liberal spirit*, necessarily led to the conclusion, that, in accepting the terms offered by the British Government, his ministers had consented to *sacrifice his interests to their own*

“Having, so far as respects *their* claims upon *him*, been considered by the British Government, *notwithstanding the full control* exercised by *their* officials over his *person, power, and resources*, to be in the position of a *Sovereign and despotic Prince*, every article of property in the possession of the Maharajah was declared to be State property, and appropriated by the British Government, under the terms which had been granted to him, his Highness being merely permitted to retain, by the courtesy of the Governor-General and the local authorities, such articles as were considered necessary for his personal use

“He was thus made entirely dependent upon the allowance assigned to him, under Article v., by the

Chapter  
Y  
1849

British Government, amounting during his minority to £12 000 per annum another portion of the State pension being granted to his relatives and dependents, at the discretion of the British Government, and a balance retained by them for future appropriation

No stipulation was made for the benefit of his heirs and descendants, the pension granted to him being apparently terminable with his life He was required to remove from the Punjab and from all his early associations, and to reside wherever the Government of India might appoint

To His Highness's ministers Sirdars and chiefs the annexation of the Punjab was attended with more favourable circumstances.

They were relieved from the claims of a Native Government, as feudatories of a despotic Prince liable to contributions for State purposes—secured in all their private property, real and personal under British laws—confirmed in possession of their several *jagheers* some in perpetuity others rent free for their own lives, and with deductions of one half and one quarter in two succeeding generations and they were exempted from much personal service to their Prince

Having seen that in 1846 Golab Singh one of their number was not only made independent of Lahore, but was allowed to purchase the Province of Cashmere\* the chiefs who remained faithful were naturally not

indisposed to enter into terms with a Government which could act so liberally, and relieve them from demands frequently made by their natives princes

Chapter  
V.  
1849.

“To Rajah Tej Singh in particular the arrangement must have been very satisfactory, as it seemed to him and his heirs all his accumulations (amounting in 1846, as shown by his offer for an independent territory like Golab Singh, to not less than twenty-five lakhs of rupees), besides confirming him and his family *for three generations* in large estates, very lightly assessed, it is believed, at two and three lakhs of rupees, and yearly increasing in value

“In the same manner, the other chiefs had more or less cause to be satisfied. Even those who had been in arms against us, though deprived of such property *as could not be concealed*, were doubtless able to secure very large sums among their friends. In the case of Rajah Shere Singh, the writer of this was told, by himself, that such was the case, when he wished to obtain permission to go to England, instead of being sent to Calcutta.

“It was not considered expedient at the time to be too particular, and I think it will be found, on reference to Treasury receipts from forfeited estates, that very little was obtained, compared with the wealth of which, a short time before, the chiefs were known to have been in possession

“This leniency has not been without its good effects, and the security with which Sikh chiefs have been



Chapter  
V  
1849 allowed to enjoy their wealth, without exaction from Government, has no doubt contributed very greatly to reconcile them to our rule

"But it must not be overlooked, that all this liberality was shown at the expense of the claims of their Sovereign Prince, on both feudatories and rebels."

"•Although the young Maharajah could not but feel that the terms which had been imposed on him were hard and severe, especially when the loss of his throne was occasioned by no fault on his part, but *entirely* from the treachery of those whom we had placed in power around him, the difficulties with which he had been surrounded in his precarious position, before he was received under the protection of the British Government were too strongly impressed on his mind to cause any hesitation on his part to retire into private life, and he accordingly submitted to the force of circumstances with very becoming dignity '

•

## CHAPTER VI.

### LAHORE.

*Letters from DR LOGIN to his WIFE.*

CAMP BLI ORF KALLEWALLAH, Nov. 22nd, 1848.

With only the loss of one man killed on our side, we have been able to cut off and disperse a large body of Sikhs who had collected at this place, and were making great depredations. A party of them still hold the fort, and, while I write, are still keeping up a fire upon us, but it is expected, as in other instances, that they will endeavour to escape during the night, and that in the morning we shall find it evacuated. Our guns were ordered down at half-past three in the afternoon, and opened fire within 500 yards with good effect for a couple of hours,\* but as the Brigadier did not wish to expose his men to the danger of an assault, or to throw away ammunition uselessly, we were called back to camp about seven p m, intending to resume proceedings to-morrow.

Many of our young officers had hand-to-hand encounters, and some narrow escapes were made—Westcott Davidson, Sam

---

\* It was a current joke among Login's brother officers, that he equally distinguished himself in *laying the guns* during a fight, as in carrying off the wounded afterwards

Chapter  
VI  
1849

Fisher Swinton Jackson Christie and others of the Cavalry and a young lad Mackell of the Artillery have been among the most successful. I cannot say that I heard with much pleasure the various accounts of how their<sup>1</sup> opponents were skewered (the favourite slang expression) by all accounts about 200 Sikhs were cut up and a very few made prisoners To-morrow I trust I may be successful in getting hold of some at least of the poor wounded wretches if any have been left alive as soon as we get possession of the fort so as to make it possible to prosecute a search for them We came on the Sikhs so as to take them by surprise This could not have happened had the country people generally been friendly to them so as to have given them information You will be amused at the share of loot that has fallen to my lot—a little boy about four deserted by his parents found in a small hut behind the battery where I was stationed! My *doolie* bearers brought him to me and I have told them to take good care of him for me

November 23rd Well it is as we expected a shell of ours set the place on fire the men in the fort made off in all directions the darkness favouring their escape still many were cut up or else severely wounded At daylight I sent to the Brigadier to ask permission to go and pick up all the wounded I could taking all the litters I could collect with me Certainly certainly an excellent proposition! So off I started with a train of litters behind me a supply of water and some brandy We soon found all that were alive in the fort or village Some desperately cut up poor fellows had been brought into hospital where Beatson of the Horse Artillery and I have been working all day doing all we can for them We shall take care of them while we remain here and leave them in charge of some villagers when we march The first man I picked up was an Akali in the ditch of the fort He had almost bled to death and when he saw us evidently only expected his *coup de grâce* He was greatly and no doubt agreeably surprised when I gave him a little brandy and after

wards water, and, raising him carefully, placed him on a litter and dressed his wounds before he was carried off to our hospital tent. Some of our people doubt the wisdom or propriety of treating them in this way, but I tell them that we can only teach the poor ignorant creatures the difference between Christians and Hindoos by showing mercy and kindness to our enemies. I feel sure they will not fight against us with such bitter determination again. I am glad that, from having so few wounded of our own, I am able to look after these poor fellows properly. I must stop, as I must go to amputate the arm of one of the Sikhs we brought in.

I hear that James has passed a good examination, and is returning to Nepal. We have captured a great quantity of grain in the fort, and commissariat supplies of all sorts. The owner of the fort of Kaleewallah is Goordas Singh, a wealthy man, he has evidently a large family of small children, for it was touching to see yesterday, when walking through the place, lots of children's toys, swings, horses and carts, all lying as they had thrown them down, it seems he sent them off at once when he made up his mind to hold the place against us.

A good copy of the Grunt's was found here, and as no one else attaches value to it, I shall take it. I have also, as a relic of the fight, my friend the Akah's "quoits," as sharp as a razor, he had them in his turban when I picked him up in the ditch, also a juggall ball, which passed close by me and lodged in the *doohe*. I believe that I and my bearers were as much exposed as any, the fellows in the fort fired so high that the shots fell among us, but happily no one was hit.

WITH WHEELER'S FORCE AT MOOKEEZAN, JULLUNDUR DOAB.

*December 2nd, 1848*

It is past four p m, and I have only just reached my tent after a long march from Deena-nuggur, yesterday we crossed the Ravee

Chapter and made a long march Delaspoor to Deena nuggur and to-day  
 VI. we have had an equally long and tedious one to this place  
 1849

The Brigadier is anxious to get to Hosharpoor where part of the force will halt for some time.

Since I wrote you last we have taken and destroyed another fort which had been evacuated just before we arrived by the insurgent Sikhs and an hour after when our rear guard came up and when all the Sepoys were busy cooking at their *chulahs* an alarm was given that the Sikhs were upon us

The whole force turned out in double quick time and out we marched for nearly two miles in their direction when we found that it was only the fellows who had been in the fort who had ventured near us in the hopes of picking off some of our camels at graze The Irregulars were sent in pursuit and came up with a party of whom it is reported they killed and wounded twenty having five or six of their own men wounded

A couple of hospital *doolies* had been destroyed by some Sikhs who had hidden themselves in the neighbouring villages when the cavalry went past Dr Wallich lost his surgical instruments in them So we have only my case now to depend on

After we crossed the Ravee Hodson of the Guides followed up the chase and found that they made for some jungle in the direction of Neroli where the party broke up and divided dispersing to their homes leaving their chief with a following of only twenty five horsemen They are nothing better than dacoits John Lawrence is out in the district after some fellow near Noorpoor who has managed to put the Jullundur people in a great fright and it is in consequence of the alarm he has excited that the Brigadier is anxious to get the force quietly to Hosharpoor to set their minds at rest This is only a night's ride from Jullundur and if you recollect I wrote you from here on my way to join the force at Deena nuggur We expect to reach Hosharpoor in two marches and it is not unlikely that we may afterwards return to Jullundur

I endeavour to make myself quite easy anyway, and to believe that all is for the best. I am determined never to be a grumbler, and to try to make grumblers look on the sunny side, if possible.

Chapter  
VI  
1849

We have just heard that Uttur Singh has given himself up, to save Lal Singh, his son, from being hanged, and that all the insurgent chiefs, except Chuttur Singh, have expressed themselves ready to come to terms. The answer sent them is, that we do not treat with *armed* rebels!

Altogether we are in a very curious position in this country. We are supposed, and believed, to represent the Government of the country, and yet the very men who are in arms against us are, or rather were, the instruments who were selected by us, and by whom we ruled!

God grant that we act wisely and justly when putting all resistance down. You would be amused at the Oude article in the *Delhi Gazette*, I wrote it hurriedly, but it seems to have been approved of.

LAHORE, *March 18th*, 1849

I am only in from Jullundur for a few days, to visit Henry Lawrence, and you may be sure he has not allowed me to be idle. He is busy enough himself, and I am doing my best to help him. He is hard at work arranging his new Government in the Punjab. Owing to God's good providence, we now have Mrs George Lawrence back safe, with her little ones, from captivity. I have just been walking with her in the garden for half an hour. George is expected to-day. Moolraj is in jail; Chuttur Singh, Shere Singh, and all the other rebel chiefs, on the way to Lahore. Forty-one guns and 16,000 stand of arms surrendered to Gilbert beyond the Jhelum, and Dost Mahomed and his Afghans are taking themselves off to Cabul as fast as they can. No proclamations out yet regarding our future policy, but no doubt Lord Dalhousie will report all his arrangements to the Court of Directors by this

Chapter  
VI  
1849

mail, so that probably you may know it in England before it is announced here. I am not of course at liberty to tell you *all I know* but Lawrence says that as it will be public in England soon I may tell you this much—that *annexation is determined on* by the Governor General a large local force to be raised Henry is to be Commissioner of the new province with his brother John and another civilian as Revenue Board and Council and the whole country parcelled out into districts as in the Saugur and Nerbuddah territories Had not the chiefs been permitted to come in and submit on a promise of not being deported from the Punjab I think Lawrence would have sent some of them to England under my charge He is still anxious that some of the young lads may go to England but of course now they could not be sent as hostages Another plan he has is to get the Punjab separated from the North West Provinces in all that concerns Post-office arrangements and make me his Postmaster General and see what we can do in this line But he fears that the Governor General will sanction nothing that would be a risk of expense as he dreads the Punjab not turning out a financial success.

The work on which I am engaged at present is an estimate of military expenditure—several Irregular Cavalry corps to be raised at once I tell him that all the doctors who have been employed on active service in the Punjab must be rewarded before he thinks of *me* such as Dempster Macrae and others He says Never fear something will turn up for which *you* alone are specially fitted, which will prevent you running off home I believe this will be the case and if not I shall feel that it is my best course to go home Lady Lawrence not arrived but expected *rid Mooltan* in a few days

March 29th finished 31st

Still at Lahore with Lawrence I have had a busy time helping him but I have laid my *dik* to return to my duties at Jullundur

I told you in my last that Lawrence was anxious to get me something that would keep me here permanently with him. Chapter VI

1849.

I showed both Henry and John the paper I drew up, and of which I sent you a copy, and I believe they have come to the resolution to recommend me very strongly to Government for the charge of the young Maharajah Duleep Singh, when the Punjab is annexed to these territories. George Lawrence has arrived since they came to this determination, and strongly supports them in their decision that I am the fittest man they know for the office, at the same time George is disappointed, for he came full of the resolution to apply for, and get me appointed to civil employ with him at Peshawur, and will not give it up unless I myself would prefer the charge of the young King.

The recommendation is to be made when the disposition of Duleep Singh comes under consideration, in the meantime I shall go back to my military duties at Jullundur. I leave the whole matter to be settled, as I know it will be, by One who is wiser than I. At the same time, I have put all in training to be ready to start for England to rejoin you, and have applied for my leave to Calcutta, preparatory to applying for furlough to England.

If Government decides that I am to be put in charge of the young Maharajah, as the best man for the post, I can easily get my leave cancelled, if not, then I shall joyfully take myself off on my homeward journey.

Had I consulted my own feelings alone, I should at once have determined to go home, but I feel it my duty, as long as my health continues so good, not to neglect, or rather, decline, an opportunity of making your circumstances more comfortable if I can.

I gave John Lawrence, who is a thorough man of business, and even more consulted by Lord Dalhousie than Henry, my paper to read, with the request in writing that he would give me his candid opinion as to whether he thought it likely that I would, at the present conjunction, be selected for employment out of the



Chapter VI.  
1849 strict line of my profession (such as my previous duties may have qualified me for) or whether the probabilities were that my future service would be strictly professional, such as I could always obtain on returning to India from furlough? As my standing in the profession is high, I am told by those whose opinion is worth having and who stand at the top of it such as Randal Martin and others that unless I get a good opening in the political department I should not give up my chances in the medical line

I consulted John first rather than Henry because I knew he was less likely to be influenced by our friendship and intimacy and would be more unbiassed than Henry who had known me so long I afterwards showed it to Henry and the resolution both have come to is what I mentioned above I know that you will agree with me that I have done all that is required of me in the matter I now leave my ' sentence to come forth from His presence and am satisfied that He will dispose of me as seemeth best to Him

I think that the Governor General is not unfavourably disposed towards me if I may judge from letters I received to-day regarding the balance of my Lucknow pay I have received it *in full* instead of part being deducted to pay Dr Glennie whom Colonel Richmond appointed to take over charge from me Colonel Richmond's application for these allowances has been refused on the ground that the appointment was an *improper* one so he has had to pay Glennie out of his own pocket and pocket the snub instead!

I thought my proper course was to state my just claims but express my readiness to submit to whatever decision (after due consideration) the Civil Auditor might arrive at

Goodwyn of the Engineers tells me that Tom has pleased Cautley so much by his work and his zeal on the Ganges Canal that he spoke of him in the highest terms as one of his most promising engineers This is a great comfort to me I now can

John Chapter VI

1848

of the ... and the ...

It is not possible to determine the exact date of the first meeting of the committee. The committee was first mentioned in the records of the House of Representatives on January 1, 1892.

1974-1975, 1976-1977, 1978-1979, 1980-1981, 1982-1983, 1984-1985, 1986-1987, 1988-1989, 1990-1991, 1992-1993, 1994-1995, 1996-1997, 1998-1999, 2000-2001, 2002-2003, 2004-2005, 2006-2007, 2008-2009, 2010-2011, 2012-2013, 2014-2015, 2016-2017, 2018-2019, 2020-2021, 2022-2023, 2024-2025, 2026-2027, 2028-2029, 2030-2031, 2032-2033, 2034-2035, 2036-2037, 2038-2039, 2040-2041, 2042-2043, 2044-2045, 2046-2047, 2048-2049, 2050-2051, 2052-2053, 2054-2055, 2056-2057, 2058-2059, 2060-2061, 2062-2063, 2064-2065, 2066-2067, 2068-2069, 2070-2071, 2072-2073, 2074-2075, 2076-2077, 2078-2079, 2080-2081, 2082-2083, 2084-2085, 2086-2087, 2088-2089, 2090-2091, 2092-2093, 2094-2095, 2096-2097, 2098-2099, 2100-2101, 2102-2103, 2104-2105, 2106-2107, 2108-2109, 2110-2111, 2112-2113, 2114-2115, 2116-2117, 2118-2119, 2120-2121, 2122-2123, 2124-2125, 2126-2127, 2128-2129, 2130-2131, 2132-2133, 2134-2135, 2136-2137, 2138-2139, 2140-2141, 2142-2143, 2144-2145, 2146-2147, 2148-2149, 2150-2151, 2152-2153, 2154-2155, 2156-2157, 2158-2159, 2160-2161, 2162-2163, 2164-2165, 2166-2167, 2168-2169, 2170-2171, 2172-2173, 2174-2175, 2176-2177, 2178-2179, 2180-2181, 2182-2183, 2184-2185, 2186-2187, 2188-2189, 2190-2191, 2192-2193, 2194-2195, 2196-2197, 2198-2199, 2200-2201, 2202-2203, 2204-2205, 2206-2207, 2208-2209, 2210-2211, 2212-2213, 2214-2215, 2216-2217, 2218-2219, 2220-2221, 2222-2223, 2224-2225, 2226-2227, 2228-2229, 2230-2231, 2232-2233, 2234-2235, 2236-2237, 2238-2239, 2240-2241, 2242-2243, 2244-2245, 2246-2247, 2248-2249, 2250-2251, 2252-2253, 2254-2255, 2256-2257, 2258-2259, 2260-2261, 2262-2263, 2264-2265, 2266-2267, 2268-2269, 2270-2271, 2272-2273, 2274-2275, 2276-2277, 2278-2279, 2280-2281, 2282-2283, 2284-2285, 2286-2287, 2288-2289, 2290-2291, 2292-2293, 2294-2295, 2296-2297, 2298-2299, 2300-2301, 2302-2303, 2304-2305, 2306-2307, 2308-2309, 2310-2311, 2312-2313, 2314-2315, 2316-2317, 2318-2319, 2320-2321, 2322-2323, 2324-2325, 2326-2327, 2328-2329, 2330-2331, 2332-2333, 2334-2335, 2336-2337, 2338-2339, 2340-2341, 2342-2343, 2344-2345, 2346-2347, 2348-2349, 2350-2351, 2352-2353, 2354-2355, 2356-2357, 2358-2359, 2360-2361, 2362-2363, 2364-2365, 2366-2367, 2368-2369, 2370-2371, 2372-2373, 2374-2375, 2376-2377, 2378-2379, 2380-2381, 2382-2383, 2384-2385, 2386-2387, 2388-2389, 2390-2391, 2392-2393, 2394-2395, 2396-2397, 2398-2399, 2400-2401, 2402-2403, 2404-2405, 2406-2407, 2408-2409, 2410-2411, 2412-2413, 2414-2415, 2416-2417, 2418-2419, 2420-2421, 2422-2423, 2424-2425, 2426-2427, 2428-2429, 2430-2431, 2432-2433, 2434-2435, 2436-2437, 2438-2439, 2440-2441, 2442-2443, 2444-2445, 2446-2447, 2448-2449, 2450-2451, 2452-2453, 2454-2455, 2456-2457, 2458-2459, 2460-2461, 2462-2463, 2464-2465, 2466-2467, 2468-2469, 2470-2471, 2472-2473, 2474-2475, 2476-2477, 2478-2479, 2480-2481, 2482-2483, 2484-2485, 2486-2487, 2488-2489, 2490-2491, 2492-2493, 2494-2495, 2496-2497, 2498-2499, 2500-2501, 2502-2503, 2504-2505, 2506-2507, 2508-2509, 2510-2511, 2512-2513, 2514-2515, 2516-2517, 2518-2519, 2520-2521, 2522-2523, 2524-2525, 2526-2527, 2528-2529, 2530-2531, 2532-2533, 2534-2535, 2536-2537, 2538-2539, 2540-2541, 2542-2543, 2544-2545, 2546-2547, 2548-2549, 2550-2551, 2552-2553, 2554-2555, 2556-2557, 2558-2559, 2560-2561, 2562-2563, 2564-2565, 2566-2567, 2568-2569, 2570-2571, 2572-2573, 2574-2575, 2576-2577, 2578-2579, 2580-2581, 2582-2583, 2584-2585, 2586-2587, 2588-2589, 2590-2591, 2592-2593, 2594-2595, 2596-2597, 2598-2599, 2600-2601, 2602-2603, 2604-2605, 2606-2607, 2608-2609, 2610-2611, 2612-2613, 2614-2615, 2616-2617, 2618-2619, 2620-2621, 2622-2623, 2624-2625, 2626-2627, 2628-2629, 2630-2631, 2632-2633, 2634-2635, 2636-2637, 2638-2639, 2640-2641, 2642-2643, 2644-2645, 2646-2647, 2648-2649, 2650-2651, 2652-2653, 2654-2655, 2656-2657, 2658-2659, 2660-2661, 2662-2663, 2664-2665, 2666-2667, 2668-2669, 2670-2671, 2672-2673, 2674-2675, 2676-2677, 2678-2679, 2680-2681, 2682-2683, 2684-2685, 2686-2687, 2688-2689, 2690-2691, 2692-2693, 2694-2695, 2696-2697, 2698-2699, 2700-2701, 2702-2703, 2704-2705, 2706-2707, 2708-2709, 2710-2711, 2712-2713, 2714-2715, 2716-2717, 27

[illegible]

Yearly cost of 1 Pump per in the Punjab, 1841-42

RECEIVED Apr 13 1919

Left I drove on Wednesday, and returned here. The day before, Mr Elliot arrived here by the Governor-General to communicate to the late Maharajah the intention of Government. I saw Elliot at the Residency, and had some talk with him. Well, all is over! the Punjab is annexed, and from the Khyber to the Sutlej is now a British province. Strange, is it not, that this has been brought about almost against one's will? The interview I spoke of in my last, with Chuttur Singh, Shere Singh, and the other prisoner chiefs, took place—I saw them with Henry Lawrence, and afterwards alone in private. I have heard all they severally had to say. They all declare that the insurrection was quite unpremeditated, and only gathered strength as it went on, until almost every chief of note in the Punjab had been more or less involved. Rajah Tej Singh and old Noorooddeen were the only two, I believe, whom Shere Singh spoke of, as not having communicated with him at some time or other, and he gave up

Chapter  
VI.  
1849

a letter which he had received from the Ranees which implicates her very decidedly and corroborates two others which had been intercepted *so that you see that if the insurrection had been crushed in the bud—which it might most easily have been as they themselves admit—why then few chiefs would have been compromised or implicated and we could not have annexed the country without great injustice* But what we have looked upon as our reverses and mismanagement have in the end been overruled for good. Such is it always with us even with regard to Peshawur and the districts beyond the Indus Had Dost Mahomed not acted like a fool in the matter they would have been offered to him but as matters have turned out we must ourselves take them

This I do honestly believe that there has been a strong desire on our part to act justly and not to grasp this country from the Sikhs as no doubt our enemies will say but it has been as it were forced upon us I know that Lawrence would give any thing if it could have been averted.

Now I trust we may look forward to a lasting peace with I hope attendant blessings in its train that is if we now do our duty as becomes a Christian nation seeking guidance from God in all we do

Do you remember Herbert of the 18th at Lucknow coming to see Henry L.—and his wife when they were with us\* He is the man who defended Attok so long A gallant fellow he is and has proved himself so and his courage is of the right sort too which is all the more pleasing

When he told me at Lahore of all his feelings and his desire to attribute all his confidence to its right source and his anxiety to acquit himself as became a Christian I was sincerely rejoiced

*April 2nd* The order for my return to Lahore has just come the Governor General having approved of my appointment and I have laid my *dil* and start to-morrow

I do not yet know exactly how I shall be employed. Henry Lawrence intends me to be Governor of the Citadel and all it con

tains, *including* the young King; but it is possible that he may be removed from the Punjab and I may have to accompany him elsewhere, how nice it would be if I were told to take him to England!

Chapter  
VI  
1849

I scarcely know what to think of this appointment may God strengthen me to do my duty whatever it may be I cannot bear to give up the hope of seeing you soon

RESIDENCY, LAHORE, *Easter-day, April 20th, 1849*

The service to-day and Holy Communion were very impressive I wish you had been with us, for it is the first time that Holy Communion has been celebrated here It was even the more impressive from the service being held in the great hall of the Residency, for of course we have no church The Communion Service was of no ordinary character, many of those who partook of it had lately been in great peril It was the first that George Lawence and his wife, Herbert Edwards, and others with him, had been able to attend since they had passed through great dangers, and had been safely delivered from them, and many of those present were about to commence their new labours in this new country, where probably many years must elapse before every part of these new dominions may hear the sound of the Gospel!

I know that many of those present were in earnest in seeking God's blessing on their work

I wrote you that I was installed by Sir Henry Lawrence on the 6th, as Governor of the Citadel and its contents, and he took me to the Palace, and introduced me in the character of his future Governor to the young dethroned King, Duleep Singh The little fellow seemed very well pleased with me, and we got on swimmingly I told him that now you had gone to take my little ones to England, I was left alone, and wanted some one to care for, and be kind to, so that I was all the more

Chapter disposed to take pleasure in the duty which had been assigned  
 VL me by the Governor General and Sir Henry Lawrence  
 1849 and would do all in my power to make him happy  
 He seems a very fine-tempered boy intelligent and handsome  
 He writes and reads Persian very well and showed me his  
 last copy he has also made a little progress in English which  
 I hope to make him like better After conversing with him  
 for some time I went to look at the place intended for my  
 residence—in a very beautiful garden within the Palace, not  
 far from the Maharajah's apartments fine marble *baradurries* \*  
 fountains &c In fact far beyond anything of the kind else-  
 where at Lahore and reminding me somewhat of the Shah Munzil  
 at Lucknow only the buildings being of marble are richer  
 I then took a glance over the different establishments of the  
 little man—enormous they are indeed and in his fallen and  
 altered circumstances will require great reductions which I  
 shall endeavour to manage as well as I can by finding other  
 employment for the people and conciliating them as far as  
 I can by patient inquiry into their cases I have to commence  
 to-day with the establishment of orderlies or *bayas* and go  
 on through the whole recommending reductions in each for the  
 approval of Government.

I trust with God's blessing to manage pretty well for I  
 have had experience to some extent

You will see the names of all those who are to have civil  
 charge in the papers No one can say that Lawrence's selec-  
 tion is not good Men of the stamp of Montgomery Macleod  
 Tucker Thornton to be Commissioners!

I shall be among friends you see good hard working fellows  
 who have their hearts in the right place—it is no little pleasure  
 to be with them I feel much this separation from you but  
 who knows what may come? Sir Henry would only be too glad

to have the little boy go to England, and Lord Dalhousie may Chapter  
ordain it. Lady Lawrence is here, not looking strong She is VI.  
always saying she wishes you were here with me Harry 1849.  
promises to turn out a strong, sturdy boy, a little like Tim in his  
old-fashioned ways Herbert Edwards is here in the house, from  
Mooltan

CITADEL OF LAHORE, *April 10th*

I am very busy drawing out my statements and lists, but I fear it will be many weeks, if not months, before I can complete them I have to make out a list in English for the Governor-General, of all the jewels and valuables belonging to the Sikh Government, and now transferred to ours, among them is the Koh-i-noor.

Besides this, which is pressing on me, I have to pay up and discharge all the old establishments of Runjeet Singh I take care to look after the interests of my young charge, and, as far as I can, see that he has his luxuries and comforts as before, I have also to see that he is not robbed by people about him, who only think of themselves in the universal "burst up" that has taken place!

Poor, dear little fellow! So far, he seems mightily pleased with me, and I do hope we shall continue to like each other, he is very lovable, I think Now that I know what I can keep for him out of the accumulated property, I must take care that his possessions are not diminished by robbery or pilfering What he does not require to take with him I shall have sold for his benefit, and purchase Company's paper for him His studies at present are Persian and English For amusements, he is passionately fond of hawking, and thinks of nothing else He is busy getting up a book on the subject, in Persian, with drawings and paintings of all the various species of hawks, this takes up his whole attention, and renders him indifferent to all else for the time being. The book is to treat of all the most approved ways of

Chapter training and managing hawks. He has painters constantly  
 VI. employed near him at this work which he watches with the  
 1849 deepest interest and himself tries to draw and paint a little. I  
 want you to send me out for him, a nice paint box and materials  
 for his use and a good book of instructions in the art of drawing  
 and painting till I can get him good lessons. Send also some  
 good mechanical toys to amuse him also geographical puzzles or  
 dissected maps plates of animals &c fit for a boy of his age  
 to amuse and interest him.

I hope the likenesses he is having taken for you will be ready to  
 go with this also the sketch of the Palace and its surroundings.  
 Strange the vicissitudes of Indian life! I am now writing in the  
 room which Jowahir Singh (the Ranees brother) always occu-  
 pied and there is a beautiful little garden adjoining the house.

I have no idea yet whether Lord Dalhousie wishes me to go  
 with the Maharajah, if he is sent away from Lahore or whether  
 I am to remain here as Assistant to the Board of Government  
 and to be in charge of all civil pensioners. I have had no time  
 to look at a paper so I know nothing of what is going on around.

Dr Sprenger writes from Lucknow congratulating me on the  
 very laudatory article on my appointment in the editorial of the  
*Delhi Gazette*! I never saw it. Dr Sprenger says that since I  
 left, B has not been over bearing but beyond bearing! Hollings  
 is on his way here. I shall see him shortly. Lucknow  
 is nearly denuded of all our old party. The little Maharajah has  
 just been in with the portrait of himself which I am to send you  
 with his salaam! He says he wrote his name below that you  
 might know it was genuine. If I remain here for good I shall  
 send for Khalifa Ali Bux and some of our old servants. I shall  
 then have the pleasure of talking to them of the Mem Sahib and  
*Jalil*. You would be pleased if you saw how gentle and  
 patient I am with Meah Jan poor lad! He was your favourite  
*khilnatir* though I always thought him rather slow. Indeed  
 I am afraid that he will now believe that my temper must

be that of a turkey cock (or perhaps a gander!), who only flares up before his mate and little ones! I think the Maharajah shows a great desire to hear about England. Sir H. Lawrence wishes he could be educated there, and not left to grow up idle and debauched in India, with nothing to do.

He will surely have as much to live on as any of our nobles, considering what *he* has lost, and *we* have gained! Why, then, should he not be brought up to the life of one? (in the highest sense of the word)—he is young enough to mould

Chapter  
VI.  
1849

#### CITADEL OF LAHORE, *April 29th, 1849*

My occupations continue to multiply. I am now known as the "Killah-ki-Malik"—Lord or Master of Lahore Citadel. I have just been placing some sergeants of Artillery in charge of the magazine under my orders, to write out lists of all the arms of all kinds. Another set I have appointed, in the same way, in Runjeet Singh's camp establishment, including ever so many splendid Cashmere tents, carpets, *purdahs*, &c, while I myself take the jewel department in the Toshkhana, and overlook the whole. The extraordinary way in which jewels of the greatest value are packed away would amuse you. Yesterday, when looking over some splendid diamond rings, with the Treasurer and his man, which were all huddled together in a bag—one of them being a very beautiful likeness of Queen Victoria—I suggested that, until the velvet rolls I had ordered for them were ready, they should tie a label to each with a bit of thread or string, to which they agreed. To my amusement, I find that they had misunderstood me, for they strung them all on a string like so many buttons, dozen by dozen! The first ring I took out of the bag was a diamond valued at 6,000 rupees! and some of them were very valuable.

I cannot yet arrive at a valuation of the jewels (exclusive of



Chapter the Koh i noor) but I don't think it will be far short of a  
 VI. million! and the other valuable property as much more  
 1849

Lawrence seems to think that Lord D—— intends after making over what may be thought proper for the use of the deposed King to send the rest to England. If so I hope under Lawrence's charge at least he should have the option

With my little charge I get on very well. I have had a communication door opened between my room and his apartments. As soon as he heard the announcement made to me that the opening had been made he proposed to go with me to see it and off we went. The opening could only as yet be got through by stooping and then a drop of some feet into my room. I leapt down and he called out to me to catch him and jumped into my arms followed of course punctiliously by his whole retinue! some of them elderly stout courtiers who were quite serious about it looking upon it as all in the way of duty. It was a droll scene! I think that he and I shall be very good friends.

He told me gravely that he won't trust himself among the Sikhs again and declines to go out for a ride or drive unless I accompany him.

There is a rumour current that his mother has escaped from the fort at Chunar. I trust she won't come this way.

I think Duleep a remarkably intelligent boy. he seems to understand thoroughly the characters of all those about him, in a way that an English boy would be incapable of doing. When he brought me the two pictures finished and ready to send to you he was quite proud of the signatures on them one in Persian the other in English. He wishes me to tell you that he did it all himself without any help. I don't think the likenesses are good enough, for he is really a handsome little fellow.

Dryburgh writes me from Nepal that he has been appointed to officiate as first Assistant to the Resident in Cripps's absence and it may probably be permanent.

Strange, is it not? that we two are the *only* medicos in political employment in India just now, except Campbell at Darjeeling.

Chapter  
VI.  
1849.

CITADEL, LAHORE, *May 6th and 8th, 1849.*

I continue very busy, paying off all the Durbar establishments, taking lists of jewels and treasure collected by Runjeet, collecting ordnance stores into the magazine in the citadel from all quarters, looking over the vast camp-equipage of the late rulers of the Punjab. I have at last got some European assistants under me, Cooke of the Horse Artillery, and two Horse Artillery sergeants, and four European writers have been placed at my disposal, besides ever so many *moonshees* (writers), and *mitsuddies* (native), to bother me from morning to night. I have wheeled them into line, as Todd would say, and now I can get along swimmingly.

To-day is Sunday, and I have had the little Maharajah over with me for a couple of hours, he brought his Urdu teacher with him. I have got rid of all other work for the day and enjoy the rest, but I feel I am doing a good work to teach him any good I can. It is an amusement to him to have an English writing lesson with me, so I give him a precept to write out and translate, "Do unto others as you would they should do unto you." I intend, as I cannot put the Bible in his hands yet, to let him have such principles as these to season his studies with, and I hope to see more of him as I get rid of duties that are pressing. He continues to be very frank and confiding with me, and I am getting really fond of him. Hollings and Drake turned up, just as I was engaged superintending the removal of the Koh-i-noor and the State jewels from the old Toshkhana to the place in which all the other treasure is kept, in the Motee Munden, so they were fortunate in having an opportunity of seeing them, before they were shut up for a time.

One of the Maharajah's painters has just made a sketch for me

Chapter VI  
1849 Establishment and the Toshkhana, that he wants me to take the Post-office in hand as Postmaster-General in the Punjab I tell him I must get through some of my pressing work before I undertake anything new I am getting a return from Bowring of all the lame blind, old and infirm in the city so as to give away some of the Maharajah's regular charity to them instead of the indiscriminate almsgiving to professional beggars I wish to show his people whom we consider proper objects of his bounty

I do so long to join you in England that I feel quite indifferent as to whether this is to be a permanent appointment or not. When I feel myself longing for your presence I try to comfort myself by thinking that at all events you are safe from all the discomforts that many other military men's wives are liable to here—take poor Dismal Johnnie as an example! He took his wife with him to Wuzerabad, and was ordered to send her back immediately He writes me in despair and throws himself on my mercy begs me to take charge of her, and give her a room here in the Khab Gha! I have managed a place for her elsewhere

I was much amused yesterday when giving some directions to the Havildar of the Guards at the Toshkhana to find that he belonged to the 56th Native Infantry and had been with Colonel Hope Dick at Lucknow remembered the Mem Sahib and the Mem Sahib-ki Bain who had married the "Residency Doctor Sahib"—and that she was *essah khoopsurut* I could not help wondering if the rogue was poking fun but he was as grave as a judge and apparently had no idea that he was talking to the identical Doctor Sahib for as I said before I am only known here as the *Killah ki Malik*."

Sir H and Lady Lawrence and their dear little boy have started for Simla. I daresay the fate of my little charge will soon be known now The dear little man has just been with me for a couple of hours to-day he seems always so glad to come

that I feel so sorry I have not more time to spare to receive him oftener, but I am so occupied. I have taken care to select some of the best tents for his use, before any are made over for sale, and I have ordered that those that are to be used for his servants and establishment, be at once pitched on the parade ground in front, and have given his people a plan of encampment to which they are always to adhere, and of which they highly approve I send you a sketch of it.

Now when you are told that the tents for the little man himself are all lined, some with rich Cashmere shawls, and some with satin and velvet embroidered with gold, *semanas*, carpets, *pardahs*, and floor-cloths to match, and that the tent-poles are encased in gold and silver (like a *chobedar's* mace), you may fancy that we shall look rather smart! I should say that for camp-equipage, old Runjeet's camp was the very finest and most sumptuous among all the Princes of India. It is very pleasant to look out at the pretty little encampment, and feel that we shall soon start *somewhere*—a report is current that the Mahabuleshwar Hills, near Poona, is to be the boy's destination

I heard from Lamb from Lucknow, he says it is reported on good authority, that Colonel Richmond was jealous of my influence with the natives, and reported to Government that I had influenced them in political matters!

CITADEL, June 10th, 1849

I am at present occupied with the pensions and settlements for the wives, or rather widows, of Runjeet Singh, twenty-two in all—seventeen Hindoo, and five Mahomedan!

At first they made all sorts of difficulties as to their communications with me, sending their *malidas* with their messages, but they soon gave that up, and I am now overpowered with their personal attentions. My great help and factotum in all matters connected with the Ranees is old Amlah Singh, a white-bearded,

Chapter VI  
1849 tough old Sikh who has been with every Sikh Maharajah ever since their commencement

He told me—sitting at my feet the other night—of all that occurred at the death or rather the assassination of Maharajah Sher Singh (Duleep's predecessor) to whom he was actually speaking when he was shot by Ajeet Singh six years ago and also of his being one of the five of Heera Singh's party who escaped when that poor lad was cut up. Don't you remember my reading an account of it to you at the time?

Meah Kheema, the confidential personal attendant of Duleep Singh also occasionally gives me his account of various matters. He says he was the only one left with the boy when his mother sent the troops in pursuit of Rajah Heera Singh and his party.

I wish I had the pen of a ready writer. I might bring out some very interesting facts connected with the history of the Punjab and Afghanistan during the last fifty years.

The principal topic of the day is the commencement of the trial of Moolraj. I have fitted up the Dewan i Aum of the Citadel for the occasion to the admiration and satisfaction of the Commissioners John Lawrence and Mansel. Herbert Edwards and Montgomery have been in expressing their delight at the handsome appearance I have contrived to give the building every thing handsome and no gaudy display. It certainly added dignity to the solemn occasion for which they were assembled.

When I was appointed Governor of the Citadel I found that this included charge of all the State prisoners and thus Moolraj became my ward and it would amuse you if you saw me twice a day walking across the quadrangle of the Citadel to and from the prison to the court with Moolraj in friendly conversation (but with a European guard close by) when I make him over and receive

solemnly avers he never authorized it Nor had he ever Chapter  
 encouraged his people to attack Agnew He expressed great VI  
 regret for what had occurred, but said he was helpless, and so 1849.  
 far I believe the evidence does not implicate him

Colonel Hamilton, of the 34th Native Infantry, a Deputy Commissioner here, is appointed to act for him, and takes up the case *con amore* I do not wonder that Moolhaj is loud in his praise of our justice and love of fair play, when he sees how Hamilton sticks up for him against Bowring, the Government prosecutor

I told John Lawrence that if they expect to get a verdict against Moolhaj, they had made a mistake when they gave him a Scotchman to defend him ' Hamilton comes of a legal family, Mr R Hamilton, the Clerk of Sessions, is his uncle His brother Jock, is a great friend of your brother Charles, they came out as cadets together

Certainly Indian life is full of romance! I never dreamt of having to do with such strange and historic characters as are now accumulated under my charge, for I have *all* the political prisoners now It is very amusing the requests I get from friends and acquaintances - One asks me to get him appointed to carry the Koh-i-noor to England, several to get them appointments in the Punjab under the Lawrences, another asks to get a civil engineer's appointment, but there is no end to the absurd requests Many I have been able to help to get quarters, for they are very difficult to be had I have been able to take Colonel Hamilton and E Prinsep into the Citadel, as they could get no place anywhere My duties are certainly multifarious I was first appointed Governor of the Citadel, and in charge of the Maharajah, then Pension Paymaster to all State pensioners I have to pay off and discharge all public establishments of the former Government, which I did not think necessary to retain, to recommend all persons who were to receive pensions and gratuities; then I received charge of all the magazines, receiving all military stores, guns, arms, &c, collected throughout the whole country,

Chapter VI. 1849 In consequence of the general disarming I was formally made Keeper of the State Toshkhana or Treasury, with the State jewels and the Koh-i noor was placed in my hands. All the artillery work shops throughout the city and the guards at the city gates, were made over to me. the great stud establishments for breeding horses throughout the Punjab also which entailed a great deal of work. But I have forgotten the most troublesome of all, the Ranees the wives and concubines of all the Maharajahs! I am now trying to find houses for them to get them out of the Citadel. So if I have not work enough I am surprised! By the-by I am also Postmaster General of the Punjab at Henry Lawrence's special request he knows I like the work. I should not object when all these various duties are fulfilled to remain Postmaster-General of the Punjab if Cashmere could be added to my beat! I often wish you were here to help me with your suggestions in many things. I would like, above all things, to be able to show you the gorgeous State jewels as I have now arranged them in the fine box I have had made and lined.

You would have laughed to see how they were kept before, by the native treasurers rolled up in bits of rags and stowed away in such queer places.

## TRIAL OF MOOLRAJ

LAHORE *June 17th to 22nd.*

The trial of Moolraj still going on. I don't think the old fellow is anything of the hero they would make him out to be but rather a weak chicken hearted fellow afraid to do what was right and entirely in the hands of some resolute villains around him. I don't think he really intended any harm to dear Pat Vans Agnew but he had not moral courage enough to put the fellows down.

I have not heard yet whether Tom has succeeded in turning the river from its course three-quarters of a mile, as he has undertaken to do! he does not stick at trifles, and I hear he is highly thought of at Roorkee, so I think I may consider him safely launched, and that he will prove himself worth the Company's salt. Well, Moolraj's trial is over, poor wretch! Hamilton made an excellent defence for him, and spoke the sentiments of most people who understand the whole matter from the beginning. Moolraj is, however, found guilty, but from having been the victim of circumstances is most earnestly "recommended to mercy." I had a long talk with him the other day, he spoke highly of the endeavours which had been made to ensure him justice. He said it was this love of justice which had made us so powerful, and would continue to make us more so. Until we came forward, he said, and offered him the assistance of an officer qualified to undertake his defence, no one had dared to speak a word in his favour, but now he was not a little surprised to find that Colonel Hamilton had succeeded in getting four witnesses to speak favourably for him. He told me that from the day of Agnew's death, he had never gone to visit his own family at his own house, though some of them had been to speak to him. I daresay we may soon look for Henry Lawrence and his wife back from the hills. They have both derived benefit from the change, but I fear it will be the old thing again with him—he will overwork himself as before.

CITADEL, LAHORE, *July 12th, 1849*

I wish you were here to enjoy the lovely view from the window of my sitting-room, the little garden in front, with its marble fountain, the vinery, the gallery leading to the Summun Boorj, which would make a splendid conservatory, the marble hall outside, with the fountain in the centre, and its beautiful mosaic



Chapter pavement You may form an idea of its beauties by a remark  
 VI I heard from a lady (who was sketching it) to a friend, It is a  
 1849 place just made to pass the honeymoon in! (This was not  
 intended for my ear!) I have been far too busy to go out much  
 but Lady Lawrence was determined that I should be with them  
 at the only large party she has been able to give in the Residency  
 this season and as I have been unable to return visits or calls, it  
 was a good opportunity to meet everybody at once.

It is very amusing the number of lady visitors I have they all  
 come to call on Mrs Login but they are all eager to see the  
 pretty things I have to show Mrs John Lawrence Miss  
 Willson and Mrs. Napier came yesterday to help me with their  
 advice and assistance as to the arranging of the State jewels in  
 the handsome box I have had prepared for them and they promise  
 to come again till all is finished

How amused you would have been with the odd things that  
 come under my inspection Such a queer conglomeration of odds  
 and ends has never before been seen I do believe!

I found a fine picture of the Queen in a go-down among a heap  
 of other valuables, all covered with dust and among other curiosi-  
 ties I have unearthed from the same place were a lot of valuable  
 drawings of different kinds and fine old engravings and a little  
 wax-cloth bag, containing a copy of Henry Martyn's Persian Testa-  
 ment presented (so the inscription says) by good Lady William  
 Bentinck to Joseph Wolff *How* came it here? The medley of  
 articles in that Toshkhana is indescribable!

I have told the little Maharajah that I am in anxiety to hear  
 from you of your safe arrival as there are reports of several  
 deaths on board your ship on the voyage and it is nice to see  
 how the little man's sympathy has been aroused and how eagerly  
 he asks the first thing if I have heard of you and Edwy

I am overwhelmed with applications by my old writers &c as  
 I know for a nation I have been able to give one in my office  
 to Mr Sequera but I can do no more

There is every prospect of fine crops this year, better than for many years back, this will have more effect in keeping the country quiet than an army of 20,000 men.

Chapter  
VI.  
1849

The immense number thrown out of employment by the breaking up of the Sikh army, and all the Court establishments, was naturally a severe and great anxiety to the Government, and endeavours are being made to turn their attention to agricultural pursuits as far as possible. Almost the first thing done, on our taking possession, was to send out engineers and workmen to open canals for irrigation throughout the Doab, and I did all in my power to urge it on, by keeping the matter constantly before Lawrence and his two coadjutors, so that I believe it was the very first order issued, on assuming full power. In consequence, we are now working hard in the magazine, breaking up old arms as fast as we can, and converting them into *powráhs* and pick-axes, and already I have supplied Napier with many tons of them, for his work on the canals. I had the pleasure of having the first swords brought in, converted into capital scythes for mowing the grass in the soldiers' gardens, which was coming as near "pruning hooks" as circumstances permitted! I am now trying my ingenuity in breaking up cannon shot, without going to the expense of heating them, and I think I shall succeed pretty well, as they are all made of hammered iron, and beautifully finished, the expense of shot made this way must have been enormous. I am setting aside those that may suit our six and nine pounders, for trial during the artillery practice season. I have little doubt that the range of hammered shot, when well made, will be found greater than cast iron.

I have just sent in to the Governor-General a list of jewels, amounting in value to about sixteen and a half lakhs of rupees, and I daresay I shall soon have his orders as to the disposal of them. By-the-bye, I met a Madras officer the other day who knew your two brothers, John and Colin, there. He told me that on his arrival he met an officer, whom, from his extraordinary likeness to

Chapter VI. 1849 John in face figure manners and in every way even to his beard must be a brother of his whom he heard was here. It turned out to be Herbert Edwardes of Mooltan celebrity There must be as I told Edwardes a strong resemblance his nose is certainly big enough for a pair of Campbells!

CITADEL July 21st, 1849

Moolraj is always so pleased to see me when I have time to go in and say a kind word to him I tell him he can see that it is not the wish of our Government to treat him harshly but that the only fear was that by treating him too leniently others might be induced to do as he did, and thus the lives of many of our people may be sacrificed. He seemed perfectly to see the justice of this view of the matter and asked me what I thought would be his punishment I said probably imprisonment for life Oh said he in true Oriental style under *your* care that would be *no* punishment!

I have sent some letters for his son through Mr Edgworth the Commissioner and I supply him with a few books and newspapers to read as well as a Persian Testament which with God's blessing may be useful to him

He begged me to allow his "Said" (Hindoo priest) to visit him which I did at once But the man does not care to repeat his visits often

Moolraj passes almost his whole time in prayer and in writing out couplets to invoke the Deity and propitiate Him in the way he has been taught. As his mind is so disposed that he only thinks of religion he is anxious I should get him another copy of the Testament in a character he can read more easily than the one I gave him which is the Arabic character I hope to be able to do so He is for a native of these parts a well-educated man I enclose as a curiosity for you a paper he wrote and sent to me

yesterday, covered over with the word "*Ram-Ram-Ram*" which serves as a prayer. His own signature is on the back.

Chapter  
VI  
1849.

As soon as the Governor-General's decision on the fate of Moolraj was made known to the Board, Mansel wrote to Login as follows :—

ANARKULLAH, *July 21st, 1849*

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I have just heard by to-day's post from the Governor-General, that he has remitted the capital sentence on Moolraj, but that his punishment will be severe

Will you kindly see him (Moolraj), and communicate to him privately, that this is the word of the Governor-General "That he will not be executed "

I have received no authority to make it public, but if Moolraj is informed of it, he may be expected to tell his friends and visitors, and so the matter is no longer a secret I have not seen you for an age. Come to dinner at eight to-morrow, and bring Wakefield. If he can't come, not being quite recovered, mind you come

Yours,

C G. MANSEL.

## CHAPTER VII

### LAHORE.

#### LOGIN to his WIFE

CITADEL LAHORE Sept 3rd 1849

Chapter VII 1849 I am rather anxious about Sir Henry's state of health he is far from well and I fear will have to go to the Cape to recruit for he cannot afford to go home By scraping all together he cannot make more than £700 to live on for himself wife and children and he would feel miserable at having nothing to give away to others

I cannot but feel gratified at the entire confidence reposed in me by the Board of Administration (Henry and John Lawrence and Mansel) Almost the only instructions I get from them, when I appeal to them are Just do what you think right and proper and we will support you

Now when you consider how much must be left to my discretion in an appointment of this kind where I am put in charge of property of all kinds of which neither the Government (nor indeed any one else) can have any idea of the value nor any check to enable them to judge of the amount and it is so entirely left to me to make over this or that to the Maharajah as being in my opinion necessary for his use—I think I may take it for granted that I stand high in their opinion for conscientiousness integrity and honesty even

Lord Dalhousie, in acknowledging the receipt of the list of jewels, to the amount of sixteen and a half lakhs, which I sent in, thinks it necessary to express his sense of the way in which I have proved myself worthy of the Lawrences' high recommendation. He expresses himself also highly pleased with the careful manner in which the lists have been prepared. I feel that this is greatly owing to Jowahir Misr's assistance, so I do not plume myself on this or any other flattering remarks. God knows, I shall be right glad when I can get all the property safely made over, without loss or detriment to Government. I only fear that I will find myself a poorer man by having this charge laid on me, if, as I foresee, the accounts may not balance exactly, from the innumerable detailed payments that have been made, I shall of course be answerable.

I feel the disadvantage often, of not having been trained to the regular work, as civilians are, when cases are brought up to me to decide and judge, but on the whole, I think I get on very well, and decide the cases impartially.

Login was very anxious to make his birthday as pleasant as possible to the little dethroned King, so he proposed to the Lawrences, in the following letter, that a sort of *fête* should be given on the occasion —

MY DEAR LAWRENCE,

The little Maharajah's birthday is to take place on Tuesday or Wednesday (the Pundits have not yet decided which, as it all depends on his *star*), but I will let you know. Don't you think it would be proper to make up a party from the Residency to offer him then good wishes?

I can have the Summun put in order, to make it look well, and if Lady L and Mrs John will give me help with *khidmatgars*, you can all have tea in my garden afterwards. We shall not be

Chapter VII 1849 able to have a very large party and I should like to see as many children as possible on the little fellow's account. All the Ranees are as usual to pay their respects and present their *nuzzurs* on that day. We can arrange matters easily if the European party comes early so as not to interfere with them. I think we should fix sunrise as the time.

A little civility and attention shown on this his first birthday since he lost his throne would be kindly taken. It need not be in the least *official* merely friendly but as the natives will all dress in their best to do him honour I think our party should not sport *solah* hats and shooting jackets on this occasion!

Don't you agree with me? Tell me what you think of my proposal as soon as you can that I may make arrangements.

Yours very truly

J S L.

August 31st CITADEL, 1849

On the back of this letter, in Indian fashion is scribbled this characteristic reply —

MY DEAR LOGIN

We are agreeable to all you propose (my brother John included). Let's know the day fixed.

Yours always

H. LAWRENCE

The following letter to his wife written the day after the *fête* describes the proceedings —

CITADEL, Sep 6th 1849

Yesterday was the birthday of the little Maharajah. He is now eleven and entering his twelfth year.

Everything was done that was in my power, to give the anniversary due honour, so that he should feel the difference in his position as little as possible, and not contrast unpleasantly with the last, when he was a reigning King. No doubt, in spite of all, he did see and feel a great difference, poor little man ! but nevertheless he thoroughly enjoyed himself, and was as delighted with the fireworks as any boy of his age could be. Luckily the evening was fine, though the deluge of rain in the morning was dreadful, and upset all my grand arrangements.

I had the great pleasure of presenting to the Maharajah, on the morning of his birthday, a lakh of rupees' worth of his own jewels from the Toshkhana which I had been empowered by Government to select and present to him.

He appeared, therefore, dressed most splendidly, wearing, besides other jewels, the diamond aigrette and star I had selected. When I congratulated him on his appearance, he innocently remarked, that on his *last birthday* he had worn the Koh-i-noor on his arm !

The rain was so heavy, that to prevent the poor Ranees getting drenched in their finery, I ordered the wall of the Palace to be broken through, to admit them direct from their apartments, instead of going round in the rain to the ordinary entrance. They all came early, very smartly got up, to present their *nuzzurs* to their little Sovereign, and to see and speak to him a while, when offering their congratulations. I had *purdahs* put up to screen the Mahomedan ladies from observation, but the Sikh Ranees are not so particular, and were quite ready to chat with me. The little fellow gave himself up to enjoyment for the rest of the day, like a boy as he is.

I shall be truly glad when it is settled what is to be the future destination of Duleep Singh. Sir Henry and Mansel both advise his being sent to England at once, but Lord D is not fond of suggestions, so we all wait for his decision. Sir Henry says that the Dhoon, with a large estate or Jagheer, might not be a bad thing.



Chapter  
VII.  
1849

Either of these plans would suit me but if it is decided to send him to some place in Central India and to bring him up with no other expectation than to be a mere pensioner debauched and worthless like so many others then I feel it is no work for me and I'll wash my hands of the charge take my furlough and join you in England but all this is in wiser hands than mine and I leave it there contentedly

*October 4th 1849*

#### THE SAME to THE SAME

No particular news, except that Chuttur Singh Shero Singh, and eight other chief Sirdars, have been added to my collection of curiosities in the Citadel. They have been suspected on pretty good evidence of holding communication with several disaffected chiefs who are still in hiding and of having in this way broken through the agreement made with them when they were allowed to return to their homes. Some of them are I daresay guilty but against others there is little evidence. However their arrest will be useful in putting down little intrigues which were going on and which have required us to be on the alert.

Shero Singh wishes to be thought (as indeed he is) a devil may care sort of fellow and makes himself quite at home anywhere.

His first request was for a pack of cards and something good to eat and drink.

Old Chuttur Singh I feel most for. I shall make them as comfortable as I can. they affect to look upon it as a piece of rare good fortune to be sent to me. You see what a good name I have got for all sorts of virtues! Knowing me as you do only think how people can be humbugged! I ought to be vain if flattery could make me so for I don't think anybody has had so much butter administered as I have lately. Henry Lawrence gave me a letter he had received from Macleod as he said he would be pleased to know what such a man said of your husband

It now lies before me, so I shall enclose it I trust the effect on me will be to make me more humble, and strive to be what such a man as Donald Macleod believes me to be already \*

Chapter  
VII.  
1849.

CITADEL, Oct 24th, 1849

There is a report going about since last mail that, much to the honour of "our dear little Queen," she has declined to accept the Koh-i-noor as a gift, under the circumstances in which it has been offered her, indeed, I shall rejoice to hear that this is true, and I am sure that many of her subjects will rejoice with me

I think I told you that I had urged Henry Lawrence to propose to Lord Dalhousie that the Queen's subjects all over the Empire should be allowed to embrace the opportunity of showing their love and goodwill, by offering it to her I feel certain that it would be easy to raise a sufficient sum to purchase it,† and it would have more value in her eyes, given her in this way by her people, as a token of their respect and honour, the money to be spent for the good and benefit of her new subjects here, by making the Punjab to bloom like a garden This may easily be done, by giving employment to the 100,000 men who have been cast adrift, making roads, bridges, and canals, and establishing schools among them, and thus showing that we are above taking anything from them in a shabby way

This would be one way of converting the possession of the Koh-i-noor into a blessing instead of a curse, which the natives say it

---

\* Extract of a letter from Mr —afterwards Sir Donald—Macleod to Sir Henry Lawrence —

DEAR LAWRENCE,

It is truly a happy thing that the young Maharajah has been entrusted to one who will so favourably impress him in respect to the uprightness, benevolence, and intellectual superiority of the European race

D MACLEOD

† "Of course, it would be absurd to fix a price that would be near its intrinsic value, but I think £200,000 would meet the purpose"—J S L

Chapter VII.  
1849

has been. But there! I've no doubt you will say that as usual, my romance is running away with me

LAHORE Nov 6th, 1849

My work is increased just now by the seizure of Shere Singh's papers and those of others and the inquiries and examinations of witnesses necessary to be made in consequence which may yet lead to important results

I was present at a very interesting conversation the other day, between Chuttur Singh and Shere Singh with John Lawrence and Herbert Edwardes \*

---

\* In the autumn of 1849 in attendance on Mr John Lawrence who was conducting a political investigation, I had one or two very interesting interviews with the Rajah in confinement and in the presence of Mr Lawrence and Dr Login, the Superintendent of the Palace I took the opportunity of asking the Rajah his reasons for going over to the enemy He replied, throwing up his hands, My evil destiny! It all took place in one night. My mind was distressed by the Sikh force being ordered away from Mooltan. More pressing letters than ever came in the very next day from my father imploring me to join the movement and *I wrote off to Moolraj for the first time, to say that I would march to him next morning*

This is the Rajah's account of his own defection Now let us have Moolraj's. Moolraj's religious adviser and private secretary (his Jesuit in short) was one Mir Kool Juss, a high caste Brahmin. This man's trial succeeded his master's, and was conducted by me. Amongst other questions, I asked him how long Rajah Shere Singh had been in correspondence with Moolraj before going over. He replied That the Rajah never wrote but one letter to the Dewan all the time he was at Mooltan and that was *the night before he came over*. We were astonished; for though we knew all the Rajah's soldiers were our friends, we believed the Rajah himself was our enemy. He had previously rejected all overtures, punished all traitors in his camp and fired upon our troops. When therefore all at once he proposed to join us, we suspected treachery and would not admit him within the walls, but made him encamp under the guns of the fort and up to the very day when he marched away again to join his father in Hazarah, the Dewan and the Rajah never came to a good understanding.

The power of evil now cannot go further than this; and impartial history is, in my opinion bound to record the verdict; that Rajah Shere Singh Atarwallah was guilty of the rebellion of Mooltan and the second Sikh war; and what he could do to stop them both but failed. He died with his family and nation.

For ever we part, I pity him for going away at all, as much I regret his father for leading him astray — From Sir Herbert Edwardes. *Year to the Point* vol. II. pp. 203-7

I had to take notes of all that was said, and shall have to give evidence on the subject when the Governor-General arrives. It may possibly result in our settling accounts afresh with our Cashmere friend, Golâb Singh

Chapter  
VII  
1849.

I shall not be surprised, if certain things are proved against him, to see him ordered to countermarch a little, and take up his position beyond the Indus, giving him Peshawur and Derajat in exchange for Cashmere. He is the sort of man to hold such a country, and save us a vast deal of trouble.

Dr McCosh is anxious to take daguerreotypes here, and begs to be allowed to come to-morrow to take likenesses of all the notabilities collected here, myself included among the number, he says! I have told him he cannot take any of the prisoners.

You would laugh if you saw me in the midst of my work trying to snatch a moment to write this. I have *moonshees* on one side, reading *purwanas* and *roobookarees* for my edification, old pensioners in front receiving their pay, on the other side, Mir Makraj, the Treasurer, asking for and receiving my orders. We are all seated in the verandah of the Toshkhana. I must stop now, for I am told John Lawience is in sight, bearing down upon me with papers in his hand. Something wanted to be done, no doubt.

LETTER from ROBERT ADAMS.

CITADEL, LAHORE, Nov 2nd, 1849

MY DEAR COUSIN,

Login will have told you that, through his kind offices with Sir H. Lawience, I am here on my way to join the Guide Corps at Peshawur, as second in command. I scarcely regret that I have been detained here by illness a few days, as it has given me an opportunity of seeing all the multifarious wonders, animal and mineral, over which your worthy husband keeps guard within

Chapter the Citadel and of telling you before I leave this how well  
 VII. his really *responsible* duties have agreed with him.  
 1849

I must try and give you some idea of his daily work and of all he has to look after but as I shall start by *dák* in an hour I have little time to do it To give human nature precedence there is first the little Maharajah the care of whose small person is his specific appointment The little bit of Royalty himself gives little trouble and he seems much attached to Login looks on him as his *Ma Bap* and won't even go out to ride in the morning or drive in the evening unless he will go with him. But the establishments of the King vast and entangled as they were must have cost him no little trouble the cutting them down to due dimensions the task of striking out the names of those who were entitled to no consideration fixing the amount of the just claims of others settling the pensions of all whose services deserved to be recognized and retaining those whose services were required with the preparation of lists reports and descriptive rolls must have been very harassing But the Rances! How would you have felt if you had known that he was busily employed inspecting some hundred of queens and their female attendants examining and noting down all the warts moles and freckles on their dingy countenances and fingers? Coaxing the dark beauties to unveil their faces to his prying gaze that he might the better write down their portraits and fix the rates of their future allowances What fascinations they must have employed to induce him to take a liberal view of their wants, and make the paltry twenty five a clear half hundred!

looked on order as a crowd beating with little energy. Certainly his was not the bold pluck to enter on a contest with the armies of British India, nor was by the enduring fortitude that held Moolraj steady as long as he could only have been the tool in the hands of his overmen.

One cannot help being pained, when looking at him, that however just the sentence of death is on Moolraj as Diwan of Mooltan, he personally is guiltless of the blood of Agnew and Anderson.

Logan manages to make time to visit him daily, and chats with him, and it is only by his kind copying that he can be induced to take enough to keep body and soul together. Poor wretch! one cannot help feeling pity for him, and I am glad he has fallen into such kind hands.

Chuttur Singh, Shere Singh, and ten others of less note, are in Logan's custody at present, making thirteen State prisoners.

Logan is now hard at work with his staff of assistants, in getting the Toshkhana of kingly valuables into order against the coming of the Governor-General, which is expected about the 20th.

I wish you could walk through that same Toshkhana and see its wonders! the vast quantities of gold and silver, the jewels not to be valued, so many and so rich! the Koh-i-noor, far beyond what I had imagined, and, perhaps above all, the immense collection of magnificent Cashmere shawls, rooms full of them, laid out on shelves, and heaped up in bales—it is not to be described! And all this made over to *him*, without any list, or public document of any sort, all put in his hands to set in order, value, sell, &c., that speaks volumes, does it not, for the character he bears with those whose good opinions are worth having? Few men, I fancy, would have been so implicitly trusted.

He will come out of it all none the richer, but probably poorer, for his pay is not quite so much as he had at Lucknow. I hear he is constantly bothered by people coming to beg he will show them the jewels, &c., and he is too kind-hearted to refuse,

Chapter but now he says he must fix one day in the week to let them  
VII be exhibited and thus secure peace on other days My dat is  
1849 ready I must stop \*

Your affectionate cousin

ROBERT R. ADAMS

P S —The enclosed rough memorandum will amuse you.†

The writer of this letter after having served in the Guides (as second in command) was made an Assistant-Commissioner by John Lawrence and afterwards Deputy-Commissioner in Hazara. He was assassinated at Peshawur in 1861 when Deputy-Commissioner of that city being cut down by a fanath. He was riding near the Caball Gate

† Memorandum of Memorabilia, under charge of

JOHN SPENCER LOGIN

in the Citadel of Lahore

April 6th 1849

The young RULERS of the Sikhs

The FAMILIAR of Runjeet Singh and of all the successive Maharajahs of the Punjab including thirty three Ranges and 130 concubines.

The PRINCES of the Ahlalee family rulers of Afghanistan and Cashmere

The COURT ESTABLISHMENT of all the Lahore Maharajahs, including six sets of courtiers natives of Cashmere and five full bands of musicians.

The HAWAS of Multan and their families.

#### *State Prisoners*

Moolraj ex Nizam of Multan.

Lajah Chatterjee Esq.

Rajah Sher Singh.

Rajah Lal Singh.

and ten other men of note including Hakim Nizam and his two sons.

The former attendants of Ranee Jibla from Chunar were allotted this lot.

The horses and royal arms of the Maharajahs and of Goolab Singh (royal treasures)

The Diamond Jewels

The State Jewels and treasures in gold, silver and precious stones; diamonds, pearls, rubies, emeralds, and garnets (gold and silver)

The various sets of Cashmere shawls, shaggy &c.

## LOGIN to his WIFE.

Chapter  
VII  
1849

CITADEL, Nov 22nd, 1849

. . Still busy, I shall be glad when I can give a "good account of my stewardship" Not that I have any wish whatever that by doing my work well here I may get something higher, but merely to satisfy my own conscience that I have done my duty

I have sent in my pension lists, and was not a little gratified at what Burn told me The Board sent them up to Government with high commendations, and drew attention to the fact (which I did not particularly notice), that by exercising a sound discretion, and paying off the establishments *promptly*, with and without gratuities, I had saved a large sum to Government Mr P. Melvill, the new Secretary (who is much in Lord Dalhousie's confidence), told me that I am much too useful to part with just now, and that I am far more likely to be kept at Lahore by Lord Dalhousie, than to be sent away with the little boy I only tell *you* this because you will be pleased to hear that I give satisfac-

Runjeet's golden chain of State, his silver summer-house, gold and silver poled, tents and camp equipage of rich Cashmere, arms and armour, very magnificent.

Shah Sooja's State pavilion, gorgeously embroidered

Relics of the Prophet his shoes, walking-stick, shirt, cap, and pyjamas, his book of prayers in the Kufic character, several locks of his hair

The Kulgee "plume" of the last Gûrû (Govind)

The sword of the Persian hero Roostum, taken from Shah Sooja by Runjeet Singh

The sword of Wuzzei Fathie Khan, founder of the Baruksye family at Cabul and Candahar

The sword of Holkar (an old Spanish blade)

The armour worn by the warriors and Sirdars of note, many of them stained with their blood.

The wedding garment of Maha Singh,

besides these, many valuable curiosities and relics of all kinds, too numerous to note.



Chapter VII. I have no desire for distinction. I am much more anxious  
 849 to be content with such things as I have."

I am now in my fortieth year and have seen probably the largest half of my pilgrimage and while full of health and energy would like to devote what remains of it to higher duties than this world's ambition but God knows what is in store for me and will make all work together for my good if I only seek Him earnestly

I saw Lady Lawrence yesterday she looks better than she has done for years I shall not feel at all surprised if Henry makes up his mind to go home and settle down on his £700 a year and bring up his boys He is harassed and worried a good deal and can't take disappointments easily

If he does go what do you say to my following his example and living in his neighbourhood? Lady I and you get on quite as well as Sir Henry and I We often talk over this idea when he gets depressed over his work

Lady I. seems much pleased with the composition of the civil staff in the Punjab and hopes great things from them I still expect to see Tucker here and then with Montgomery Donald Macleod and Idgworth we shall be excellently well set up with Commissioners whom it would be a real pleasure to work with

This is certainly a noble country in climate and productions far beyond any other part of our dominions in Hindostan The hot weather is certainly trying but the cold weather more than makes up for it and it is delightful to see the rosy cheeks of the children now

I have a large party of officials coming to inspect arrangements and must break off My ideas on the subject of a treaty are as strong as ever and I shall not be easily tempted to give them up it appears to me to be a duty I owe to my children It all resolves itself into contentment with them as we presently are

I have promised the Maharajah to take him to see the races to-day

We have just returned, and I confess that in spite of my telling your brother Charles I hoped he would lose the race — to make him give up racing — as soon as I saw his and your clan tartan (Campbell) on his jockey, I could not help wishing it success. Dabon Singh was much excited about Charles's horses, and was delighted when he won a good race. The General (Gilbert) rode his own horse and won his own cup, and was vastly pleased about it, he came up to the carriage after the race and had a long talk with me. I try to make the Maharajah understand the difference between enjoying a race for the sport's sake, and enjoying it for the purpose of betting and gambling, but as he has few amusements now, I don't like to refuse him a little pleasure, and he is delighted to come. I am very anxious to get in my lists, and statements, and accounts of public property before the Governor-General arrives, and thus grudge every moment that is not given to my work. I think what I have done will show him that I am not idle, and that he has got an industrious and honest man here in charge, and one whom as a public servant he must respect.

The fellows under me work very hard, seeing that I do not spare myself. I have now got orders as to where all the State prisoners are to be sent, and who are to be let off, and I am making private arrangements to carry this out, and enquiring among their families as to whom they would like best to have with them. Poor wretches! they are to be pitied after all. I rather think if I had been a Sikh I should have been out in the '48! But still we must take care of ourselves, and not let them loose at present.

Sir Charles Napier is coming next week, and I shall have little peace while he and the Governor-General remain, as I shall have to show them all the lions of the Punjab, and answer such heaps of questions. The pat of butter from Lord D, which I told you of, has been as satisfactory to the Lawrences as it has been to me.

It is amusing, going the rounds of the guards, as sometimes I

Chapter  
VII  
1849

do to hear the different titles they give me, the favourite one is Killah Ki Malik Bahadoor. The little Maharajah has been to play in my garden. he is really a fine boy, and I know you would like him much.

I am having his place of residence put in thorough order before the Governor General sees it, and I think when he does see the home the boy has had, he could never have it in his heart to send him to a shabby one.

I am told it is not unlikely that the old Begum Sumroo's palace near Meerut (Sirdanah) may be fixed upon.

I am writing this at four a.m. I cannot for the life of me sleep more than five hours, but these I do well and I am in perfect health.

I have just had another addition to my responsibilities, in the shape of sixteen women the Raneo Jinda's attendants whom she left behind when she escaped from Chunar. I must try and distribute them among the other Khaneem. They are mostly hill women, and much better looking than the others here.

Sir C Napier writes me to show him the litters *first*, before anything else so I must get them ready.

In the little garden in front of the marble hall on a handsome marble platform I have erected a silver summer house 16 feet square made some years ago for Ranjeet Singh in Cashmere. It is really beautiful work, and it will look perfectly lovely and unique the more so from the excellent site and background I have chosen for it. Standing in the marble hall the effect is enchanting with its background of orange trees in full bearing the dark green foliage and the sparkling fountains.

I intend to have a party of children down on Saturday to have a little play with the Maharajah and to eat fruit in it. By showing it off in this way I have some hope that the Governor-General will make it over to the young Maharajah or if he will not consent to this at least allow him to make a present of it to the young Prince of Wales along with some

of his handsome Sikh armour and dresses, there being some of a splendid description made for himself, and only suitable for a young boy I do not know how the Governor-General may take the suggestion, so I shall say nothing until I see Elliot on the subject

Octavius Anson is still with me I like him very much A fine, gentlemanly, right-minded man I am glad of the opportunity of knowing him, as well as you did his poor young wife He seems to like me also At this moment he is writing to his cousin, Lady Rosebery, to ask her to invite you out to Dalmeny, near Edinburgh, for change of air after your illness He says he is sure you would like her, that she is a very pleasant creature

At the races this morning the little Maharajah was quite excited. Some wag had entered a horse under the name of "Dr. Login," which caused much amusement! I could not wait till the race was ended, as I had an appointment, but the boy was delighted that he was a winner of some small stakes

Herbert Edwardes announces the approach of the Governor-General

RESIDENCY, LAHORE, Nov 27th, 1849

MY DEAR LOGIN,

Will you render Fagan any assistance in your power to water the roads on which the Governor-General will enter to-morrow? You might spare a party of men for the purpose He is expected at eight a.m. John Lawrence and the Sirdars go out about seven a.m. to meet him, and your company is requested, but, of course, *not* your ward's Please join us on the Parade

Yours sincerely,

HERBERT EDWARDES.

Chapter  
VII  
1849

The following letter from Login to his wife was written under sadder auspices he having just received the news of the death of his brother James —

LAHORE Nov 28th 1849

You will be little prepared for the sad intelligence I have to send you of the sudden death of my poor dear brother James it occurred at Dinapore on the 13th from *cholera* after twelve hours illness He had come down from Khatinandoo in high health to pass his examination at Calcutta and was suddenly struck down on his way back, at Dinapore For the last two days I have not had a moment's leisure preparing for the coming of the Governor General who arrived this morning If under the circumstances I could derive much pleasure from any worldly praise I have had sufficient to satisfy me

I was introduced by John Lawrence to Lord Dalhousie with much warmth of commendation His lordship said that he had heard on all sides how much satisfaction I had given in discharging my duties which were of no ordinary delicacy and that I had acquitted myself well He said he wished to have a long conversation with me and appointed twelve to day

I have just returned from him (two p m) He told me that after much consideration it had been determined to remove the little Maharajah to Futteghur and that he wished much that I should continue in charge of him there on my present allowances and do all that I could to make him comfortable and happy

He said it had been quite a *relief* to the Government and to him to have me in charge of the Maharajah and that the way I had done my duty towards the Maharajah and the Government was in every way satisfactory to both He was really very kind and cordial indeed telling me that he did not wish to restrict me to Futteghur but that I might take him to Agra or Delhi or any of the neighbouring places whenever I liked and eventually

to *England* in course of a year or two I then had an opportunity of giving him my-ideas regarding the advantages of sending some young Sikh nobles to England, and showing them something of our power and resources. And then what came next? Poor Dryburgh was to have been appointed this day to the charge of the Nepalese Mission to England! I told Lord Dalhousie what had occurred, and he was much shocked, and sympathized with me most cordially

Chapter  
VII.  
1849.

P S —Lord Dalhousie also approves of an estate for the Maharajah after a few years

CITADEL, LAHORE, Dec 7th, 1849.

After Lord Dalhousie had inspected all my work in the Citadel, and had witnessed how happy the young Maharajah was with me, he said that he did not *compliment* me, but congratulated me, most heartily, on the success with which I had performed a most delicate and difficult duty, and that I had effected far more than could have been expected from *any one* He then thanked me, and shook hands with me warmly

That very night, however, as if to show me the emptiness of human praise, and perhaps to bring down any little pride I may have felt in showing all my work to the Governor-General, at midnight my Toshkhana was robbed, and property to the amount of 20,000 rupees carried off (this out of some thirteen or fourteen lakhs was not very much), but in what way was greater loss prevented? Why, by the providential circumstance of the place catching fire accidentally, by the light brought in by the thieves! Had this not occurred and caused the discovery, I should have been ruined! Immediately on the fire being discovered I was called, broke open the door and got the fire out, which had done little damage, and found that a breach had been made in the wall, by which the thieves had entered This, with sentries all around, was rather

Chapt  
VII  
1849

I had not *then* recovered any of the missing articles but felt assured in my own mind that I should have them before long

He approved highly of all the steps I had taken and of the reward offered I dined with Lord Dalhousie that evening and attended Lady Dalhousie's reception afterwards At the conclusion Lord Dalhousie took me into his private tent for an hour to talk over matters He told me that if he mentioned the affair of the robbery to the Court of Directors it would only be with the intention of showing them the debt of gratitude owing to me for my wonderful arrangements which had prevented any greater loss than this which was a mere trifle to what it might have been I asked him to bestow some mark of his approval on my great helper and assistant Mistr Makraj the old State Treasurer as being in my belief an *honest man* He has made him a noble of the land and I feel more pleased than if I had got honours myself!

Sir Charles Napier has been very kind indeed and claimed me as an old acquaintance His daughter Mrs McMurdo has been sketching up at my quarters several times with Mrs Colin McKenzie She managed to take a sketch of the young boy surreptitiously

I have been with Lord Dalhousie again all this morning taking his instructions regarding the boy to whom he has taken a great fancy and I am now expecting him here at the Toshkhana as he is coming up quietly for a private view and again to-morrow morning

Since writing the former part of this letter I have had the good fortune to recover more of the stolen property—in deed I may say all—and besides I have secured the very men concerned in the robbery one of them having come to me and voluntarily confessed it They are European artillerymen I am sorry and ashamed to say Four of them are in custody and a woman connected with the affair is by this time arrested in Lerzapore There will be no difficulty in bringing it home to them the evidence we have is so complete

When the Governor-General met me, after he heard of my success, he clapped me on the back and congratulated me most heartily ! (Certainly there is a great deal of cordiality about him )

Chapter  
VII.  
1849

When I was with Duleep Singh at the Garden *Fête* given to the soldiers by Lawrence, the boy's fancy was much taken by some Highlanders in full dress Lord Dalhousie said, " Login, tell him they are my countrymen "

I was much amused at his admiration of the way I had turned out the Maharajah's equipage, he declares he has " seen nothing so smart out of England " After all, it is only the old carriage with the box taken off, and made to sit gracefully on its springs, he said, " Why don't you take Lawrence's turn-out in hand ! "

I have taken the Governor-General to visit Moolraj, also Chuttur Singh and Shere Singh, afterwards he came in to call on Duleep, in a friendly way

I get little time to myself, as he comes again at four p m, and I have to dine with him again, however, he has told me to bring this letter with me to go in his bag, otherwise it will be too late He is writing by this mail to the Queen, an account of his visit to the Maharajah, and how pleased he is with everything Mrs John Lawrence is sending home her children under Herbert Edwardes's charge, mind you go to see them, that I may give her your report Tell me if you think Edwardes like your brother John.

So much romance being attached to the famous Koh-i-noor, of which Login had charge at this time, some account of it here may be of interest. The following extract is from the "*Life of Lord Lawrence*" —

Shortly before the decree of annexation went forth, Lord Dalhousie had written to Henry Lawrence to make every



Chapter  
VII.  
1849

disposition for the safe custody of the State jewels which were about to fall into the lap of the English. In a letter dated April 27th on the subject of the Maharanee, who had just escaped from our hands he remarks, This incident three months ago would have been inconvenient now it does not so much signify at the same time it is discreditable and I have been annoyed by the occurrence. As guardians seem so little to be trusted I hope you have taken proper precautions in providing full security for the jewels and Crown property at Lahore whose removal would be a more serious affair than that of the Maharanee. It had in fact been found more than once on the enrolment of some new province in our Empire which whether by cession by lapse or forcible annexation was growing, or about to grow so rapidly that the State jewels or money had had a knack of disappearing it is amusing to read the expressions of virtuous indignation which bubble over from our officers at the extravagance or rapacity or carelessness of the former owners when on entering a palace which they deemed would be stocked with valuables ready for English use they found that the treasury was empty and the jewels were gone. Great care was therefore needful especially as among the Punjab jewels was the matchless Koh-i-noor the mountain of light which it was intended should be expressly surrendered by the young Maharajah to the English Queen.

The origin of this peerless jewel is lost in the mists of antiquity. It had fallen into the hands of the early Turkish invaders of India and from them it had passed to the Moguls. My son Humayoun says the illustrious Baber one of the most formidable of all Eastern monarchs has won a jewel from the Raja, which is valued at half the daily expenses of the whole world.

A century or two later the Persian conqueror Nadir Shah seeing it glitter in the turban of Baber's conquered descendant exclaimed with rough and somewhat costly humour. We will be friends let us change turbans in pledge of friendship and the exchange of course took place.

The Afghan conqueror, Ahmed Shah, wrested it in his turn from the feeble hand of Nadir Shah's successor, and so it came into the possession of Shah Sooja, who was by turn the pensioner and the puppet of the English, and the miserable pretext of the first disastrous Afghan war. Half prisoner and half guest of Runjeet Singh, he had, of course, been relieved by the one-eyed, money-loving Sikh of the responsibility of keeping such a valuable treasure. Runjeet, listening on his death-bed to the suggestions of a wily Brahmin, had been half disposed, like many other death-bed penitents, to make his peace with the other world by sending the beautiful jewel to adorn the idol of Juggernaut; but fate reserved it for the ultimate possession of the English Crown

Chapter  
VII.  
1849

To this we may add the following statement, obtained by Login at the request of Lord Dalhousie —

STATEMENT OF MISR MAHARAJ,

*Treasurer to H M the Maharajah Duleep Singh*

(for upwards of thirty-two years employed in the Toshkhana at Lahore), *with regard to the Koh-i-noor, from the time that it came into Runjeet's possession*

Shah Sooja-Ool-Moolk, at the time the Koh-i-noor was taken from him by Runjeet Singh, was in confinement with his family in the house of the Dewan Lukput Rai, near the Shah Alum Gate, or Puttee Durwaza. The Maharajah sent to him Dewan Motee Ram, Fakeer Azizodeen, and others, to demand the jewel from him, and he sent by their hands a large *pookraj* (topaz) of a yellow colour, which the Shah stated to be the Koh-i-noor. On this being shown to the Maharajah, who was then in the Summun, he sent for jewellers to ascertain whether this were the Koh-i-noor or not, and on being told by them it

Chapter  
VII  
1849

was not the Koh i noor he kept the topaz but sent immediate orders to place the Shah under restraint (*tungai*) and to prevent him from eating or drinking until the Koh i noor demanded was given up as he had attempted to impose upon the Maharajah by sending a topaz instead. After this restraint had been continued about eight hours the Shah gave up the Koh i noor to the Vakeels above named who immediately brought it to the Maharajah in the Summun where it was shown to the jewellers who had remained with the Maharajah at the palace until the return of the Vakeels. The Maharajah had dressed for the evening Durbar and was seated in his chair when the jewel was brought to him. It was brought in a box lined with crimson velvet into which it had been fitted and was presented to the Maharajah who expressed great satisfaction.

It was at that time set alone (singly) in an enamelled setting with strings to be worn as an armlet. He placed it on his arm and admired it then after a time replaced in its box which with the topaz, he made over to Belee Ram to be placed in the Toshkhana under the charge of Mir Butee Ram Toshkhana. The Toshkhana being then in the Motee Bazaar at the house of Ramsaker Gurwai (now Lal Singh's Toshkhana) who placed it in a chest there. After a little while it was taken by the Maharajah to Amritsur under charge of Belee Ram along with other articles of the Toshkhana and carried along with the Maharajah wherever he went under a strong guard.

It was always carried in a large camel trunk placed on the leading camel (but this was known only to the people of the Toshkhana). The whole string of camels which generally consisted of about one hundred being well guarded by troops. In camp this box was placed between two others alike close to the pole of the tent. Mir Belee Ram's bed very close to it none but his relatives and confidential servants having access to the place.

For four or five years it was worn as an armlet, then fitted up as a *supûsh* for the turban, with a diamond drop of a *tolah* weight (now in the Toshkhana) attached to it. It was worn in this manner for about a year, on three or four occasions, when it was again made up as an armlet, with a diamond on each side, *as at present*. It has now been used as an armlet for upwards of twenty years.

Shah Sooja remained at Lahore after this for ten months or a year, and then made his escape with his family, taking the guard with him. The Koh-i-noor remained under the charge of Belee Ram, as above stated.

Shortly before the death of Runjeet Singh, Rajah Dhyān Singh, Wuzeer, sent for Belee Ram, and stated that the Maharajah had expressed, by signs, that he wished the Koh-i-noor to be given away in charity (the Maharajah being then speechless). Mīr Belee Ram objected, saying, that "it was only fit to be possessed by a king! and to whom could it be given in charity?" Rajah Dhyān Singh said "to the Brahmīns at Juggernaut." But Belee Ram objected to this, stating that it ought to remain with the Maharajah's descendants, and that already twenty-one lakhs of rupees, and jewels, and gold, &c, had been given away to the Brahmīns. He thus exposed himself to the greatest enmity on the part of Rajah Dhyān Singh, and after the accession of Maharajah Khurruck Singh, and the assassination of Cheyt Singh, Rajah Dhyān Singh obtained uncontrolled power, and threw Mīr Belee Ram into prison, where he was kept for four months, the keys of the Toshkhana having been handed over to Tej Chund.

However, on the accession of Maharajah Shere Singh, Mīr Belee Ram was once again called into office, and continued during his reign.

On the day after Shere Singh's death, Belee Ram was seized by Heera Singh's people and sent to the house of Nawab Sheikh Imamooddeen, by whom he was *disposed* of in the *Tykhana*

Chapter (underground room) of his house along with his brother Ram  
 VII. Kissen and Bhasee Goormukee Singh.  
 1849

At the time of Belee Ram's seizure the keys of the Tosh khana and of the jewels were with his nephew Gunesh Doss who was with his uncle and from him the keys were taken by Rajah Lal Singh who, at the same time put him in confinement along with six others of Belee Ram's family including Mier Makraj\* but still making them perform their duties in the Tosh khana though the keys were given to Bowanee Doss and Kurrum Singh

On the death of Hoera Singh they were released and after the removal of Lal Singh from power the charge of the Toshkhana and Koh i noor again came into the hands of Mier Makraj with whom it has continued without intermission until made over to the undersigned on 6th May 1849 when taken possession of by the British Government

(Signed) J S Login

The Koh i noor was brought from the old Tosh khana by Dr Login and placed with the other valuables in the Citadel under guard

The old treasurer, Mier Makraj gave him every assistance, and said "the relief to his mind was great at being free of responsibility" He said that the Koh i noor had been the cause of so many deaths having been fatal to so many of his own family that he never expected to be spared!

Login followed the advice given him by Misr Makraj—when showing the jewel to visitors, to keep it in his *own* hand, with the ribbon cords that tied it as an armlet twisted round his fingers. It was still set, as before described, as an armlet, with a diamond on each side of the Koh-i-noor as a contrast of size.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### FUTTEHGHUR.

Chapter VIII 1850 THAT the removal of the young ex-King from the Punjab was contemplated with no little anxiety by the Government at Calcutta that most elaborate precautions were taken to prevent his abduction on the road and that the protection of a very strong escort of troops was deemed necessary to guard against surprise, will appear from the following official despatches —

*From SIR HENRY ELLIOT K.C.B. SECRETARY to the GOVERNMENT of INDIA with the GOVERNOR-GENERAL to the BOARD of ADMINISTRATION for the affairs of the PUNJAB*

(Dated) CAMP BULLOCKHER Dec 11th 1849  
SIRS

The Governor General has from the first considered it essential that Maharajah Daleep Singh should not continue to reside in the Punjab after its annexation to the British Empire

2 The lateness of the season in April last and His Lordship's unwillingness to expose him to the fatigue of a long journey in the hot weather induced the Governor-General to defer his removal until the end of the year

3 The Governor-General having had an opportunity of showing all due respect and courtesy to His Highness at Lahore, conceives that his departure should no longer be delayed

4 Preparations for this purpose have already been made. A residence has been provided for the Maharajah at Futtchghur, befitting his rank and station

5 The troops which were to escort the Maharajah have been provided. A squadron of the Body Guard will arrive at Lahore in a few days, and two companies of Her Majesty's 18th Regiment are waiting there also

6 The Governor-General lately requested His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief to give orders for the escort of a regiment of native infantry being added to the troops already mentioned. Application should be made to the Major-General commanding in the Punjab for the further arrangements of this escort, His Excellency's intentions having no doubt been communicated to him.

7 The Governor-General, I am further directed to state, is entirely satisfied with the past services of Dr Login, in the position he has occupied towards the Maharajah. His Lordship thinks that nothing better could be desired by the Government, and nothing could be more advantageous to the future comfort and happiness of the *boy*, than that Dr Login should continue for the present to have charge of him and of all his affairs.

8 The Governor-General begs that the full approbation of the Government for his past services may be conveyed to Dr Login, and His Lordship's confidence that in the future discharge of his duties he will continue to merit the praise of the Government, and will confer lasting and real benefit on the young Maharajah

9 Dr Login will continue to draw a consolidated salary of 1,200 rupees a month. It is not just that the whole of this salary should be defrayed by the Government, and His Lordship considers that a fair division should be made, and that one-half should be



Chapter VIII. 1850 paid by the British Government the other half defrayed from the annual income of His Highness

10 Dr Login will have entire authority over His Highness's household during his boyhood. He will be placed under the direct control of the Governor-General after leaving the jurisdiction of the Board of Administration in the Punjab. Monthly diaries or reports should be made by him to the Secretary to the Government of India in this department and copies of his accounts should be rendered quarterly in the same department.

11. Doctor Login will as soon as practicable after his arrival report on the precautions to be taken for His Highness's security in the event—which His Lordship thinks an improbable one—of any design being entertained for carrying him off and he will suggest such measures as he may consider necessary. Care must be taken to guard against any intrigues on the part of his mother the Maharanee who is now residing under guard at Khatmandoo and who has refused to return to the British territories but whose avowed intention is to regain possession of her son the Maharajah.

12 The Governor General conceives it to be desirable to remove at the same time from the Punjab the child who is it is believed the only legitimate son of the Maharajah Shere Singh. He can for the present occupy the same residence as the Maharajah under such regulations as may be thought right. He should be treated as a companion of the Maharajah but as in all respects his inferior.

13 In both cases a very careful selection should be made of the attendants who are to accompany them. In the case of the child especially there can be no reason for taking almost any servant from Lahore \* and both should be prevented from having

---

In an official letter to Secretary to Government, dated February 6th, 1853, Login says that owing to the Maharajah's total incapacity and a half years' rest

any one about them, except such persons as Dr Login may consider from his experience to be worthy of trust

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850.

14. The Governor-General finally requests that a report may be forwarded of the arrangements made by the Board in pursuance of the foregoing instructions, and of the servants, property, &c . . . . to be taken, after the departure of the Maharajah

I have, &c ,

H. M. ELLIOT, *Sec to the Government of India*

In forwarding a copy of the above to Dr Login, Major H. P. Burn, Deputy Secretary to the Punjab Board of Administration, after some remarks on the earlier portion of it, adds by direction of the Board that—

No man of doubtful character should be permitted to accompany the camp. You should keep, he says, two or three trusty persons at all times with the Maharajah in addition to the armed guard. Care should be taken against his being inveigled away at night, quite as much as against armed violence. The Board have much pleasure in being the medium of conveying to you the present handsome tribute of the approbation of the Government, in which they cordially join

---

the suddenness of the order for his removal, he had thought it advisable, to prevent any appearance of undue harshness, to permit the mother to accompany the child, in the hope that afterwards, "when the boy could dispense with female attendance . . . she might more easily be induced to leave him" in Dr Login's care, and return to her own family at Kangra. In thus departing from his instructions he acted with the approval of Sir H. Lawrence

Chapter VIII 1850 From MAJOR H P BURN Deputy Secretary to the BOARD of ADMINISTRATION to J S LOGIN Esq M.D Agent to the GOVERNOR GENERAL, in charge of the EX MAHARAJAH, by direction of Sir H M Lawrence K.O.B President

LAHORE Dec. 21st 1849—7 a.m.

SIR

1 I am directed by the Board to call upon you for a reply to my letter of the 14th inst detailing the arrangements you propose to make for the safety of Maharajah Duleep Singh during the march to Futttehghur and forwarding a list of servants and establishment accompanying the camp

2 The Board cannot too strongly impress on you the necessity of the utmost watchfulness The strong escort will prevent all chance of open rescue your chief care should therefore be against secret abstraction especially at night

3 Major General Sir Walter Gilbert has been requested to inform the officer commanding the escort that you, as Agent of the Governor General are responsible for the Maharajah and that therefore your instructions are to be attended to This of course merely refers to guards hours of marching &c and will not in any way interfere with the authority of the commanding officer in the event of the troops being called on to act Cordiality and free intercourse with the military will of course be observed

I have the honour to be Sir

Your most obedient servant

H P BURN Major

I S—4 Since this letter was written the President has witnessed your departure at nine a.m although the hour of seven was fixed He was surprised to perceive that you were only accompanied by twenty of the Body Guard without an officer

5 The Board wish to impress on your mind that your chief danger is an attempt at rescue *on the road*, on which account you should be accompanied on the march by at least one hundred horsemen, and a portion of the infantry should be ready to receive you on the new ground, and one company or so should leave the old encampment, so as to be fallen in with by the Maharajah's party about midway of the march. It is not the attack of an army that you have to guard against, but of a hundred or more desperadoes ready to sell their lives

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

6 Lights should be kept in the Maharajah's tent, and a double sentry at each door. The Europeans should be saved as much as possible during the day, and employed at night

H. P. BURN, *Major*

*From MAJOR H P BURN, &c , &c., to DR LOGIN, &c , &c ,  
Ferozepore*

LAHORE, Dec. 23<sup>rd</sup>, 1849

SIR,

I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 22<sup>nd</sup> inst , No 2, and to inform you that the Board consider your arrangements judicious and proper. The plan of European orderlies is very good. Your explanation regarding the absence of the European officer when leaving Lahore, is satisfactory as far as he is concerned, but the Board would observe that the whole of the Body Guard, excepting those required with their baggage, should march with the Maharajah

2 The Board desire me to repeat the expression of their sense of the value of your services while employed under them, and trust implicitly to your continued attention and good management, for the safety and comfort of the Maharajah on his march to Futtehghur.

Chapter 3 Copy of a circular to the Commissioners of Ferozepore  
VIII. Loodiana, and Umballa is herewith enclosed for your information  
1850 and also of one to the magistrates of Saharunpore Mozuffer  
nuggur Bolundshuhur and Furruckabad.

4 You are requested to briefly post progress *daily* until you  
cross the Jumna, and then weekly until arrival at Futtehghur

I have the honour &c

H. P BURN *Major*

The circular referred to requires the above-named Commissioners to "attend the camp of Maharajah Duleep Singh through their jurisdiction, instruct their police to be alert, and themselves take such measures as will ensure the comfort and safety of the Maharajah and party Every respect was to be paid the Maharajah by all holding intercourse with him, but visits and public ceremonies are not to be permitted. Salutes of courtesy are (also) not required" The magistrates are informed of the approach of the camp of the ex King and desired to 'attend to all the requisitions of Dr Login and in every way exert themselves for the comfort and safety of the Maharajah

Login's own letters to his wife at home will best describe the last days at Lahore the incidents of the march and the daily life and surroundings of the young Prince and his nephew, in their new home at Futtehghur

Jan 2nd, 1850

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

. It was a great relief to me to get away from Lahore. After Macgregor (who took over charge from me) had given me a receipt for the *bodies* of Moolraj, Chuttur Singh, Shere Singh, and Co, it occurred to me that it would be a bit of a curiosity in after days, if I could get them all to sign their names together on a single document as a souvenir. So I drew up a *Razzenama* in Persian, which they all signed in duplicate with great readiness. This gives me a spare copy to give away, as well as one to keep. I shall deposit it along with the receipt for the Koh-i-noor, which was written by Lord Dalhousie himself, in the presence of Sir H. Elliot, Sir H. Lawrence, Mansel, and John Lawrence, and countersigned by them all. They also affixed their seals, as well as my own, to the State jewels, when I delivered them over. This document will be worth keeping I think, and something for my children to look at when I am gone.

On my birthday the Maharajah sent me as *his* present, a large chesnut Arab, a fine powerful animal, it was much admired by everybody. Of course I could not refuse his gift, and shall ride him occasionally on the march, paying for his keep myself from that day, but he is, and shall remain, the property of the little man to all intents and purposes. I have written Major Scott, to ask him to let me have his boy Tommy as companion for the Maharajah, and to be educated with him when I can get a good tutor sent out from England. I have asked Henry Lawrence to consult Dr. Duff when he arrives at Lahore as to the best way to set about getting one, he is sure to be able to help us, as he goes to England shortly, in the meantime I must find some one to carry on the boy a bit, to fit him for a good tutor. I must not forget to tell you that, before leaving, I made over the "Blessies" to Sir C. Napier, after having had him *trotted up and down* in one! They are to be tried in headquarter's camp, and must sink or swim now. Sir Charles is in great admiration of them himself, and he is no bad judge. I assisted him at an interesting interview he

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

had with Shore Singh and his father Sir Charles questioned them closely on various matters particularly the battles of Gujerat and Chillianwallah and the reasons for this and that movement. Not being a military man I proposed making over the office of interpreter to the Commander in Chief's interpreter but he made rather a poor show at the work so I had to go at it again and was complimented on my success. I am considered a good hand at understanding these Punjabis their dialect is a little strange to men unaccustomed to it.

It is rather amusing to me to have to receive regular military reports from the officers with the escort with a salute 'Any change in the guard sir? Have you any fresh orders sir? How you would laugh at my demure face! but all the same we have to be very wide awake during the march as it is well known that there are designs on foot to carry off the boy. I think, however that I shall foil them at least if they succeed it won't be for want of vigilance on my part.

SEHARUKPOOR, Jan 20th, 1850

Just returned from the public gardens here where I took the boy he has a great love for plants and seeds of all kinds for his garden and I like to encourage the taste. Mr Kane has promised him a good gardener and some waggon loads of plants and shrubs they are to start at once. We have also been to visit the Government stud. I am rather thinking of getting a pair of strong grey wheelers from here for the Maharajah's carriage but people admire it so much as it is with the four grey Arabs and think it perfect that I hesitate. I think they are too light but there is no question of their beauty. We look very smart when we are in our show dress at the different stations with this smart equipage escorted by the Governor-General's Body Guard and Skinner's Carabiers."

We are near Deobund to-day where we lost my poor Hinghan

I don't find this sort of life good for my pocket, though very pleasant. As, of course, the Maharajah's table is quite distinct from mine, I have to entertain constantly, we have the escort officers, of course, and many guests as we go through the stations. I have also to provide for young Bailow, and soon I shall have Tommy Scott, and a tutor, and thus I shall continue to do till you arrive, when we shall take up our abode (as I told Lord Dalhousie) in a separate house from the Maharajah. I can then establish a separate table for the others, which can be kept up at the Maharajah's expense. So do come out as soon as you can.

Chapter  
VIII  
1850

MEERUT, Jan 29th, 1850 (*On the road to Futtehghur*)

Since we crossed the Jumna our escort has been reduced a little by the withdrawal of the Horse Artillery guns, but we still have—

A squadron of the Body Guard,  
Wing of 6th Light Cavalry,  
Squadron of Skinner's Horse,  
Party of 18th European Infantry,  
Wing of 50th Native Infantry

So we still form rather an imposing camp. We shall pass through no other station now till we reach our destination.

Just received my English box. Am so pleased with the likenesses. The Maharajah is so charmed with the children's, and hopes you are to bring them out with you! He is much delighted with all the fine things you have sent him, and has begun his painting already. I have been purchasing some furniture here, and sending it on under Bhugwan Doss's charge, he is very anxious to make a good appearance at Futtehghur, as the first of the Maharajah's servants to arrive, so I have sent him to the Toshkhana to be rigged out smartly.

February 13th I met, while at Meerut, Walter Guise, a younger brother of Dr. Guise, and he is now travelling with us



Chapter VIII. 1850 I want to try him as tutor for the young Maharajah for a time to prepare him for a better when I can hear of one I have written to England to enquire for a suitable man I think Guise will be able to do all that can be done for the present. Scott writes me to say that he will send Tommy as soon as we are all settled.

The Ganges Canal is not very far from our camp it is a noble work and I trust if all is well with us to be able to accept Thomason's invitation and go with him to see it opened It is the greatest of our works in India and any one may be proud of having had a hand in it Tom's whole heart is in the work. He now sees that he is better off than any lieutenant in the army as to pay and prospects and thanks me for making him fit himself for the position

The Maharajah attracts great attention and curiosity among the people at every station and is much admired he certainly does look handsome and rides gracefully I took him to see the the Artillery Review at Meerut and he was a great attraction. On leaving the ground a soldierly looking Field Officer of the Royal Irish rode for some time near the carriage seeming anxious to have a good look at the boy So I spoke to him saying how much the Maharajah had enjoyed the review He asked if he had the pleasure of speaking to Dr Login and then told me that he had met you at Allahabad last year on your way home with the children He asked after you all most kindly (as Col. Grattan he introduced himself) Sir Joseph and Lady Thackwell also asked after you.

CAMP, Feb 16th 1850

I expect if all goes well with us to reach Futtehghur in two or three days and I shall be able to describe to you your future home Your last letters were truly delightful and cheering as to your health I shall be so miserably disappointed if Randal Martin forbids your re turning to me in October I do so need you to assist me I am anxious to give this young Maharajah

(and Shahzadah) a favourable impression of us as Christians, in our domestic state, and to make him acquire respect for the character of an English lady His opinion of them may afterwards have weight amongst his countrymen, and dispose them to think better of our ladies than they do Unless you are with me it will be impossible for me to give him any idea of what we are in our families, and we have so few opportunities such as I may now have, that I should be exceedingly sorry to lose it There is much in our social habits which, to say the least, must appear equivocal to any native, and which requires a knowledge of us in our domestic circle, to understand. Just think what their ideas of ladies dancing the polka and drinking healths must be, if they had no opportunity of knowing them better and acquiring respect for them! So you see, dearest, you have a mission to perform—to establish the character of your countrywomen, and to acquire respect for them, of which they have little yet, I am afraid Mrs George Lawrence has certainly done much in this way—it was quite pleasing to hear her spoken of by the Sikh chiefs, but *you* may have much more in your power

I suppose I must have told you all about the young Shahzadah, Duleep's nephew, who was placed under my charge at the last moment by the Governor-General, in addition He would probably be looked upon as next in succession, being the only son of Shere Singh, the last Maharajah Sheo Deo's mother has elected to accompany her son, and is now in our camp She is the youngest wife of Shere Singh, selected from among the Rajpootnees of the hill country after he came to the throne, so you may judge if she is not likely to be handsome I cannot describe her to you, as I have not yet had the pleasure of seeing her!

FUTTEHGUR, Feb 21st

I am much pleased with the *situation* of the house selected It must have been a very delectable residence in Mr Shore's

Chapter  
VIII,  
1850

time (Lord Teignmouth's son) though the grounds are not large enough for the Maharajah but I shall remedy that by buying up the neighbouring bungalows and their compounds and throwing them all into one, make it like a small park extending along the banks of the Ganges. The drawing room window is within fifty yards of the fine broad stream with a sloping bank down to it. *I have not seen in India more undulating grounds or more capable of being made picturesque—walks in all directions and some fine shady trees, and I shall set about making a beautiful garden, but it looks forlorn and neglected having been so long empty I must do my best to get it soon to look bright and cheerful I am afraid, however that we shall have to live among bricks and mortar for a long time until I can get it to look what I wish it to be and what I shall not feel is unsuited for the Maharajah who has lost his own splendid home through no fault of his own*

The residents here are Allen (Judge) Smith Cunninghame (Collector) you remember him at Lucknow Bakes (Deputy Collector) Col Alexander (Gun Carriage Agency) Tucker (Clothing Department) Padre Carshore Doctor Gerrard Halcott Craige Doran John Bean—all of these are married except the last two

FUTTERNAH March 6th 1850

I was disappointed at having to leave Lahore before Dr Duff's arrival after having had so much to do these last few years in urging him to take up the Punjab. He was much pleased at my sending him my subscription as it showed him I was in earnest

A number of the Punjabi servants are to return to their homes soon and I am trying hard to fill their places with respectable steady men I am getting over some few of our old people from Lucknow who can be depended on but I have refused a great many who might not be exactly the sort to be placed near the young boy Bhugwan Does I have got also

Gulzar Syed (our Gharib-khana boy), Davee (Sirdar-bearer), and his brother Nidhan, and good Khalipha Ali Bux is coming from the Gharib-khana, to be placed in responsible charge, and then I can feel I have a man I can trust

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850.

Hotspur, the chestnut Arab, carries me well, and deserves to be named after your favourite. I am out a great deal in the sun, looking after the works, but as I have got into the frontier fashion of wearing a large muslin *puggarice* round my helmet *topce*, I scarcely feel its power. Do you remember Hollings's coachman? You used to wonder how he kept his turban *on*, he wore it so on the slant and looked so rakish. Well, I have made him coachman of the two mule teams of *four-in-hand*. They are splendid jet-black creatures, very large and handsome. The fellow breaks them in splendidly, and they go like the wind! I wish I could make a sketch of them for you, with Hassan Beg *standing* up on the box, holding the reins, and *laying on* with his long whip, his turban clapped on *one ear*—looking like a very fiend with his long beard flying! I have told him that you ~~will~~ never bear the sight of him unless he wears his turban straight, and it amuses the two little fellows, Duleep and Sheo Deo, to watch his efforts to get it to remain straight. I think his head must be a queer shape, for though he starts with it quite straight, he always comes back with it in the old position!

The two lads are very happy together. They had scarcely ever seen each other before, and were rather awkward at first, the nephew standing in awe of the uncle. They are looking forward to the arrival of Tommy Scott, who is expected with his mother soon.

I shall be glad when you join me, for I cannot expect to have more than two or three years in which we can influence the young Maharajah's mind favourably towards our domestic life, and I must not lose them on any account. He will have an opportunity of seeing how we live in our homes, and he will be one of us, and will look upon you as a mother, and respect and

Chapter VIII. 1850 esteem you. Is it not worth running *some* risk to health, by coming back so soon when it is to occupy a position of so much usefulness, towards one who may yet influence so many thousands of people? You can have no idea of the interest shown in him by the natives everywhere. Then there is the little Shahzadah and the Ranee his mother for you to interest yourself in and occupy your time and thoughts. So come away as soon as you feel able and help me for I need you sorely. You may turn all your excellent qualities to good account here. Thomason wrote me the other day saying that you would now be more than ever a *helpmeet* for me. I was so pleased with the Maharajah on the occasion of the grand day of the Hoolie Festival. He showed such self-denial and self-restraint in not exhibiting any desire to participate in the undignified and indeed objectionable frolics of the people that I arranged something more harmless for him in the evening to his great enjoyment and delight. The large centre rooms are splendid places for hide-and-seek blind man's buff &c. All these games are new to him and the Shahzadah. Imagine the scene! The ruler of the Sikhs the young Shahzadah Sirdar Boor Singh Butaliwallah Dewan Ajooda Pershad Fakcer Zehoorudin Mr Guise Mr Barlow and myself all engaged in the game. The Maharajah's shouts of glee ringing all over the place as each was caught in turn. I was glad indeed that you sent him that book of games "The Boy's Own Book." It is seldom out of his hand and it has added to his eagerness to learn English. I am prepared to find it the book of all others he prefers to study!

FUTTERNIGH April 21st 1850

The Governor-General passes through the boundary end of my postal division in a few days and I have sent a tent out to hanore to be ready for me on the 24th as I wish particularly to see him to ask leave to go to Calcutta to meet you. He may

refuse, as he is so anxious I should always be on the spot with the Maharajah, in case of any plot, but I hope I may be able to persuade him that it will be safe. Allen, the Commissioner, has promised to look after him carefully in my absence. I wish I could give the little fellow a taste for learning—in fact, for study of *any* sort, but you see he has not been trained to do anything of that kind, and it is so difficult to get him to apply his mind for even five minutes at a time. Poor Guise has a lively time of it, and needs great patience—a virtue he certainly possesses in a high degree—and for this reason he is invaluable as a first tutor, to coax the boy over the drudgery a little. No man of high attainments could be expected to begin at the beginning, and such a small beginning too!

Chapter  
VIII  
1850.

May 14th

I think I told you that I resisted the blandishments of the young officers here, and refused to transform the party I had issued invitations for, at the Maharajah's house, into a *ball* as they wished. I told both Doran and Bean that I would not have *dancing*, but that the arrangements should be as elastic and pleasant as could be managed. D turned sulky, and would not come, and silly Mrs ——— took the same course, but her husband had more sense, and approved of my reasons. I did my very best to make the Maharajah's first party a success, but I did wish you were here to help me. It went off well, and everybody declared it far exceeded their expectations—and they had been high—for the station was in great excitement about it! The fireworks were splendid, *one* feature of them was much admired. I called the Ganges to my aid, and had the Maharajah's little yacht rigged out with bamboos to represent a ship, yards, mast-heads, and ropes all illuminated. She moved up and down the river gracefully, and had such a pretty effect that it delighted everybody. I took some wrinkles from our old

Chapter Lucknow Illuminations which were so effective on the Goomtee  
 VIII. I had all the European children of the station—ten in number—  
 1850 present as well as all the grown ups I gave this first party to  
 celebrate the birthday of the Shahzadah May 14th, he is four  
 teen days younger than Edwy The Maharajah was grievously  
 disappointed at not getting a letter from you he is quite eager  
 to keep up a correspondence with you.

FUTTEHGUR May 16th 1850

Since last writing I have seen the Governor General who was  
 most friendly and expressed himself highly satisfied with all I  
 had done He opened his mind very freely particularly about  
 the late transactions in Oude and the difficulties in which they  
 had placed him He seems much annoyed at what has occurred  
 and which certainly appears to have been brought on most incon-  
 siderately Both Sleeman and Bird stand very low in his books  
 at present and I should not be surprised to hear of some changes  
 there I am very grieved about it all myself

All that has been done in the Punjab has delighted him  
 greatly during this first year Again and again he expressed his  
 pleasure with it and John Lawrence stands prime favourite  
 He is not so fond of dear old Henry as we all know but he  
 could not help acknowledging his admiration of his character  
 I have spoken strongly about getting a good tutor looked out for  
 in England for the boy but I see that he thinks it would not be  
 prudent to get Dr Duff to recommend one as it might be mis-  
 represented and people might think it was with the intention of  
 making the lad a Christian so I must do it through another  
 channel I am sorry Robert Adams must go home for his health.  
 He has been ill but I think that now he has shown what he is  
 worth there will be no difficulty in his getting a good berth when  
 he comes back though I am sorry he has to throw up the Guides  
 Lawrence tells me that Lumsden thinks highly of him and

regrets losing him, so we need not repent bringing him into notice. I see that the newspapers are full of expectation of getting the Lahore State property as prize money, and they propose the Queen's *native* subjects should purchase the Koh-i-noor, and present it to Her. My idea in another form! But I don't like it so well as mine. They do not go as far as I do, for they do not propose to lay out the money in the improvement of the country from whence the Koh-i-noor came. However, Lord Dalhousie does not like the idea, and would not thank me for originating it. He told me that Her Majesty was most anxious to see the jewels, and that it was all stuff about Her refusal to accept them.

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850.

If you see Dr Duff in Edinburgh, you can explain to him that Lord Dalhousie is afraid if he were asked to recommend a tutor that it might imply an interference with the boy's religious faith; I trust, however, that God helping us, we shall be enabled, as "written epistles," to manifest the spirituality and benevolence of a Christian life, if we cannot otherwise preach to him. He is a strange little fellow, and shows an intelligence at times beyond his years. Observing that Guise, Barlow, Tommy Scott, and I have morning and evening prayer together, he asked me to order his *porohut* (priest) to come to him also at a fixed hour daily to read in his holy book (the Grunt'h). This I think indicates a devotional feeling, that may hereafter be directed aright, indeed, he shows a strong desire to walk according to the light which God has given him, and a wish to know His will.

FUTTEGHUR, *May 19th*, 1850.

With regard to expenses, I told you it is not good for my pocket to live as I do, but having such complete control over the Maharajah's establishment and expenditure, my first study appears to me, to be most scrupulous on the subject of my personal expenses, and to set a good example to others. I there-



Chapter VIII. 1850  
 fore keep my own establishment quite separate from the Maharajah's and intend to continue to do so. At present my personal staff of servants cost me fifty rupees per mensem and I have my own separate table and bedroom furniture bedroom candles &c. I bought Henry Lawrence's horse and this I also keep myself as well as the chesnut Arab (cost 2 000 rupees) which the boy sent me on my birthday and which for the sake of appearances and courtesy I could not return yet I pay for his keep and syce myself.

The truth is I am in a position that I must and will show that I am above personal paltry considerations in my anxiety to do justice to my charge. So long as I am most careful not to expend money of his on my own personal comforts or those of my family I feel very independent indeed and can carry matters with a high hand. I trust I shall be able to show the Maharajah and his people in after years that they have been no losers by falling into the hands of a Christian gentleman and that I have done no discredit to the name.

I have it is true all the pleasure which I could desire from the expenditure of the Maharajah's money quite as much as if it were my own. So much has been left to my discretion in the way of applying it. After putting his house and grounds in order I intend to get up a school for the children all round Futteghur in which he can take an interest and also find other ways to give him a taste for benefiting the poor and making the people round him happy. I think it is only by acting in this way and avoiding all thought of self that I can prove myself at all worthy of the confidence placed in me.

I always forgot to tell you that I sold your Arab Sultan (or

Within the last three months we have started a day-school for girls of respectable caste as an experiment. The Rev. George Nath Nandy a zealous and exemplary wid. and daughter superintend it (vernacular and Sanskrit). I look for great results eventually.

rather John Lawrence did for me), to Brigadier Wheeler for his daughter for 800 rupees. He was a lovely creature, but was too light for my weight.

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850.

## FUTTEHGHUR

You will probably meet Herbert Edwardes at Clifton, and renew your acquaintance with him. You will find that he has turned out exactly what you would expect—viz, a clever and intelligent man, as little elevated with the honours and attention that have been shown him, as it is possible for a young man to be. He has a great leaning towards that which will enable him to bear worldly honours well, and to count them at their true value. As he becomes more confirmed in his Christian course, he will lose all the little natural haughtiness of manner which some people attribute to him, I am certain it is only natural to him, and not put on. I only wish we had many “Herbert Edwardeses” in India!

Mrs Scott brought her son Tom herself, and we are all greatly pleased with the lad. I think he will be of great use as a companion for the Maharajah.

Duleep Singh was greatly delighted to receive the subjoined from Sir Henry Lawrence, who with his native kindness of heart, although immersed in work, took the trouble himself to write it carefully in large text-hand, on lines, in the hope that the boy would be able to read it without assistance.

LAHORE, Feb 28th, 1850

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH,

I am glad to hear that you are *Khoosh*. I hope you like your house and grounds, and that “Gunga Jee” is as near as I

Chapter told you I very often think of you I hope you read and  
VIII. write every day Wishing you health and all happiness  
1850

Believe me your sincere friend

HENRY LAWRENCE

This was the first of several from Sir Henry Mr John Lawrence also wrote him several times, evincing a warm interest in him.

In another letter from Futtehghur, July 16th, 1850, Login says —

The Maharajah was so pleased to get Edwys \* letter in reply to his he had been quite impatient for its arrival I forgot to tell you that I was told by the Governor General that the hint I had thrown out last year when at Lahore of the Maharajah sending a present to the Prince of Wales might now be acted upon So I shall pick out something suitable from amongst his boyish arms and armour though I could have had a better choice *then* (You will remember that I made the suggestion about the silver summer house at the same time!) I have been making inquiries about a wife for my little boy He says I am his "Ma Bap" and he trusts to me to do what may be necessary for his happiness He will have nothing to do no says with Shero Singh a sister to whom he was betrothed so I am left quite at liberty to choose for him I have heard of a little daughter of the Rajah of Coorg at Benares She is being educated like an English child and her father has asked and obtained permission to take her to England to have her education completed She is only eight years of age described as fair and good looking and also intelligent with decided marks of good blood and lineage about her The father is not yet aware of my inquiries My informant is Major Stewart the Governor General's

---

Login's eldest boy

Agent at Benares, who says that altogether he does not think my young *protégé* could anywhere get a more suitable wife! When I have heard from Macgregor and others who know her, I shall send on my information to Lord Dalhousie privately. Possibly matters may be so far arranged by the time you come out, that you may see her as the Maharajah's *fiancee* as you pass through Benares. There will be four years between their ages nearly. I have an idea, however, that young Duleep would prefer some one *nearer* his own age, and I may have some difficulty in the matter. I am glad to tell you that I have been fortunate enough to engage a good English manservant for the Maharajah, to take charge of the stables and the camp-equipage, he is to drive the Maharajah's four-in-hand. Thornton is a particularly nice-looking, respectable man. He came out to India as servant to an officer in one of our cavalry regiments, and does not wish to go back with him. His master speaks highly of him, says he has had charge of his small racing stud, and is an *honest man*. He thoroughly understands horses, and I trust he will do credit to the Maharajah's establishment. He came over from Cawnpore to see me, and I have engaged him on 150 rupees per mensem, good wages, no doubt, but if he is all they say he is, he is worth it. He is married, and his wife is said to be a thoroughly respectable Englishwoman.

I have just been looking at my account at the Cawnpore Bank, and find it rather low. I have had rather unusual expenses since you left—I mean more than I calculated on. Besides paying my necessary subscriptions to the Funds (Bengal Military and Orphan), which, as you know, are specially heavy in my case, I have had to pay, for instance,—

	RUPEES
Dr Duff's Mission to Punjab	500
Brian Hodgson's children (left destitute)	250
Poor Fagan (when cashiered)	250
Dr Atkinson (to save him from dismissal)	500
Lahore Mission	100
Church at Lahore	150

Chapter Of course this is besides our various subscriptions as usual  
 VIII. such as—  
 1850

The Lawrence Asylum  
 The Free Church Mission  
 The C M Society

I do not grudge this nor will you I know I only tell you, that you may know all we have to count on I think it is incumbent on us to show that we are no seekers after gain that it is for our national honour as well as our Christian name, that the little Maharajah and his numerous dependents should have rather a high standard of honesty and uprightness placed before them from which to form their ideas of the character of their Christian rulers and that it therefore becomes the more necessary that we should exert the utmost vigilance to avoid the smallest imputation of avariciousness from being attached to us. For my own part I would rather prefer that at the coming of age of the little boy I should make over all his fortune to him with the consciousness that I had fulfilled my stewardship and was myself a poorer man than when I received the charge than that I should have in the very least degree advanced my own fortune at his expense

But why proceed with this digression?

I have had a letter from poor A to whom you may recollect I advanced 300 rupees some time ago He is in sad distress He accepted a bill for 1 000 rupees to save his poor brother from jail and now is unable to meet it and asks me with the fear of Sir Charles Napier and a court martial before his eyes to lend him 500 rupees I must help him though I shall be in difficulties by it for a time but for my dear friend Paton's sake I shall do what I can. A. is a strange fellow rather foolish but I believe of good principles and kind hearted I feel sorry indeed that I cannot engage the tutor so highly recommended by Dr Duff I comfort myself for the loss by the knowledge that my charge is not yet quite ready for a highly-qualified tutor and one who could only speak English

to him. He manages to read a *little* English fairly well, and understands it, but is afraid to begin to speak it, but I trust he will soon get over that. He is really intelligent, and can learn his lessons fast enough when he likes, but he has no power of application. The wonder is that we get him to do as much as he does, considering his former position, and the absence of any restraint - I am really fond of him, and we get on famously ; but I need to be very firm with him. The other day he became rather rebellious, and I had my first difficulty with him. He had run out during heavy rain into the garden, and got thoroughly drenched. I wished him to change his clothes, but he first, *in play*, said he would do so at the regular hour for dressing, and when I urged him to change at once, he got stubborn - so it became in a small way a trial of will. Who is to yield?

I gave him half an hour to go to his own room and do it of himself without being obliged, but he still held out. So I told him I very much regretted that he forced me to employ coercion, but that I must be obeyed, and I advised him as a friend not to make it necessary that I should expose him to it. Poor little fellow ! I was so sorry for him ! In a few minutes he came himself to my room and sobbed at a great rate, and appealed to the *Treaty* ! that he was to be allowed to do as he liked ! I told him I did not think that was one of the conditions ; that I was placed over him, and that at present I was his "Ma-Bap," and knew what was best for him. I think that had you seen us, you would have been satisfied that I could come the "*suaviter in modo*" as well as "*fortiter in re*" } I conquered—and from the way I did so, I saved his pride, and prevented any annoyance being felt by him as regards exposure before his people, and now we are even greater friends than before. Walter Guise is a very good fellow, rather slow perhaps, and not altogether the man who would suit later on, but he is very amiable, patient, and attentive, of mild manners, and gentlemanly appearance and demeanour, and has, I think, been more useful in winning the boy round to apply him

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

self to study than a more accomplished tutor would have been I should like to find him employment hereafter in charge of the Maharajah's *emindaree* when he gets one I am sure he is a most trustworthy man The English manservant Thornton will I think prove a valuable acquisition

I see by the papers that the Koh i noor has arrived in England, and that Mackeson not Ramsay gets all the credit of having brought it safely This will not be exactly as Lord Dalhousie wished as he was rather anxious on that score but no doubt the Court of Directors had their own ideas about it I was one of the *very few* entrusted with the secret of its disposal Indeed they could not have got access to it without my knowledge seeing that it never left my possession from the day I received it in charge! I may tell you now that it is safe that Lord Dalhousie came to my quarters before he left Lahore bringing with him a small bag made by Lady Dalhousie to hold it and after I had formally made it over to him he went into my room and fastened it round his waist under his clothes in my presence Lord Dalhousie himself wrote out the formal receipt for the jewel and there my responsibility ended and I felt it a great load taken off me! All the members of the Board of Administration were present and countersigned the document The other jewels were also sealed up and made over

Thus Runjeet Singh's famous Toshikhana of jewels is a thing of the past!

Cawnpore July 27th 1850

I am here on my way back to Futtchghur after a flying visit to Lucknow and hope to get back to-morrow

July 28<sup>th</sup> —Here I am finishing my letter in the dit bungalow I came out from Cawnpore by water in a pretty pleasure-boat I am going to buy for the Maharajah's use I could not help being reminded of our little trips in the pinnace in 49 when

you were so ill I left the boat at the Magazine Ghât, and came on in one of Thuntee Mull's carriages, for which horses had been laid for two stages, there I found my own palanquin with a double set of bearers, ready to take me on here, forty-five miles, and well they did it I think in twelve hours! I shall start this evening, when it is cool, for Futtehghur, and in the meantime try to give you a full account of my visit to old Lucknow, while it is all fresh in my memory. When I reached the Ghât, to cross the river, I met Mr. Brandon, who accompanied me, giving me an account of all that has been done since I left. All as bad as can be, between the Palace and the Residency, and, by all accounts, not much to our credit. On getting near the Chai-Bagh and passing through the city, I recognized all the old places we knew so well, and not a few familiar faces. They all recognized me, and by the time I reached the Residency I had quite a tail! There the whole Post-office establishment turned out, and after hearty greetings and salaams, I drove on towards the cantonments, where I was bound, to visit Lamb, taking a good look at our dear old home in the Residency as I passed. Your dressing-room windows seen from the Bailey Guard gate, the portico, the drawing-room, all that was visible from the road. Moonshee Purshad Narain was not at the Post-office, but hearing of my visit, he lost sight of his dignity and tore after me a couple of miles along the cantonment road! The tigers on each side of Mohsumoodowlah's gates were a familiar sight, but I cared little for anything till I caught sight of our old home (in cantonments)—the place not so well kept as it was.

Next day I went over all the rooms—drawing-room, your little green dressing-room and bedroom. I had your face before me as you lay so calmly and resignedly awaiting God's will, and there seemed so little earthly hope!

The little arbour outside, the dovecot, everything I looked upon "forbade me to forget." After visiting one or two of our old haunts, I started with Lamb for the city, could not see much of



Chapter VIII. 1850 our house as Mrs. Bell is laid up Sadoo the old carpenter the blacksmith and many others patiently waiting to see me indeed I was soon surrounded by old servants all asking for you and Edwy Baba Padre Hamilton was out but I saw Mrs H The Derogah Ahmed Ali and Azimoolah's son were waiting for me I told you I think that when at Lahore I had a letter from Lucknow telling me of my old friend Azimoolah's death he had written me only a few days before asking my advice whether he should accept an appointment offered him by the King I advised him No that he had plenty already of this world's goods and should now take rest and time to think of and prepare for the fate that must befall all men that I wished him to compare what is written in his own holy books with what our Bible says (I had given him one) and ask God to give him *light* to understand and do His will His son tells me that he declined the King's offer on getting my letter and that he died very suddenly soon after good kind old man! To resume In the afternoon Nawab Mohsumoodowlah's carriage came to fetch me as I had promised to go to his garden house (half way to the city). Here I found quite a posse of royalties and nobles waiting to meet me with my host—Monowroodowlah Momtazoodowlah the Prime Minister and others with too long names to write all evidently very much pleased to see me again! Next morning Nawab Areenoodowlah's carriage came for me to come to his Palace On the way just opposite the large tree at our gate (in cantonments) I found a crowd of people (native friends) all waiting for a *re-liquish* among others Nanack Chind the hawker and Ham Churn I had to halt for a while and afterwards all followed me in a long procession through the city much to my discomfort! But there was no getting out of it without hurting their feelings. Arrived at the Minars's I met me as I was most kind and civil The Begum at Lahore has been making all sorts of inquiries of my usual way of life the Minister ever and over repeating that I owe it to him to be at (what he calls) a *re-liquish* grateful for the power of which his still arm is, and in which He had a

splendid breakfast prepared for me, and we (for Lamb was with me) did ample justice to it after our long drive. The carriage was placed at my disposal for the day—not the famous white horses with the red tails!—and I found, waiting beside it, Mr Hyde, my old assistant, and Syed Enayet Hossein, my sub-assistant surgeon, anxious to give me their welcome.

Chapter  
VIII  
1850

I drove out to Constantia (La Martinère), and went all over it with Mr Crank and Mr Archer. I recognized in the classrooms many of our old friends among the boys, whom we used to have for a holiday. Drove to Beebeepore Palace, where we spent our honeymoon, Dil Khoosar Palace, and then back to the city to call on the Begum Malika Geytee, the old King's favourite wife. I found her *tonyon* and bearers ready waiting at the old spot, as in old times, to pick me up as I passed. The good Begum said she had not been able to sleep, nor her two boys to eat, since they heard of my arrival at Lucknow. They were very kind indeed, and I had to sit a long time telling them all about you and the Sahibzadah, as they call Edwy.

Shereefoodowlah, Ahmed Ali, and Shah Beharee Lal, the banker, came to call on me in cantonments before I left. Ahmed Ali told me, with great satisfaction, that at last the ditch has been allowed to be cut through the Residency kitchen-garden, by Colonel Sleeman, as I had proposed and designed when at Lucknow, and which Colonel Richmond and Bird had refused to sanction. He says that, in consequence, houses are springing up all along the new road, which is now a grand feature in the city. I think I have now told you of all my rambles through Lucknow, it was very pleasant and satisfactory, though I heard a good deal, not only from the natives, but from Sleeman, the Resident, which saddened me, and makes me fear for the future of the little kingdom. I fear *some* of our people have not upheld the honour of our nation in the eyes of the natives. By the way, both Nawabs Mohsumoodowlah and Monowroodowlah, have promised to pay me a visit at Futtehghur after your return.

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

Did I say that I had dined at the Residency the first evening with the Sleemans who were exceedingly kind?

FUTTEHGHUR, *July 29th 1850*

On reaching home last night I found all well except poor Khalipha, who is in a very doubtful state indeed and I almost fear he will not pull through. He has been suffering for some time from a carbuncle on the back, similar to that of which the King of Oude died. There seemed every prospect of its going on well when I left for Lucknow but it suddenly increased and although the doctor has done all that was possible I fear his strength may not hold out to carry him through poor man. Need I say to you that it will be a great grief to me to lose my faithful old friend? However I am not going to despair but take the case into my own hands and do all that can be done seeking God's blessing.

I am so sorry that I did not receive while at Lucknow a letter which the little Maharajah himself wrote me during my absence and which has followed me back. I should have liked to show it to the King's sons (Malika Geyte's boys) who have not kept up their English since I left.

Dr Login now urged Lord Dalhousie to provide the Maharajah with further educational advantages. He said that though Mr Walter Guiso had up to that time been of more use than a more experienced teacher ignorant of the vernacular would have been yet that now the Maharajah's knowledge of English was sufficient for him to derive benefit from a well qualified tutor who would know how to interest the boy and lead him on to the study of natural science. He asked

also for instructions about the Maharajah's betrothal, concerning which there was some little anxiety among the native gentlemen of his suite

In reply he received an official letter (dated April 13th, 1850), from which an extract is here given —

The Governor-General in Council conceives that it is the duty of the British Government to do all that is within its power to train up the boy in such a manner as that when *the date of his majority arrives he may take possession of the heritage which has been secured to him\**—a well-principled and accomplished gentleman, versed in the knowledge which usually is sought by the higher ranks in the East, and instructed also in the English language and literature. The same principles which are observed in the education furnished by Government to the natives of India generally, should, His Lordship in Council thinks, guide the Government in the training of the young Maharajah, both as regards the culture of his understanding and the guidance of his moral character.

These objects, it appears to His Lordship in Council, may be secured by the agency of gentlemen in India, without having recourse to the expedient suggested by you; and he therefore declines to authorize your applying to Dr Duff, or sending to England at all, for a tutor for the Maharajah

Mr Guise, who is at present affording instruction to His Highness as described by you, His Lordship in Council observes, to be well-qualified in many respects, but wanting in experience as a teacher. If, on further observation of him, you should still think that a gentleman of higher attainments is desirable, His Lordship in Council requests that you will address the Government again

---

\* The italics are not in the original.

Chapter upon the subject His Lordship in Council sanctions the salary  
VIII. 250 rupees per mensem which you have proposed for Mr Guise  
1850

I have the honour to be Sir

Your most obedient servant

FRED JAS HALLIDAY

*Officiating Secretary to the Government of India*

At the same time Lord Dalhousie writes —

My official letter lately despatched to you would apprise you that I think your plans for the Maharajah are all on too large a scale and that you seem to have contemplated for him a future much more royal than is intended. Another letter will have informed you that the Court decidedly object to his coming to England and as they desire that his wish to do so may be discouraged we must hold their instructions in view. Such of His Highness's views as have been influenced by the prospect of visiting Europe will therefore in all probability undergo a change. His education will proceed as far as His Highness will consent to carry it and a tutor sufficiently qualified should be found but if Mr Guise commands his respect and affection as you say it is very much to be desired that he should continue in his present position and I apprehend that if his acquirements are at present insufficient he would find no difficulty in qualifying himself as a teacher fully capable of instructing the Maharajah during his boyhood. The marriage of the Maharajah is a more difficult matter for us to arrange. I should object decidedly and do not wish to countenance any relations hereforth between the Maharajah and the Sikhs either by alliance with a Sikh family or sympathy with Sikh feeling. The Maharajah having personally desired to break off his betrothal with Chuttur Singh's daughter appears to have opinion of his own as to marriage.

If he chooses to marry one of the Rajah of Coorg's daughters, after having had everything about her explained to him, I can't see why he should not. There are two. One that His Highness wants to send to England, another about seven or eight, for whom he does not propose English education, both are good-looking, the second one very pretty, and, as far as birth is concerned, both are his equals and more.

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

The first part of this letter refers to Col Goodwyn's (of the Engineers) plans for improvements necessary to His Highness's residence at Futtehghur, which Lord Dalhousie considered as on too *regal* a scale; and also to the great anxiety expressed by the Maharajah to visit England.

When making arrangements for the departure from Lahore, Login, in order to secure that the personal attendants should be men of tried fidelity, suggested to the Maharajah that he should himself select them, and prove their attachment by explaining that he was leaving the Punjab for India, and that only those who cared to accompany him should go. The little fellow rather entered into the spirit of this sifting process, and amused himself at the expense of some of his people. In a memorandum on this subject Login writes —

The effect of this, as I had foreseen, was to detach a great many Sikhs from attendance on him. His retinue consisted principally of Mahomedans, and even the Sikh priests and many of the Brahmuns, whose duty it was to remain near him

Chapter under all circumstances declined to accompany him although  
 VIII. facilities were offered them for doing so and accommodation  
 1850 provided for them in camp Accordingly His Highness left  
 Lahore for Hindostan without taking with him a copy of the  
 Grunt'h (their holy book) or a single reader of it and with only one  
 Brahmin *porohut* or family priest, who before leaving arranged  
 that his tour of duty should not exceed six months when he was  
 to be relieved by one of his brethren As I was particularly  
 careful to explain to the Sikh priests (whose allowances were all  
 secured to them by Jagheers) that one of the copies of the Grunt'h  
 in use at the Palace was at their disposal and that ample  
 accommodation would be provided for them in camp in the event  
 of their accompanying the Maharajah but that I being of a  
 different religion from them would give them *no orders* on the  
 subject no blame could be attached to us for their indifference  
 to the Maharajah's instruction in the tenets of their faith

Soon after the Maharajah's arrival at Futtichgur his old  
 servant Meah Kheema a Mahomedan who had been with him  
 ever since his birth and was much attached to him (the same who  
 advised him to sign the Treaty with a good grace) claimed his  
 promise to let him return to his family and country it became  
 necessary therefore that I should appoint a trustworthy successor  
 Bhajun Lal a young Brahmin of Furruckabad was recommended  
 as being of excellent moral character and having received a good  
 education at one of the schools of the American Mission at  
 Furruckabad He could read and speak English fairly which was  
 a great recommendation to the young Maharajah who was anxious  
 to learn the language He was therefore installed as confidential  
 personal attendant on the boy who became much attached to  
 him

When I appointed him to the duty although he had high  
 recommendations as to his moral character and steadiness I was  
 unaware of the depth of his convictions on religious subjects and  
 as he continued to adhere to the ceremonial observances of a

Brahmin, in all that related to his food and clothing, he was received by all the other Hindoos as perfectly orthodox

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850.

It was a strangely constituted household, or rather series of households, which Mrs. Login, on her return from Europe, found living within the confines of "Futtehghur Park"—the name given to the Maharajah's small estate

The property originally consisted of several bungalows and residences, belonging to various owners, each surrounded by its own compound. The Maharajah, the Ranee Duknoo, Dr Login, and the native gentlemen in attendance, all occupied separate houses, and the mixture of European and Oriental arrangements was often curious.

The drawing-room reception of an evening, was an amusing sight to a lady fresh from England. During the day the young Prince was supposed to be at his studies or taking his outdoor exercise; therefore, the gentlemen of his suite were free to follow their own devices, but in the evening the Dewan, Fakeer, Sirdar, &c, made their appearance in full dress to pay their respects to their little King, and hold themselves at his disposal for a few hours.

Duleep Singh was then to be seen, seated in State on a couch or chair, with his attendants grouped around him. Each of his suite, as he entered, made low obeisance, then stood erect with folded hands, while he gave vent to the single word "Maharaj!" with the



Chapter  
VIII.  
1860

ly gentle and winning expression of countenance. Clothed, as befitted a widow, in subdued colours without ornament or jewel, the soft white muslin *doputta* draped about her head, its transparent folds shrouding the lower part of the beautiful face, while her large beseeching eyes wore a look of appeal and innocence, she might have passed for a living representation of the traditional conception of the Madonna, so often to be seen depicted by the old Italian masters.

The little Shahzadah, at this time, slept at his mother's house and took his meals there, but during the day was with the Maharajah in study and at play. He was a charming little fellow, with very pretty manners and great personal beauty inheriting the delicate, refined features and aristocratic bearing of the Rajpoots, rather than the coarser beauty of the Sikhs.

It was very amusing to see him making his daily short progress from his mother's house to the Maharajahs, to note on the one hand, the dignified bearing of the little Prince stepping daintily along in his beautiful and picturesque national costume his snowy turban fringed with gold (a becoming spot of colour being given by the crimson under turban, which confines the knot of long hair peculiar to the Sikhs), and on the other the reverential demeanour of the *uncle* and *granduncle* in attendance walking respectfully one step in the rear, answering dutifully the remarks which the child vouchsafed to them over his shoulder, and always careful to address him as "Shah

zadah-jee," while the little man accepted, as his due, the admi-  
nation he excited.

Chapter  
VIII,  
1850.

He was always ready to escort Mrs. Login on her visits to his mother, and made use of her to corroborate the wonderful stories with which he entertained the Ranee, regarding all the strange things he saw at the English lady's house, and which she had brought with her from England. Some of these latter he would insist on carrying over for his mother's inspection.

It was a pleasure to try and cheer the lonely life of this young widow, for she seldom or never went out, but lived very quietly and simply with her relatives. The Maharajah paid her stated visits, and, as the head of her family, was received by her *unveiled* in the presence of her relatives—his retinue, of course, remaining outside. It was pretty well understood by the members of the Maharajah's household, that hopes were entertained by the Ranee's people that Duleep Singh might take his brother's widow to wife—this being permitted by Sikh custom. His behaviour certainly gave no colour to this rumour, for, although he acknowledged her beauty, he did not seem attracted to her, and was chary of his visits.

One of the prettiest sights at Futteghur of an early morning, or in the cool of the evening, was the perfectly-appointed *sowarree*\* of the young Sikh Maharajah out for his daily ride. So often in the case of

---

\* Cavalcade.

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

even the best-arranged cavalcades of native Princes, the splendour of one attendant is spoiled by the dirty and untidy appearance of his fellow. One man is perhaps, mounted on a splendid Arab, while the next is on a wretched *tat* the gorgeous dresses of the leaders of the party, give place to the squalor of a rag tag and bobtail following so that the good taste which distinguished young Duleep Singh's *cortège* was all the more remarkable. He himself looked to great advantage on horseback, and though not what would be called a *daring* horseman, like many of his countrymen, yet he rode with ease and grace. When he turned out for his customary ride accompanied by the Shahzadah and his English friends, with his retinue of war like Sikh attendants handsomely-dressed and well mounted, followed by a detachment of the Governor General's Body Guard\* in their scarlet and Skinner's Irregulars in their saffron uniforms (which gave them their cognomen of "Canaries") the whole effect was both picturesque and brilliant. If instead, the Maharajah went out on his elephant with its splendid trappings and silver *howdah* or in his carriage with its four grey Arabs driven by his English coachman the same finish in every detail was observable.

There were frequent reports from the Nepal Resi

---

By an order of the Governor-General in Council, a detachment of the Body Guard consisting of twenty five cool men and two trusty native officers, remained with His Highness at Futtieghur so as to lessen the duty of the Irregular Corps "

dent of secret emissaries from the Ranee Jinda, but, as the vigilance was close, her spies were generally seized and escorted back to the frontier.

Chapter  
VIII.  
1850

It was known that the Ranee's design was to get possession of her son, though the latter showed not the least inclination to fall in with her schemes, or even to hold any communication with her, as will appear from the following extracts from an official letter of Login's —

FUTTEHGUR, April 4th, 1850

As far as I can judge, not the least desire exists on the part of the Maharajah to communicate with his mother. From all the information I could collect at Lahore from those likely to know his feelings, he appeared to dislike any reference being made to the Ranee, and never mentioned her name, though he spoke readily of his uncle Jowahir Singh, and his affection for him, but as I was anxious to ascertain his sentiments on this point myself, for my own guidance, I took a favourable opportunity to ask him regarding it. He told me he had heard nothing of her since he left Lahore, and that she had only disgraced him, "*Serif humka bud nam deah*," and on being asked if she had not been kind to him, he said she used to strike him daily!

. In explanation of her severity to him, his confidential servant told me that he was old enough to be aware of her improper conduct with Lal Singh, and had remonstrated with her, and that this had caused her harsh treatment of him.

Having lately, in the course of reading history with him, met with an allusion to his being the acknowledged, though not the reputed, son of Runjeet Singh, I told him that the conduct of the Maharanee, and the character she had acquired, exposed him to

Chapter this imputation he said 'Ah yes it was all too true! And  
VIII. he had frequently made up his mind, while at Lahore that he  
1850 should have his mother killed that she might not disgrace him!

It not yet being considered prudent to allow the Maharajah to reside in the hills during the hot weather, owing to the difficulty of providing for his safety, and as the boy seemed rather to suffer from the heat of Futteghur, Login secured for him a change of residence at the Rukha about three miles off and he used to go out there for several days at a time with his tutor and companions, taking with him his gun and hawks to have some sport.

His passion for the national sport of hawking was great. He entered into all the details of training and feeding the birds with absorbing interest but as the necessary process entailed great cruelty to animals, it was not relished by his young companions and was as far as possible discouraged by Login, who dreaded lest the indifference to suffering which it engendered, might develop that tendency to barbarity which is so inherent in the Oriental character

## CHAPTER IX.

### THE NEOPHYTE.

IN November, 1850, Login, who was anxious to be in Calcutta to receive his wife on her landing, obtained a month's leave of absence from the Governor-General, with permission to appoint Captain Campbell as his substitute *pro tem* at Futtehghur. It was whilst Login was away from his charge on this occasion, that the Maharajah took an important step, by suddenly announcing his intention of embracing the Christian religion.

Chapter  
IX.  
1850.

The first intimation of such a resolve on the part of the young Prince, was received by Login at Calcutta in a letter from the Maharajah himself.

The whole subject at once gave rise to an extensive official correspondence, of which want of space permits only a very few extracts.

On the 20th December, 1850, Captain J Campbell (7th Madras Cavalry) thus reports the fact to the Government —

. . . On Sunday the 8th inst, His Highness the Maharajah communicated to me, through Master Thomas Scott, his desire to

Chapter IX. 1850 become a Christian as he termed it. In an hour or so after this abrupt disclosure I took His Highness aside and carefully questioned him on the subject: the substance of his answer was that he had for a long time been convinced of the falsehoods put forth by the Pundits that he could no longer restrain himself from professing his belief in our Bible (which he had of late caused one of his attendants to read to him) and that he was determined to embrace the Christian faith. At His Highness's request I next day communicated the intelligence to Dr Login. His reply received this morning is to the effect that he wishes His Highness to make no change in his mode of life or religious observances which is likely to offend the prejudice of his Sikh attendants and that any declaration of his sentiments at present is altogether premature.

The avowed change in His Highness's religious sentiments I may add is regarded by the Dewan Ajoodha Pershad (himself a Brahmin but an honest old soldier) with a most impartial eye. I cannot see how without exercising a restraint over him which I conceive would have been foreign to the declared intention of Government—always to stand *neuter* in religious matters as regards the natives of the country—I could have prevented his expressing and conducting himself as he has done. I purposely delayed communicating His Highness's change of sentiments the more surely to ascertain the probability of their permanence. I have arrived at the conclusion that he is more deeply impressed with the subject than his years would seem to render likely.

On receipt of this intelligence Sir H. Elliot, the Secretary to the Government desired Login, on resuming his duties to furnish the Government with full and explicit information on all points likely to throw light on an act so singular in a boy of such

tender years, and so placed as His Highness the Maharajah still is " Chapter IX. 1850.

The Governor-General desires to be informed, says this despatch, whether you have had any reason to suppose, at any time since the Maharajah has been under your charge, that His Highness gave his attention to matters connected with the Christian faith. Whether you or Mr Gunse, or any European person who have had charge of, or may have had access to him, have introduced the subject of our religion to his notice, have talked to him upon it, or engaged him in any question regarding it? Whether the young gentlemen who have been allowed to reside with him as his playfellows (Mr Barlow or Mr Scott) have talked to him, or been talked to by him thereupon and where the Bible was procured, which His Highness says has been read to him by an attendant, and who that attendant is?

*Letter to LORD DALHOUSIE from J. S. LOGIN*

FUTTEGHUR, Jan 20th, 1851

MY LORD,

I send for your Lordship's perusal, a statement furnished to me by Bhajun Lal, the Maharajah's Brahmin attendant, who has been in His Highness's confidence ever since he began to entertain any intention of renouncing his own faith, and whose account of the circumstances, though rather quaintly expressed, may, I believe, be fully depended on. I was at first disposed to consider the Maharajah's desire to embrace Christianity as a mere sentiment, arising from the feelings of friendship and goodwill which he entertains towards us Christians, and I endeavoured to dissuade him by letter, from making any

1851.



Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

change in his mode of life with reference to his observance of caste which would be likely to give offence to his Sikh attendants until he could explain to them fully his reasons for withdrawing from them. But from the conversations I have held with him since my return to Futtehghur the shrewdness and intelligence of his remarks on religious subjects as well as from the whole account of the manner in which the conviction has arisen in his mind, I am now led to think that his impressions are much more deeply seated and I should be incurring a greater responsibility than I am prepared or willing to undertake in denying him the wished for instruction in our faith and doctrine. Although only a boy in years and in all the freshness with which he enjoys his play and amusements he is by no means so in judgment and understanding and it is almost impossible for any one who has not had an opportunity of conversing with him to give the weight to his opinions which they deserve. Although this impression of his character is shared by many here I am anxious that your Lordship should not incur the risk of being misled by any prejudice which I may have been led to entertain towards him and I would therefore respectfully solicit your Lordship to request Mr Thomason when passing through the station to take an opportunity of conversing with His Highness and to acquaint you with his opinion on the subject. The official report which I am about to submit to your Lordship will be accompanied by statements of the Dewan Ajoodha Pershad the Fakcer Zehooroodeen and Sirdar Door Singh regarding the circumstances under which the Maharajah's determination to embrace Christianity took place and will all I believe tend to prove to your Lordship's satisfaction that no improper influence has been made use of to induce him to renounce the religion of his people.

#### LORD DALHOUSIE'S *Reply*

Just received your letter of 20th enclosing statement of the Maharajah's Brahmin attendant. It contains a very singular

narrative, which will no doubt be further illustrated by the official papers you mention, but which have not yet reached me.

I have written to Mr. Thomason, requesting him to visit the Maharajah if he should pass near Futtehghur, but I doubt whether he goes in that direction

Yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE.

*Statement of LALA BHAJUN LAL to DR LOGIN*

FUTTEHGHUR, Jan. 17th, 1851.

SIR,

As you want to know the circumstances of His Highness Maharaj's breaking his caste since you left, I have the honour to explain before your honour, what all I have known from the time when I was employed in His Highness's service

When the Maharaj began to learn out of an English book, by name of "English Instructor," there were some lines at the back end of the book with few words about Christian religion. You once said to Maharaj, "These are records about our religion, if you want to read them, then read, and if you don't want, you can leave them;" but His Highness say to me, "Never mind, I will read them, because I want to know everything," then they were read. As I was with him at all the times, he used to ask me questions about our religion (*Sudras*). What is the benefit by bathing in Gunga Jee? Would it take us into heaven if we still do other wicked works and bathe in Gunga? I replied, and said, "Maharaj, it is written in our Shastras, but I do not know whether we would go into heaven or hell." Then he said, "Yes, but it depends on our works." And so on he would speak.

In the month of Barsakh (May), Maharaj began to have some of our religious books read, and in one book there was written a paragraph about a Rajah who used to make charity of ten thousand cows every morning before taking his breakfast! This

Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

way the said Maharajah used his alms of ten thousand cows during the time of his life But it came to pass that if any one of these cows came again or was bought by his servants without knowing it and the Rajah made his alms of that cow again, by this he was cast into hell Now when the Katha was over and the Pundit gone His Highness's servant Jewindah said to Maharaj See is it not impossible that now the Rajah could get so much new cow every day? Maharajah answered and said Yes! it is quite nonsense and that's why I doubt many things what the Pundit do say

Such conversations had been many times but I always found him very conscious, and of high opinion and not superstitious and of a reasonable mind.

Now Sahib after some time you went to Calcutta Maharaj saw one copy of Holy Bible into my hand and asked of me

Will you sell this over to me? I replied and said Maharaj I don't want to sell it to you but I can present you If you can read a chapter out of it without any assistance So he did read and I presented him my Bible After some short time he asked me to read to him and let him hear it and according to his orders I did read First day I read 6th chapter St Matthew and few others during whole week Sometimes Bible sometimes a few tricks \* then sometimes out of Boy's Own Book but I am sure I never heard any Englishman talking or reading him any of their religious things.

After this week then Maharaj disclosed his designs to Captain Campbell and to Mr Guise that he approves the Christian religion is true, and that of his own is not true Then the gentlemen said

Well Maharaj if you understand it with your conscience it is far better and we would be only very happy if you would understand it " But I well know and can certify that whatever

---

Legend main and improving tales, were resorted to by his attendants to amuse him

Maharaj did say or do, he did it by his pleasure and opinion, but not by any man's beguiling

When I did ask Maharaj, "Do you really believe, or merely joking?" he then answered, and said, "I really do believe, and I will embrace the Christian religion, because long before mine designation was to do this "

After two or three days, on Sunday, I came back from my city house at twelve (because I often go to city on Saturday evening, and come back on Sunday at midday) Maharaj told to me, "Bhajan Lal, I have become a Christian " I then say, "What did you eat?" He answered and said, "I have not eaten anything, but my heart is changed See now, I have not gone to play, nor like to play, on this day " But when cool of evening came, he went out hawking with his favourite hawk When he came back into the house I asked him, "Maharaj, how is it that you told me that you would no more play on this day, but you went and played with your hawks?" He answered, and said, "I forgot, and am very sorry for that " After two days more he began to say that he would take tea with Tommy Scott and Robbie Carshore I said, "Very well, do whatever you like, but do only that thing which you well know will do good for you at the end " On Wednesday I had some work in the city, and I took his leave at twelve and went, and when I came back at evening, I found Maharaj, T Scott, and R Carshore, in Maharaj's room, sitting at a table, and all tea plates were arranged on the table, and *he* (the Maharaj) was boiling the water As soon as he saw me, he came out of the room, and told me, "See now, I am going to make tea with mine own hands, and then we all three take together " I answered, and said, "Very good, Maharaj, do whatever you like, but I tell you one thing, that you must not take tea, or do anything, until Dr Login Sahib comes back." He replied, "That you do not know if Dr Login will allow me to do it, and then I will be very sorry!" After this he went and made the tea with his own hands, and took with T Scott

Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

Chapter IX. and B. Carshore but all whatever he did he did with his  
 1851 pleasure and was very anxious if Dr Login will like him to do  
 his wilful work. He will be very much pleased and glad to hear  
 if you will allow him to break his caste and he will be very  
 happy in breaking his caste

Sir as far as I know I have related with justice

Your most obedient humble servant,

BHAJUN LAL

*Extracts from J. S. LOGIN'S Official Report*

GUTHENHUR, Jan. 27th 1851

Previous to my departure from Calcutta on the 15th November last I had no reason to suppose that His Highness had given any attention to matters connected with the Christian faith although I had certainly observed that neither the Sikh nor the Hindoo religion had taken any firm hold of his mind. On several occasions he has expressed his doubts of the truth of the stories read or related to him by his Pundits from their Shastras and made some very shrewd remarks on the superstitious observances both of Sikhs and Hindoos and on the selfishness and ignorance of their priesthood. As an indication of the bent of his mind I may particularly mention one instance —

About a fortnight before I left for Calcutta he came to my room with his attendant early one morning, as was frequently his custom while I was reading by candle-light and the conversation happening to turn upon the subject of the position of the earth in the solar system he asked me to show him how an eclipse of the moon took place. This I attempted to do in a very simple way and apparently succeeded so much to his satisfaction that he exclaimed in Hindostani "Wait for two or three years until I have learnt all about it. Won't I puzzle the Pundits!"

As I carefully abstained from encouraging or objecting to any remarks of the kind, nothing more was, I believe, said on the subject

Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

During my absence at Calcutta, His Highness frequently wrote to me, both in English and in Urdu

In the note of the 2nd December, herewith submitted\* in original, he first made known to me, that his Brahmin attendant, Bhajun Lal, had been reading the Holy Scriptures to him, and he desired that I would bring him a copy of the Bible.

On the 7th December, His Highness again wrote to me,† that

\* FUTTIHGUR, 2nd Dec, 1850

MY DEAR GOOD FRIEND,

I hope you continue quite well, and that I shall soon receive another letter from you

We are all well here Captain Campbell presided at our examination, and I got twenty three marks, but Shahzadah only got ten, Tommy seventeen, and Robby eighteen

Will you kindly send me a nice Bible, for I like very much to read, because yesterday Bhajun Lal was reading to me, and also do send me a chest of fine tools, for carpenter's work

Yours very sincerely,

DULEEP SINGH,

*Maharajah*

P S Bhajun Lal's most respectful compliments, may reach to my master's honour

† FUTTIHGUR, Dec 7th, 1850

MY DEAR GOOD FRIEND,

I was very glad to receive your kind letter I am quite well, and I hope that you found Mrs Login quite recovered, on her arrival in Calcutta I amuse myself every evening by making Bhajun Lal read to me

I have begun the Bible, and generally hear one or two chapters

Yours very sincerely,

DULEEP SINGH,

*Maharajah*

Bhajun Lal's best service to his master, prays for his master's safety and good health Everything is going on rightly His attention towards the hawks is not as you left, but it is increasing towards his lessons

He has been so much pleased upon his servant, that he has presented a *safah* of *jhallers* (mushin turban with gold fringe)

Excuse me if anything incorrectly written.

Chapter IX. 1851 he continued to hear the Bible read by his attendant Bhajun Lal, and he enclosed a note from the latter on the subject

This was followed on the 9th inst by another note\* in his own handwriting in which His Highness declares his determination to embrace the Christian religion as he had long doubted the truth of the one he had been brought up in and was convinced of the truth of the religion of the Bible which he had lately made his attendant Bhajun Lal read to him This note was enclosed in a letter from Captain Campbell acquainting me that a similar declaration had been made by the Maharajah to him and that the servants were aware of the avowal

In reply to Captain Campbell's letter I expressed my regret that the avowal should have been made known so hastily and before sufficient time had elapsed to ascertain the depth and permanence of the Maharajah's impressions on the subject as from the suddenness of the announcement I couldn't at the time consider them other than a mere sentiment arising from the feelings of friendship and goodwill which he entertained towards us Christians I at the same time wrote to the Maharajah advising him to make no change in his mode of life with respect to the

FUTTERGHUR, Dec 9th, 1850.

MY DEAR GOOD FRIEND,

I hope you are quite well, and Mrs Login also I am well and happy You will be surprised to learn of my determination to embrace the Christian religion. I have long doubted the truth of the one I was brought up in and am convinced of the truth of the religion of the Bible which I have of late made Bhajun Lal read portions of to me

I have asked Captain Campbell to write to you on this subject.

Yours very sincerely

DULEEP SINGH

Maharajah

Bhajun Lal, who acted as secretary to his master has added, it will be seen, some quaint postscripts of his own to these letters. Their English is in somewhat odd contrast to that of the letters themselves, which were dictated to him by the Maharajah.

observances of caste, which would be likely to give offence to his Sikh attendants, until he was able fully to explain his reasons for withdrawing from them .

Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

From the conversations I have held with the Maharajah he appears from a very early age to have been led to entertain doubts of the truth of the Sikh and Hindoo religions, and to have been led to consider Mahomedanism or Christianity in a more favourable light. As his age increased, and he was brought more into communication with Christians, his prejudices in favour of their religion became gradually stronger, although he was but very imperfectly acquainted with the doctrines which they held, and indeed had given but little consideration to the subject.

Since his arrival at Futtehghur these sentiments have continued to gain strength, and have certainly not been discouraged by his Brahmin attendant, Bhajun Lal, a young man of very respectable connections in the city of Furruckabad, who has been educated at the public school in the city under charge of the Rev Messrs Macaulay and Scott of the American Presbyterian Mission, and whom, from his intelligence, good character, and knowledge of the English language, I was led to place near the Maharajah on the departure of his old servant Kurreem Bux Meah Kheema, not knowing at the time his sentiments were so favourably disposed towards Christianity, as he continued, and still continues, to live in the strict observance of Hindooism.

Although previous to my departure for Calcutta no indications had been observed by myself or Mr Guise, or the native gentlemen who are in attendance upon His Highness, of his intention to embrace the Christian faith, unless the casual remark made by him to Mr Guise, and his desire to read the portion of his book bearing upon the doctrines of Christianity, may be so considered, I find that the Maharajah had upwards of a month before, under a promise of secrecy, mentioned to his playfellow, Thomas Scott, that it was his desire "to become a Christian, as he did not believe the Hindoo religion! and that if I, as his guardian, made any



Chapter IX. 1851. objections just now he would wait until he embarked for England, when he would tell me that as his caste had been broken, I could not refuse him permission! but up to that time his mind does not appear to have been perfectly made up and it was only after he heard some portions of Scripture read to him by his Brahmin attendant that he was led to declare his desire to adopt the Christian faith

In some respects it is a fortunate circumstance that the Maharajah's determination should have been expressed at a time when his knowledge of the English language was so imperfect as to render it impossible for any instruction on religious subjects to be conveyed to him through that medium, without being at the same time explained in Hindostani, and that the native gentlemen who have been in attendance on His Highness as well as all his native servants have thus been enabled to judge whether any attempts have been made to interfere with his belief in an improper way I therefore enclose statements\* written in the vernacular by the three native gentlemen in attendance and by His Highness's own family priest or *porohut* testifying that in their opinion no undue influence has been exerted, and His Highness's resolution is entirely spontaneous

The Brahmin Bhajun Lal though still professing Hindooism

In the above report were also enclosed statements from—

The Dewan Ajoodha Pershad

The Fakcer Zehoorooden (Urdu and Persian tutor to His Highness);

The Sirdar Boor Singh

The Porohut Golib Rai, family priest of the Maharajahs of Lahore;

Bhajun Lal, Brahmin attendant of His Highness.

Mr Wmter Guise the Maharajah's English tutor in his statement, remarks (after saying that neither he nor any European having access to him had ever been conversations with him on the subject of the Christian religion): That His Highness was actuated by any such motive as the desire of pleasing those placed over him is highly improbable when it is considered that he studiously sought to conceal from them his determination long after he had communicated it to Master Scott, whom he bound not to reveal it."

is evidently well disposed towards the Christian faith, and, I believe, anxious to speak the truth without reserve.

Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

The Fakeer Zehoorodeen is equally honest and straightforward in his statement, and, being a Mahomedan, by no means disposed to view the change in an unfavourable light. I had made arrangements to allow him to return to his family at Lahore, on my return from Calcutta, and he was naturally very anxious to rejoin his friends there, one of his children having died in his absence, but in consequence of what has occurred, he has voluntarily, and without the least hint from me, requested permission to remain for some time longer with the Maharajah, in order that he may show the opinion which he entertains on the subject.

The Dewan Ajoodhea Pershad, though also a man of as much moral courage and honesty as I have ever met with among Brahmins, and certainly by no means bigoted in his creed, still continues to profess the Hindoo religion, and it is but natural that he should be less disposed to notice the maturity of the Maharajah's judgment on such matters, than the Fakeer has been, and should be more guarded in his statements.

The Sirdar Boor Singh's statement is as explicit on the subject as could be desired. I understand that, when the Maharajah's Punjabi servants asked him to join in a petition to Captain Campbell, he told them that had any compulsion been used towards the Maharajah, in regard to his change of creed, or any undue influence been exerted, he would have considered it his duty to have remonstrated, but as the declaration had been made of the Maharajah's own free will, and his whole heart was set upon carrying out his determination, he could not in any way interfere.

It must not, however, be overlooked that the Sirdar, on account of his more intimate connection with the Shahzadah Sheo Deo Singh, may not be disposed to regret the step taken by the Maharajah; but at the same time, in proof of his confidence that no

Chapter undue advantage is taken by us as Christians in the instruction  
IX. of either the Maharajah or Shahzadah, he continues to be in every  
1851 respect satisfied with the manner in which the latter is instructed.

In expressing his satisfaction at the manner in which facilities have been afforded to him and to the Ranee the mother of the Shahzadah Sheo Deo Singh, in the exercise of their religious rites he has I need scarcely remark, somewhat overstated the case

The Pundit Golab Rai the family *porohut* of the Maharajahs of Lahore though naturally disappointed at the Maharajah's renunciation of Hindooism bears testimony to the absence of any attempt to influence His Highness on the subject

From a perusal of the whole evidence I trust it will appear to the satisfaction of his Lordship that no improper influence has been used by myself or any one who has had access to His Highness to induce him to adopt the Christian faith.

While I have been fully sensible of the responsibility of my position with respect to His Highness and earnestly desirous that he should be educated in such a manner as to reflect no discredit upon me as a Christian I have not been forgetful of the delicate nature of the duties entrusted to me by the Government but have constantly borne in mind that in his case the principles of Christian morality which it was my desire he should acquire during his tender years could only be set before him by a consistent example This I have endeavoured to do so far as my infirmities of temper and judgment have permitted trusting that God would do the rest

I have often felt the constraint imposed on me in being unable to point out the true and only source of every good and in being obliged to content myself with instructing him so far as I could in the principles of true morality without reference to the source from whence they came

I have I believe answered briefly and incidentally any questions he or his attendants in his hearing have casually asked me on

points connected with the Christian faith, but I cannot recall to mind any particular instance, and the only occasions on which I remember to have touched on the subject of our Scriptures in the Maharajah's presence were shortly after I received charge of His Highness at Lahore, and again about three months since

Chapter  
IX.  
1851

On the former occasion, the Maharajah had come to my room with his attendant, Meah Kheema, and other Mahomedan and Hindoo servants, one Sunday morning, and the conversation happening to turn, on the subject of the extent and greatness of the British power and dominions, I took occasion to say that "it was not from any superiority in ourselves, as men, that this took place, but solely from the goodness of God towards us, as a nation, and that so long as we acknowledged this with all our hearts, and acted as men who felt the responsibility of our position, as stewards of God's bounty, we should continue to prosper," and with reference to the increase of population in England, as compared with the Eastern nations, and to our own particular position in India, I pointed out to Meah Kheema and the other Mahomedans that the Prophet Noah had said, "God shall enlarge Japhet, he shall dwell in the tents of Shem, and Canaan shall be his servant," and I told them, that I believed it to be in fulfilment of that prophecy that we were now among them. I remember that those who were present seemed much pleased with the conversation, and that Meah Kheema asked to be allowed to take the Persian Bible, in which I had pointed out the passage, to have it read to him, but whether he explained any portion of it to the Maharajah, who did not understand Persian, I do not know . . .

With respect to the book, the "English Instructor" mentioned by Bhajun Lal, in which some pages at the end refer to the tenets of Christianity, the book in question was one used in the school here by Bhajun Lal and his brother. I have also allowed the Maharajah, and Shahzadah, to use the books of the Scottish School Book Association, along with their schoolfellows,

Chapter  
IX.  
1851

Masters Scott and Carshore as being extremely well suited to beginners and in these also some portions having reference to Christianity occur which the Maharajah has voluntarily read, but from all I can learn up to the time at which he commenced having the Bible read to him he had not paid any attention to their purport and they have not in any way influenced his mind towards the step he has taken

I must confess however that had the Maharajah asked my permission to read the Bible, I should have offered no objection, and that I would have given him equal permission to read the Koran the Grun'th the Shastras or any other book of the kind which is not considered immoral in the same way as he had read the Mahomedan Kureema with his Urdu teacher before I took charge of him

Considering the relative character and disposition of His Highness as compared with Master Scott to whom he first made known his intention of becoming a Christian I cannot but consider the latter to have been altogether passive in the matter or if he did exert any influence over the Maharajah's mind in leading him to adopt the same faith it could only have arisen from His Highness's friendly regard for the boy and the admiration of the honesty and truthfulness of his character which he has frequently expressed

In all that relates to the religious ceremonies of His Highness I have uniformly observed the strictest neutrality and have left him and his people to the free exercise of their own wishes on the subject

When on one occasion in May last His Highness expressed a wish to have his Pundit to read prayers to him daily as he observed was customary with us this was at once arranged and it was during the attendance of the Pundit for that purpose that the circumstances occurred which are related by Rhasjun Lal I had been equally careful to avoid giving offence to the prejudices of the Maharajah and his Sikh attendants in so far as lay in my

power, in other matters, forbidding the use of beef at my table, or the practice of smoking tobacco near the house, and from all I can learn, the care which I had taken in this respect has been fully appreciated by them. Chapter IX.  
1851.

I have, on several occasions, proposed to the Maharajah to inquire for a native boy of respectable rank, to be educated along with him, but he has uniformly declined any offer of the kind, preferring to have only English boys with him. . . .

Ever since the assassination, in his presence, of his uncle, the Sirdar Jowahir Singh, at Meean Meer, by the Sikh soldiery, the Maharajah has entertained a dread of his own countrymen, and a dislike to their religion and all connected with them. This feeling towards them he was, of course, obliged to conceal, until circumstances enabled him to declare his sentiments, but ever since I have taken charge of him, he has spoken out freely on the subject, and on every opportunity has shown his prejudice against them.

For several years past, little care appears to have been taken to instruct him in the principles of the Sikh religion, for, excepting what he might pick up when the Grunt'h was read to him occasionally (to which he gave but little attention), he has been left very much to chance for information on the subject. He, however, continued to be regular in the observance of such Hindoo ceremonies as are customary among the Sikhs, and to hear portions of their sacred books read to him by his Pundits.

After these occasions, it not infrequently happened that the subject of the stories read to him were discussed in private with his favourite attendant, Meah Kheema, and his son, who as Mussulmaun, could not always conceal their disbelief in them, or avoid giving encouragement to the doubts which arose in His Highness's mind on the subject.

While his prejudices against his own people and their faith were thus gaining strength, circumstances had occurred in his outward position to lead him to consider the English his most sincere friends, and the kindness and consideration which he

Chapter IX. 1851 experienced from Lord Hardinge, Sir Henry Lawrence, Lord Gough, and Sir Frederick Currie disposed him most favourably towards them, and to other Englishmen who had access to him and he fully appreciated their cordiality and friendly feelings, although sometimes expressed with less ceremony than he had been accustomed to

These sentiments of friendly confidence have been confirmed and I am happy to think rendered permanent by the cordial and kindly reception which His Highness met with from the Most Noble the Governor General at Lahore and by the kind interest which his Lordship has always taken in his welfare and I do not think that there is a single person within Her Majesty's dominions who is at present more convinced that the annexation of the Punjab was forced on us by circumstances than the Maharajah or more satisfied as to the friendly sincerity of the English Government towards him.

By far the greater number of the old servants who accompanied him to Futtahghur were Mussulmaun only a very few Sikhs who were necessary on the establishment being apparently disposed to come

Among those who had the option of accompanying the Maharajah were the four or five Sikhs priest *Granthies* in regular attendance upon His Highness.

Before leaving Lahore I sent for them and explained that they were at liberty to join His Highness if they wished and to take a copy of the *Granth* with them which was left in their charge for the purpose and I stated that I would make arrangements for their comfortable accommodation in the event of their doing so. They did not however avail themselves of the opportunity afforded them and His Highness left the Punjab without any religious attendant of his own sect or any copy of their sacred book, nor had he expressed the least desire since he left Lahore to have the want supplied.

One of the four Brahmin *porohuts* or family priests did

however, remain in attendance on His Highness, after making arrangements with the other three—who conjointly hold *jagheers* for the performance of the duty—that they should relieve each other every six months. On the expiry of that time, the priest in attendance, Golāb Rai, wrote to the others to relieve him as had been arranged among them, but they very decidedly refused to do so, and he has, in consequence, had to remain in Hindostan, much longer than he at first intended.

. . Ever since the Maharajah's determination has been openly avowed, he has been most anxious to obtain Christian instruction, and he has even requested to join us at family prayers, which I have not considered myself justified in preventing.

That his desire to embrace Christianity is ardent and sincere, no one who has had an opportunity of conversing with him on the subject can have any doubt; while the manner in which he has refused any longer to conform to Hindoo ceremonies, and the reasons which he has given for the step he has taken, evince a maturity of judgment far beyond his age.

Though anxious to lay aside all observances of caste, and to adopt European customs, he has not done so, in consequence of the advice which I gave him in the first instance—not to give unnecessary offence to his Hindoo attendants. But he only requires to know that no objection will be offered on the part of Government, to do this at once.

*Letter from J. S. LOGIN to LORD DALHOUSIE, accompanying the Official Report.*

FUTTEHGHUR, Jan , 1851

MY LORD,

. . I regret to find that your Lordship supposes, from the circumstance that I forwarded Colonel Goodwyn's estimate and plans, that I contemplate for the Maharajah a future much more royal than is intended. So far as it has been in my power,



Chapter IX, 1851 I have endeavoured gradually to wean his mind from any desire for royal state and to render him happy and contented under his altered circumstances Under the impression that it was desirable to lead His Highness to consider Futtehghur as his permanent residence and knowing from my experience at Lucknow, that the amount was far below the sum frequently expended by *private* native gentlemen on their residences (the property adjoining that of His Highness at Futtehghur formerly occupied by the late Hakim Mhendî having cost nearly double the amount) I certainly so far approved of Colonel Goodwyn's designs as to submit them to your Lordship but now that your Lordship's wishes are made known to me I have at once pointed out to His Highness the kind consideration shown by your Lordship in desiring that no expensive improvements be made on his residence at present in order that he may when he comes of age have it in his power without much loss to change his residence should he choose to do so

Regarding the wish of His Highness to visit England, I have, in accordance with your instructions endeavoured to wean him from the idea at present by pointing out to him that during his state of pupillage a visit would scarcely be considered *voluntary* by the people of India and that even among ourselves it would be viewed in a much more complimentary light if postponed until he came of age and able to exercise his own free will in the matter Although he quite agreed in the reasonableness of the objection he is still as eager as ever to carry out his intention and frequently speaks of his visit, and no later than yesterday he told me of a dream he had on the subject and described all that had occurred to him on landing in England! With regard to the very important subject of his marriage I think that it is likely owing to his altered position from what has lately occurred that he may be more desirous to consult his own wishes and inclination on the subject of the selection of a wife than he was before so it may be dropped for the present

I had the pleasure of seeing the Rajah of Coorg and his daughter, at Benares, on my way up, and although I did not make the least allusion to the connection, I could perceive that it was not likely to be displeasing to him. The Rajah had just had an offer of marriage for her, from Jung Bahadoor, and was rather curious to ascertain how he stood in the estimation of the people of England; and from what he said, I did not gather that he was favourably disposed to him.

Chapter  
IX.  
1851

The Lieut -Governor N W P (Mr. Thomason) has just arrived at this station, and I have asked him to take an opportunity of conversing freely with His Highness on the subject of the wish he has expressed, to become a Christian.

I remain,

Yours, etc ,

J. S LOGIN.

LORD DALHOUSIE to DR LOGIN

CAMP, JUBBEE, *Feb. 10th, 1851*

I have not been able to reply before. Under all the circumstances, communication must be made to the Court of Directors, and until I get their reply, no final instructions can be given you. I shall be happy to attend to any proposals that may come for building at Futtehghur. Whatever may be done, must be regulated by what will be the future amount of the Maharajah's income, and not by any reference to what may have been done by wealthy gentlemen from Lucknow. With respect to marriage, I agree with you, that there is no necessity for haste in concluding a betrothal with an unmarried child, in the singular circumstances in which the Maharajah now stands. I am glad you have asked Mr. Thomason to see the boy.

Chapter IX.  
1851

*Extract from despatch of SECRETARY to GOVERNMENT acknowledging  
J S LOGIN'S Official Report*

CAMP MURUM Feb 17th 1851

*The Governor General is entirely satisfied by this statement and by the documents transmitted in support of it that no improper influence had either directly or indirectly been used by you or by any of the English gentlemen who have been connected with His Highness's establishment to induce His Highness to abjure his original faith and to profess Christianity His Lordship requests that his conviction on this head may be made known to you and may by you be communicated to the others*

In a matter of so much moment and one so singular as the adoption of the Christian faith by a native Prince under our immediate guardianship the final instructions to which the Governor General has alluded cannot be issued without a reference to the Home authorities. A communication will be addressed to them by the next mail and an immediate reply will be solicited.

In the meantime you will be so good as to acquaint the Maharajah that His Highness's desire to embrace the Christian faith has been communicated to the Governor General. You will represent to His Highness that to relinquish the faith of his own people and to adopt another creed is a step of so great importance that at his early age it is the duty of the Government of India which is charged with the care and nurture of his youth to see that whatever His Highness may do shall be done deliberately and with a full knowledge of the nature and effect of his acts. You are to add that under these circumstances his Lordship desires to acquaint the highest authorities in England of the intention which His Highness has expressed and to obtain their instructions for his guidance.

Until these instructions shall be received, and until they shall be made known to the Maharajah, his Lordship trusts that His Highness will not make any public declaration of his wishes, that he will not throw aside the restrictions of caste, or needlessly disregard the religious observances he has hitherto respected

. Should the Maharajah continue to express an earnest desire to read the Bible, as a portion of his daily instruction, the Governor-General does not consider himself justified in directing that his wish shall be opposed, if it be manifestly sincere and earnest. But instruction in the tenets of the Christian faith should not at present be thrust upon him, if he should appear indifferent on the subject. For the same reason you will advise the Maharajah to discontinue his attendance at worship in your family, of which His Highness forms no part.

You will understand that, in communicating these instructions, the Governor-General does not convey any intimation of an intention to oppose the adoption of the Christian faith by the Maharajah, if his Lordship should be left free to proceed on his own judgment. The Governor-General's object is to prevent the risk of His Highness acting in this matter precipitately, and on the mere impulse intelligible in a boy of good capacity and strong will, who has been placed in the peculiar circumstances which you have well described in your statement, now before his Lordship.

At the same time, the Governor-General feels it his duty not to act finally on his own judgment, in a case so important and so novel, without submitting it for the consideration of the Honourable Court of Directors in the first instance.

*Extract from a letter to LORD DALHOUSIE*

The Maharajah quite agrees that it is wise and proper that he should, at present, make no changes that could possibly offend his people, until he has proved the strength and reality of his con-

Chapter IX. 1851  
 victions but he is anxious to show that he can do this without affecting his desire to become a Christian. He had of his own accord before the receipt of your Lordship's letter discontinued his attendance at our family prayers as he said he thought it hypocritical to appear to join in a service which from his imperfect knowledge of English he did not sufficiently understand but he continues to read the Bible regularly and have it explained to him. In his determination to discontinue the observances of the Hindoo religion with the exception of such conformity to the restrictions of caste as do no violence to his feelings no change whatever has taken place.

On the last occasion of the Sinkrat he distinctly and emphatically in my presence and that of the Dewan refused to give the usual order to the Brahmin treasurer to pay his customary offering and desired that the amount (500 rupees) should be set aside on the first of every month for charitable purposes.

Since he declared his intention to be a Christian a marked change has taken place in his habits he tries to apply his mind to his studies and shows a wish to acquire knowledge. No desire has been shown by him to attract notice by the step he has taken on the contrary every circumstance connected with his determination to embrace Christianity tends to show the absence of any unworthy motive in doing so and he is equally free from any display of his sentiments as from a desire to conceal them although he does not hesitate to express them with sufficient boldness when occasions arise.

J S L.

On the 11th June an official letter from Sir Henry Elliot conveyed to Dr Login the acquiescence of the Court of Directors in the desire of the Maharajah which was couched in the following terms —

We concur entirely in the views expressed by Lord Dalhousie on this occasion, and we authorize him at his discretion, appreciating most fully the wisdom of his Lordship's resolution, that in following out these views no undue publicity, no ostentatious announcement would be permitted

Commenting on this letter of the Court, Sir H Elliot says —

It is the Governor-General's wish, that if the Maharajah's declared desire shall not have been a transient fancy, he should henceforth receive every aid and guidance which can be given to him in following out the happy choice to which he has been led by the light his heart has received.

But it is his Lordship's positive command, that this object shall be carried into effect without any parade or publicity, without any circumstances of excitement or notoriety, which may either lead the boy to fancy himself an object of extraordinary interest, or may admit of his being made so by others among us

The introduction of any such circumstances as these, in connection with the step which the Maharajah has taken, could only be injurious to himself, and tend to qualify our assurance of his singleness of purpose, and of the reality of his convictions

His Lordship relies on your prudence and judgment for giving effect to these views of the Government of India, respecting the future religious education of Maharajah Duleep Singh, by conducting it in a manner marked only by its earnestness and simplicity There is nothing which requires to be concealed At the same time the Governor-General trusts that all newspaper paragraphs, all communications to religious periodicals, which are likely to be put forth, announcing the conversion of a native Prince, may, so far as in you lies, be discouraged and prevented

Chapter IX. 1851. It is his Lordship's earnest hope that the boy's spontaneous wish may prove to be rooted and stable and that he may imbibe with eagerness and perseverance that knowledge of Christian truth which he has thus early and unexpectedly sought. To that end our best and faithful exertions should now be steadily directed. We should content ourselves with the consciousness that we are labouring for good and with the hope that it will in the end be fully and permanently secured. But in the meantime his Lordship enjoins upon all concerned that they abstain from trumpeting abroad either the nature of their labours or anticipations of their issue.

LORD DALHOUSIE to MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH

*SIMLA Aug 2nd 1851*

I had the honour of receiving the letter which your Highness addressed to me lately and learnt with sincere pleasure the satisfaction your Highness had experienced on receiving the reply of the Court of Directors to your wish for full instruction in the truths of the Christian religion.

Your Highness will readily understand that my wish to refer the subject to the Court of Directors did not proceed from any reluctance on my part to meet your views still less from any doubt of the wisdom of the step you wished to take. I was desirous only that it should be clearly seen that the act was your own springing from your own heart and that you had not been led into it hastily and while you were yet too young to have deeply considered the importance of your act. I rejoice to learn that your Highness remains firm in your desire to be instructed in the doctrines of the Bible and that you have resolved to embrace a faith whose teaching if duly practised by the help of God will tend to increase your happiness in this life and will secure it in another that is to come.

During the next cold weather I propose to return to Calcutta. On my way I hope to have the pleasure of meeting your Highness again, and I will not fail to make known to Dr. Login, when I am likely to be in the neighbourhood of Futtehghur. Your desire to visit Agra and Delhi is very proper, they are both of them noble cities, containing some works unsurpassed in beauty in any country in the world. The sight of them will afford your Highness great pleasure. Your Highness has much to see in your own country before the visit to England, which your Highness so earnestly desires to accomplish, can be undertaken with full advantage to yourself.

Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

With every good wish for your health and happiness,

I have the honour to be, very respectfully,

Your Highness's faithful friend,

DALHOUSIE

*Letter to LORD DALHOUSIE*

MY LORD,

At the request of His Highness the Maharajah Duleep Singh, I have the honour to enclose an autograph letter to your Lordship's address, which the Maharajah has drawn up with the assistance of his Brahmin attendant. I have been anxious that the letter should be as much as possible his own production, and have left him to express his own sentiments as far as he could. I have every reason to believe that the satisfaction he has expressed at the permission being granted to him to be educated in the Christian faith is most cordial and sincere, and that he is fully determined, under the blessing of God, to avail himself of every opportunity afforded him of acquiring knowledge on the subject.

Although, as I have already reported, the Maharajah has



Chapter naturally shown a preference for the ministerial visits of the Rev  
IX. Gopee Nanth Nundy he has since I explained to him your  
1851 Lordship's desire that every ostentatious publicity on the subject  
of his religious instruction should be avoided requested that the  
chaplain at this station (Dr Carshore) should be invited to visit  
him and he has accordingly done so

His principal reason for selecting Dr Carshore, in preference to the other clergy here has been that the latter are supported by an American missionary society and could not well have avoided reference to his progress in their periodical reports There is also another advantage in this arrangement inasmuch as it will enable the Lord Bishop at any time to select a judicious and well-qualified successor to Dr Carshore when he leaves Futteh ghur With reference to the future training of His Highness in our Christian faith your Lordship will excuse me for stating how cordially I shall endeavour to act in the spirit of the instructions which I have received on the subject as they are in every respect such as I have wished them to be Your Lordship may rest assured that it is my anxious desire to avoid all ostentatious publicity in everything relating to the Christian education of His Highness and to conduct it in a manner marked only by its earnestness and simplicity as your Lordship requires that it should be done To enable me however to carry out these views effectually it may be desirable that I should in the first instance make known to the Lord Bishop the whole circumstances of the case by sending for his private perusal a copy of my report and of the commands I have received on the subject and thus ensure his advice and assistance. As I have for many years been personally known to the Bishop and have frequently corresponded with him I can do this now the more easily and without attracting any notice. I shall be glad to receive instructions on this point as I hear from Dr Carshore that inquiries have already been made by the Archdeacon on the subject.

Having requested the Maharajah to state fully all his wishes to your Lordship, he has not omitted the opportunity of making known his anxiety to go to the hills next hot season, or his wish to visit England a short time hence

Chapter  
IX.  
1851.

I have tried to restrain his wishes in both these cases, in the former, by telling him that no such comfortable accommodation can be available for him at any of the hill stations as he now has at Futtehghur, and that if permitted to go, he could only take with him a very small establishment. But he readily enough makes up his mind to this, as he rather takes pleasure in dispensing with a large retinue, and in adopting European habits. The reasons he assigns for his wish to go to the hills are, that he can apply more steadily to his studies in a cooler climate, and can have more English boys for playfellows. Although, in deference to the prejudices of his Hindoo attendants, he continues to eat only such food as he has hitherto been accustomed to, cooked by his Brahmin servants, he is anxious to have it served up in the European manner, and has asked me to allow a Mahomedan table-attendant to instruct his people, and be present to point out what is required at his meals. The Punjabi servants who remain in his kitchen, show no objections to these innovations, and readily adopt them, being much less prejudiced than the Hindostani bearers.

The Maharajah himself is quite aware that particular rules in respect to meats and drinks are not essential to Christianity, but, seeing how much importance is attached to these matters by the Hindoos, he does not wish to give them offence unnecessarily, and refrains from the use of beef.

The Maharajah is very anxious to have the opportunity of meeting your Lordship, when passing down the country next cold season, and hopes you will give him the pleasure of receiving you at Futtehghur

J. S. L.

Chapter  
IX.  
1851

LORD DALHOUSIE to DR. LOGIN

SIMLA July 31st 1851

The Bishop's *advice* is all very well but I pray you to observe, that I will not allow any authoritative interference in the direction of the Maharajah's religious education either by the Chaplain or by the Bishop whether directly over the boy or over you Whatever is done, must be done *through* you as the responsible superintendent of His Highness in all respects and must be reported to Government.

If His Highness strongly urges going to the hills next hot weather I do not know that it need be refused but he can't have such guards and escort there as at Futtehghur and I should certainly object to this station, with its large community

I do not know whether my march downwards will bring me actually to Futtehghur but it will give me great pleasure to arrange so that I may meet His Highness somewhere There can be no objection to his visiting Agra and Delhi or travelling somewhere next cold season.

Many letters, at this time passed between the Governor General and Dr Login regarding the Maharajah's progress and on Lord Dalhousie notifying his intention of visiting Futtehghur, in order to meet His Highness, preparations were made to receive the Governor General and Lady Dalhousie with due honour

Up to that time, Duleep Singh had made no change in his custom of having *his meals served* to him separately, but he now expressed a wish to sit at table with

Lord and Lady Dalhousie, on the occasion of the ladies and gentlemen of the station being invited to dine at his house, in order to meet the Viceregal party. He was also very anxious to be excused from attendance at the public durbar, or *levée*, held by the Governor-General for the reception of natives of rank, as he wished to attract as little notice as possible. Special arrangements were therefore made for him to be received privately and without ceremony

Chapter  
IX  
1851.

LORD DALHOUSIE to J S. LOGIN

CAMP, ALLAHGUNGA, *Dec 20th*, 1851

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I shall be happy to see you in camp on the 24th. On the 25th (Christmas Day) we shall reach Futtehghur. I shall be very happy to receive the Maharajah privately, if he prefers it, and we shall be equally happy to dine with you as you propose. The question of his presence at table I leave entirely to his own wishes and feelings, whatever conclusion he may form, I shall be equally content

Yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE

P S I expect to meet at Futtehghur, M Rochussen, late Governor-General of Java. Lord Stanley may probably be there also. If either of them should arrive before me, you would very greatly oblige me by rendering them any attention you can

Yours, &c ,

D

Chapter  
IX.  
1851

LORD DALHOUSIE *to the* MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH

CAMP ALLAHGUNGHA Dec 24th 1851

It has given me sincere pleasure to hear from Dr Logie of your Highness's good health and to receive from him the very kind and friendly letter which you have done me the favour of addressing to me. It will afford great pleasure both to Lady Dalhousie and myself to dine with your Highness on Saturday next and during the time we remain at Puttoghur I shall hope to have the honour of seeing you at the time and in the manner most agreeable to your Highness and of visiting the improvements you have been making around your residence. In the hope of soon having the pleasure of meeting your Highness again

I have the honour to be with much respect

Your Highness's very faithful friend,

DALHOUSIE.

It could not fail to have been touching to the Governor General to observe the almost filial confidence reposed in him, by the boy whom he now saw dethroned and exiled by his decree and Lord Dalhousie's thoughtful care for the comfort and happiness of the Maharajah was very perceptible. He inspected, personally, the various arrangements of the establishment and the laying out of the grounds, &c., expressing his cordial approval of all he saw. He showed himself throughout so thoroughly kind hearted and genial in

manner that it was hard to realize this was the man whom his detractors regard as uncompromisingly rigid and autocratic

Chapter  
IX.  
1851

The Dewan and Fakeer, having received permission to return to the Punjab, took their departure, followed by the good wishes of all. The Maharajah presented the Dewan with a handsome Arab horse, as a mark of his favour and regard, and the Fakeer with a set of tents and 500 rupees. The Brahmin *porohut* (priest) had already left by the Maharajah's wish.

Before leaving he placed in Login's hands the horoscope, or nativity, which had been cast at Duleep Singh's birth, and which had been in his charge.

The Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Provinces (Mr James Thomason) had visited the Maharajah some time previously, and, after several conversations with His Highness, had been most favourably impressed with the earnestness of his convictions and his steady purpose to be educated in the Christian faith.

During all this time of probation, he continued inflexible in his resolve, and never tired of the restraints of study, *when the subject was religion*, but his natural disposition to shirk anything in the shape of steady application was often most amusingly displayed when other branches of education were in question. Every sort of expedient had to be resorted to in order to keep alive his interest, he would struggle manfully for a time, gradually grow hopelessly confused and stupified,

Chapter and end by suddenly falling sound asleep amongst his  
IX. books !  
1851

He had great natural acuteness, and it was wonderful how he imbibed information, when he could obtain it in a pleasant form, without the trouble of applying his mind. To effect this it became usual to have games on general knowledge history, geography, &c. in the evenings, when the Maharajah was present. The questions and answers were on cards whoever answered correctly being the winner of a prize Mrs. Login was provided with constant occupation in the preparation of fresh series of these, as the Maharajah progressed in knowledge and the prizes and forfeits were a source of much amusement to her visitors and guests, some of whom may remember the excitement and eagerness of the boy to show his proficiency

Before his shyness in speaking English could be got over a system of fines was established for every word of Hindostani spoken in his presence by any person, the amount to go to some particular charity The Maharajah's boyish delight at this scheme was great. To be revenged for the constant fines levied on himself at first he set himself cunningly to entrap the unwary by feigning not to comprehend some particular word in a sentence addressed to him the Hindostani word was then politely supplied and the victim was only made aware of his slip by the shout of laughter and demand for the fine which instantly followed from the delighted boy The amount of

pocket-money allowed to him, and his companions in study, was regulated by the number of marks gained, and this naturally aroused emulation amongst them

Chapter  
IX  
1851

When Lord and Lady Dalhousie came to Futtehghur during Christmastide, 1851, it was a great surprise to the Governor-General to observe the change that a year had wrought on the boy he had seen for the first time at Lahore. From constant association with English ladies and gentlemen, he had rapidly acquired the usages of society, and his chivalrous courtesy to ladies became remarkable. The following occurrence is one instance in point —

There was a subdued excitement among the Ranee's people when it became noised about that Duleep Singh was forsaking the Sikh religion, and seeking to learn the new faith, of course, if it were so, then the Shah-zadah would naturally become of more importance, and would be looked upon by all Sikhs as the true representative of the Khâlisa Raj! It was reported that the Ranee encouraged these ideas, and it was observed that the little boy had begun to take upon himself consequential airs, and to make remarks derogatory to his uncle.\* There was an avoidance

---

\* On its coming to the knowledge of the Governor-General that the Shah-zadah had been assuming airs of importance and announcing, unchecked by his relatives and attendants, "that he would be placed on the *guldée* by the Khâlisa, as soon



Chapter of his society also perceptible of late, which was very  
IX. unusual  
1851

The Sikhs attach little importance to the strict preservation of caste but the Rajpoots are very punctilious, and no doubt the Ranee wished to ascertain for certain if the rumours she heard were true for she had asked Mrs. Login more than once why the Maharajah had discontinued his visits to her?

One day when on her way to visit the Ranee Mrs. Login met the Maharajah and his party hawking in the park. On learning whither she was bent, he asked with some eagerness if he might accompany her as he did not care to go alone. She agreed, and sent a *chobedar* to announce the coming visit.

They were received and announced by the little Shahzadah and the Ranees handsome young brother Meah Ootum. There was unusual constraint observable during the visit even the little Shahzadah seemed not at ease, as if expectant of something about to happen. The Ranee offered refreshments

as Duleep Singh went to England as Christian. Sir H. Elliot was directed to inform Mr. Login that the Ranees must be warned of the consequences of permitting the Raj to hold on in language.

I will inform the Ranees that the Raj of the Punjab is at an end forever and that any continuation of the restoration of her son, or of anybody else to the throne, may then be a crime against the State. It is her duty to instruct her son accordingly. If in my future communications I detect in her or in any other person any intention of restoring the Raj to the Punjab or to any other person, then I will take immediate steps to prevent the same. — Official Circular dated 5th July 1851.

and called for fruit-sherbet, for which she was famous. The tray appeared with only *one* glass upon it, this the Ranee filled and offered with deep reverence to her Sovereign, but the Maharajah, who, amongst other lessons, had lately learnt courtesy to women, handed the glass to Mrs Login instead. Expecting that a second glass would be brought for the Maharajah presently, Mrs Login accepted it, drank part of the contents, and replaced it on the tray. Immediately it was refilled, and once more presented by the Ranee to the Maharajah, while significant glances passed between the brother and sister. Perceiving at once that a premeditated insult was intended, Mrs Login said quietly, in English, "Don't drink it, Maharaj!" To her surprise he rose, and turning to her with a courteous salutation, he took the glass in his hand and drank off the contents, then, turning on his heel, he abruptly left the house, with the slightest possible gesture of farewell to his sister-in-law, who gazed after him alarmed at the result of her experiment!

On taking her leave directly afterwards, Mrs. Login found the young Maharajah waiting outside to escort her home. She then asked him why he took the glass, when he saw that an insult was intended by forcing him to drink *after her*? "What?" he replied, his eyes flashing with indignation, "you would have me let them *insult you too*! Now they will see that I honour you, and am not ashamed to show that I have broken caste!"

Chapter  
IX.  
1851

It was truly a great proof, in one of his up bringing, of the strength of his convictions, as well as of the chivalry of his nature.

About this time the Maharajah brought to Mrs. Login a very queer looking brass idol, asking her to take it out of his sight as he did not want to see it, now that he had given up praying to it. He added, with a smile, " If it had been of gold or silver it would not have been left so long , but it is the only one left now all the valuable ones have disappeared one after another as they saw I despised them but they are welcome to them This same misshapen object of worship is still treasured as a relic of past days.

Duleep Singh was anxious to prove that he was no longer a Sikh by cutting off the long tress of hair which he in common with all Sikhs, wore twisted up into a ball above the brow and covered with the bright coloured under turban This he thought would make him more like his English boy companions and it was much against his will that he was persuaded by Login to defer the shearing of his locks until he had been, for at least a year under probation When at length his hair was allowed to be cut off and he brought it to Mrs. Login as a memento it was long and abundant as a woman's

By his own request he with several of his people was present at the baptism of Login's little son though he was much disappointed at not being allowed

to stand proxy for Sir Henry Lawrence, who was god-father. He did not think it need matter that he was not yet baptized himself ' Chapter IX. 1851.

He was greatly delighted at the prospect of spending the hot weather at Mussoorie, and the preceding cold weather in visiting Agra and Delhi

## CHAPTER X.

### THE BAPTISM.

Chapter X.  
1852-54

THE camp of the young Sikh Maharnjah was an object of great interest both to Europeans and natives, at the various stations it passed through. It formed, in effect a very pretty picture with its red and white striped tents pitched in the form of a quadrangle and its tent poles encased in silver glittering in the sun. The two largest tents intended for the use of His Highness and his Governor stood opposite to one another and were connected by wide *semanas*, or awnings forming a favourite lounging place for the occupants during the hot hours of the day. There was a double set of these tents which made marching an altogether luxurious mode of proceeding. The party were enabled by this means to start in the morning leaving the one set in which they had passed the night still standing on the ground while after a pleasant ride of nine or ten miles they found a duplicate encampment all ready for them with food &c. &c. prepared and awaiting their arrival.

The favourite occupation in the afternoon in camp

was to inspect the horses, and see them groomed and fed, to walk down the lines where they all stood in perfect order, picketed with head-and-heel ropes, and to feed them with pieces of sugar-cane provided for the purpose, which they looked for with the greatest eagerness

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

The elephants, too, had to receive a visit, and be offered biscuits and lumps of sugar. One of these animals was particularly docile, and constantly to be found acting nurse to its *mahout's* baby, which lay asleep between its huge fore-feet. It was curious to watch the great beast gently fanning the child, and brushing away the flies from its face with a branch it had broken off the nearest tree, and which it held with its trunk, while with its funny little eyes it meantime kept a sharp look-out on the fast accumulating pile of enormous *chupatties*, which the child's parents were engaged in baking, and which it knew well were destined for its own supper. Sometimes, if wakeful and lively, the baby would crawl away a little distance from its guardian, but the latter—aware that its allowance of *chupatties* depended on its attention to its duties as nursery-maid—would never allow the little one to get beyond reach, but lifted it back to its former position with its trunk in the gentlest manner possible

A fine flock of goats which accompanied the camp, and were brought up to the tents night and morning to be milked, were a great attraction to the boys, and

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

were especial pets of Tommy Scott, who liked nothing better than to get his companions to go with him exploring the villages adjacent to the encampment, in search of handsome specimens to add to the number. By the time the march was over this flock had consequently attained considerable proportions.

The villagers showed great eagerness to see the Sikh Maharajah but were always perfectly civil and respectful. Beggars were kept at a distance but as it was only right that the poor of the districts through which he passed should benefit a sum of money was sent in the Maharajah's name to the civil magistrate, or other authority for distribution among deserving cases.

The number of followers with even a small camp is astonishing as each hanger on is accompanied by his whole family. The encampment therefore presented a lively bustling aspect in the evenings when all were assembled round the various camp fires chattering and cooking the last meal before rolling themselves up for the night.

One evening after dark a tremendous uproar was heard in camp and every one rushed out to see what was the matter. The word was passed from mouth to mouth that a grass cutter's child had just been carried off by a wolf out of its mother's arms! Parties were sent in all directions and a strict search made all night with no result but at day dawn in a neighbouring gully the skull of the child was found—picked clean!

The mother had been sitting at the fire baking *chupatties*, with the infant in her lap, when the wolf, taking advantage of the darkness, came up behind her, put his head over her shoulder, and seized the infant. It was only the shiek of her opposite neighbour, who saw the deed, that told her what had happened.

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

Next day it was pitiful to see the poor mother trudging along, as before, among her companions, with all her household goods on her head, but *without* the child, whom she had been wont to carry also, seated astride on her hip.

For some time after this incident there were perpetual wolf-scares in the encampment, on one occasion the whole camp was upset in the middle of the night by Mis Login's English nurse, who declared positively that the Maharajah and Shahzadah had been eaten up in their beds by a *pack of wolves*, for she had seen several looking out of the door of their tent, and licking their lips! It was some little time before the wolves in question were identified as a *pack of greyhounds* belonging to His Highness, which he, in his eagerness to go out coursing early the next morning, had privately ordered to be brought before dawn into the outer division of his tent. Seen in the faint light, under the circumstances, the woman's mistake might be excused.

The Maharajah made a great many purchases from the Delhi jewellers, who brought their tempting wares



Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

to the camp and not caring to part with his treasures to the care of the Toshkhana that evening he begged Mrs. Login to keep them for him till morning. She felt rather nervous at the charge, as some of the rings, &c., were of considerable value, but, knowing that the sentries were very alert, she agreed, and placed the articles in her dressing-case which she put under her *charpoy*. Before getting into bed, she unfastened the long chain of her little black and tan terrier from the leg of the *charpoy* and passed it through the strap of her dressing-case. She was awakened by a succession of noises—violent barking, shouts, musket shots, and a sudden yell followed by a great commotion! Her first thought was for the dressing case—it was gone! but there stood the dog, frantic with rage, tugging furiously at one end of his chain, the other being in some mysterious manner passed out under the tent, outside which the box lay safe on the ground. She soon knew that a robbery had been attempted, but the thief had been foiled and had made his escape after dropping his prize on discovering its unexpected pendant! He had effected his noiseless entrance by crawling under the tightly pegged tent, the faint light burning showed him the dressing case, but not the small dog coiled at a distance from it. He had a very narrow escape for on rising to his feet outside the tent he fell over a servant sleeping there, who made a grasp at him, but the miscreant had so plentifully anointed his naked body with oil that he slipped through

the hands of the other like a fish. He did not, however, escape unscathed, for drops of blood for some distance on the ground showed that the sentry's shot had wounded him. Chapter  
X  
1852-54.

At Agra, the Maharajah was the guest of Mr. Thomason, Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Provinces. As His Highness was travelling privately, by his own request, no salutes were fired, but every attention was paid him by the chief military and civil authorities. Here he paid a visit to the Taj and the Fort, but took most interest in the electric telegraph, and the printing and type foundry at Secundra, five miles from Agra, which he visited twice. A breakfast was given in his honour by the English community *in the Taj* itself!

The rich jewellers' shops in Delhi were a great attraction to Duleep Singh, far more so even than the Jumna Musjid, or the Palace of the Moguls. He was but a boy after all, and took more delight in the divers at the great tank than in any historical building, however magnificent.

Meerut and Roorkee, the head-quarters of the Ganges Canal Works, under Proby Cautley, were reached in due time, here Tom Login took him, for the first time, on a railroad down to the works.

Being anxious to have a peep at the famed Hurdwar, sacred to all Hindoos, arrangements were made for his doing so *incognito*, the number of devotees from the Punjab, and of pilgrims from all parts, being so great that

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

the authorities feared a demonstration. The carriages and escort were therefore, sent in one direction as a decoy to the multitude while the Maharajah made a hurried visit to the Ghâts on an elephant. He was only recognized, when leaving, by a crowd of his former subjects who surrounded his elephant hailing him with enthusiasm.

Heavy rains having now set in, a rapid march was made to Deyra Dhoon where he encamped for some time before proceeding up to Mussoorie, his escort remaining below at Deyra the 'lines' of the Governor General's bodyguard there being made over to them.

As the object of Duleep Singh's temporary residence in the hills was to enable him to pursue his studies more effectually Login did not consider it advisable that he should have his mind distracted by the gaieties usually going on there. He therefore turned a deaf ear to the numerous applications for aid in getting up races theatricals balls &c. But feeling it right to do all he could for the social enjoyment and pleasure of the community he endeavoured to promote pleasant out-door meetings such as picnics cricket matches, and archery meetings by giving handsome prizes on the latter occasions providing a good band to play on the Mall giving frequent musical parties prizes to the boys school getting up a museum of natural history &c. during the second visit of His Highness to Mussoorie he also arranged a series of twenty lectures

on various subjects,\* to be given by qualified lecturers (many of them officers in the service). The small fee for each (fifty rupees) given by His Highness, was almost invariably applied by the lecturer to some useful object, such as enlargement of the church, library, or dispensary, thus benefiting the station generally. These lectures were much enjoyed by Duleep Singh.

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

At one of the picnics given at a favourite spring near Mussoorie the cloth was spread on the only piece of level ground on the face of the *khud*, but it did not lie very smooth, as the grass beneath was rough and tussocky. When the guests were seating themselves, and joking over the inequalities of their board, sudden consternation was excited by a wriggling motion under the cloth,—“*Samph ' Samph '*” † shouted the natives, and a stampede took place. Then ensued a furious attack on the table-cloth and dishes, with walking-sticks and *latties* borrowed from the *jampanees*; when a full-grown cobia made its appearance from under the cloth, hissing furiously in a last effort to raise its head to strike. At this moment, a well-directed

---

\* LIST OF LECTURES —

Astronomy (3)	Chemistry
Fine Arts	Electricity
Meteorology	Ancient History of India
Natural Philosophy	Zoology of Himalayas
Natural History	Peculiarities of English Language
Natural Theology	Literature of the Present Day
Habits of Bees	Botany
Comets	

† Snake

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

blow from Bhajun Lal broke its neck. Suspended in triumph from the branch of a tree it was found to measure many feet in length, and was an object of great curiosity and awe to the children of the party!

The snake had been fast asleep in one of the hollows of the ground and was only awakened to a sense of his novel position by the sound of voices, and by a large salad bowl being suddenly deposited on his head! It said a good deal for the nerves of the ladies that they were persuaded to sit down again and lunch on what could be collected of the feast from the *débris* but the meal did not lack gaiety for all reserve and formality had been put to flight. Duleep Singh and his companions, proud of their own prowess, made a great parade of their *latties* which they kept in their hands ready for future emergencies.

*Correspondence between the GOVERNOR GENERAL and J S LOGIN*

MUSBOORIE May 10th 1852

MR LORD

At the request of His Highness I beg to forward the enclosed note I am happy to say that the Maharajah's portrait has at last been finished by Mr Beechey and that it has been despatched to Calcutta your Lordship will I hope be able to gratify His Highness's wish to possess your portrait when a favourable opportunity occurs

I am glad to say that the Maharajah continues to enjoy his residence in the hills greatly I have availed myself of the opportunity of getting a drawing master and music master to give

him lessons, and he really makes good progress. He now speaks English with fluency, and much more correctly, and with better pronunciation, than natives of Central India generally. He takes great pleasure in the society of English boys, of whom a few come every Saturday from Mr Maddock's school to join him at play, and I have also been able to secure him constant companions in the two sons of Major Boileau, of the Artillery, who come to study Urdu with him. They have just arrived from England and as they are very intelligent lads of fifteen and sixteen, who appear to have been carefully educated, and are very diligent and attentive to their Urdu studies, I have little doubt that their example will be in every way beneficial to His Highness.

From all that I have seen of the Maharajah's disposition, I am the more satisfied as to the great advantage and stimulus of example in his case. His disposition is naturally indolent, and nothing but his strong good sense, and his desire to be on an equality in knowledge and accomplishments with lads of his own age, enables him to overcome the natural slothfulness of his character. It is on this account that I am so anxious that he should be permitted to visit England, as he so earnestly desires it, while he is young, and while he can have an opportunity of mixing with lads of his own age, and incur less risk of being spoiled by too great attention.

As His Highness's residence is at some distance from Mussoorie, he lives as quiet and retired a life as he did at Futtelghur, enjoying, however, all the advantages of the delightful climate, and the active out-door exercise which it enables him to take. I have been able to clear a sufficient level space for a playground on the Manor House estate, so as to admit of his playing cricket, in which he takes great delight. Having overcome the difficulty of reading English, he now takes much more pleasure in his lessons, and makes greater progress. On the subject of his desire to be educated as a Christian, his determination continues

Chapter unchanged, and his progress in religious knowledge is fully as  
 X great as that of most Christian boys of his age  
 1852-54

As the distance at which His Highness resides from Mussoorie prevents the regular attendance of a clergyman his religious instruction is almost entirely conducted by Mr Guise but I am in hopes that the Rev Mr Dawson of Landour may also be able to visit him during his stay here After we left Futtehghur the Maharajah regularly joined us at table and now takes his meals with Mr Guise and Master Scott occasionally inviting Major Boileau's sons and some of Mr Maddock's pupils and sometimes coming over to our bungalow at a short distance to dine with us He generally eats the Punjabi dishes to which he has been accustomed but he is evidently acquiring the taste of an English boy with great rapidity \* With respect to the Shahzadah I am glad to give a good report Ever since he came under my charge I have observed a certain degree of distrust in his manner and high ideas of his rank and importance These had been rather increased than diminished since the Maharajah expressed his determination to be educated as a Christian and it was pretty evident that these ideas were encouraged if not by his mother (who is really I believe very well meaning and thoroughly respectable) at least by her attendants I hailed therefore the opportunity of the Maharajah's temporary residence on the hills to separate the boy for a time from such influences The manner in which the poor little fellow had from his infancy been brought up separated from all companions of his own age and taught to consider all around him at Lahore as his enemies was of itself sufficient to account for much of the distrust and selfishness apparent in his character and as these feelings if permitted to gain strength would under his peculiar

---

Th. M. Laroche has never to tell him in any form and from his recollection of the first situation on his uncle Jowahir Singh, he appears to entertain a dread of being habituated to its use.—J. M. L.

circumstances and position, cause him much unhappiness as a Chapter man, and perhaps be productive of other inconveniences, I con- X.  
sidered it of great importance to eradicate them if I could To 1852-54  
effect this, I have taken a step which I trust your Lordship will approve, and which, so far as I can judge from a short trial, is likely to be successful

As it seemed desirable that young Tommy Scott should have the benefit of regular school work and emulation, while at Mussoorie, I determined to allow the Shahzadah also to go for a few hours daily, not only to enjoy the benefit of Mr Maddock's excellent tuition, and to allow Mr Guise more time to devote to the Maharajah, but also to become acquainted with boys of his own age, and to join in their sports and amusements.

As the boys are all sons of gentlemen in the service, and are carefully looked after by Mr Maddock, the Shahzadah's ideas of his dignity have not received too rude a shock on being sent to school, while the natural feeling of equality on which boys of that age meet on the playground are likely, I think, to have a wholesome effect upon him. Mr Maddock has kindly entered into my views with respect to the boy, and is careful to prevent any undue deference being shown to him on account of his rank, and as the hours at which he attends are not those when religious instruction is given, any objections on that point are obviated. The little fellow appears to like the arrangement very much, he makes good progress with his work, enjoys the society of his schoolfellows, and joins in their amusements with great delight.

I may add, that I am more than ever careful to avoid any appearance of restraint in his religious observances, and that he and his people are not in any way interfered with in this respect, but, on the contrary, every care is taken to avoid offence to their prejudices in any way. It is curious that the priests have never taken any trouble to make the boy a Sikh, by administering the *Pahul* to him, by which alone he could become a Sikh. The Ranee has lost caste by marrying a Sikh, and her people do not



Chapter unchanged and his progress in religious knowledge is fully as  
 X great as that of most Christian boys of his age  
 1852-54

As the distance at which His Highness resides from Mussoorie prevents the regular attendance of a clergyman his religious instruction is almost entirely conducted by Mr Guise but I am in hopes that the Rev Mr Dawson of Landour may also be able to visit him during his stay here. After we left Futteh ghur the Maharajah regularly joined us at table and now takes his meals with Mr Guise and Master Scott occasionally inviting Major Boileau's sons and some of Mr Maddock's pupils and sometimes coming over to our bungalow at a short distance to dine with us. He generally eats the Punjabi dishes to which he has been accustomed but he is evidently acquiring the taste of an English boy with great rapidity\*. With respect to the Shahzadah I am glad to give a good report. Ever since he came under my charge I have observed a certain degree of distrust in his manner and high ideas of his rank and importance. These had been rather increased than diminished since the Maharajah expressed his determination to be educated as a Christian and it was pretty evident that these ideas were encouraged if not by his mother (who is really I believe very well meaning and thoroughly respectable) at least by her attendants. I halted therefore the opportunity of the Maharajah's temporary residence on the hills to separate the boy for a time from such influences. The manner in which the poor little fellow had from his infancy been brought up separated from all companions of his own age and taught to consider all around him at Lahore as his enemies was of itself sufficient to account for much of the distrust and selfishness apparent in his character and as these feelings if permitted to gain strength would under his peculiar

---

\* The Maharajah has never talked with in any form and from his recollection of the first introduction on his uncle Jawahir Singh he appears to entertain a deep feeling of hatred to the name of S. L.

circumstances and position, cause him much unhappiness as a man, and perhaps be productive of other inconveniences, I considered it of great importance to eradicate them if I could effect this, I have taken a step which I trust your Lordship will approve, and which, so far as I can judge from a short trial, is likely to be successful

As it seemed desirable that young Tommy Scott should have the benefit of regular school work and emulation, while at Mussoorie, I determined to allow the Shahzadah also to go for a few hours daily, not only to enjoy the benefit of Mr Maddock's excellent tuition, and to allow Mr Guise more time to devote to the Maharajah, but also to become acquainted with boys of his own age, and to join in their sports and amusements

As the boys are all sons of gentlemen in the service, and are carefully looked after by Mr Maddock, the Shahzadah's ideas of his dignity have not received too rude a shock on being sent to school, while the natural feeling of equality on which boys of that age meet on the playground are likely, I think, to have a wholesome effect upon him. Mr Maddock has kindly entered into my views with respect to the boy, and is careful to prevent any undue deference being shown to him on account of his rank, and as the hours at which he attends are not those when religious instruction is given, any objections on that point are obviated. The little fellow appears to like the arrangement very much, he makes good progress with his work, enjoys the society of his schoolfellows, and joins in their amusements with great delight.

I may add, that I am more than ever careful to avoid any appearance of restraint in his religious observances, and that he and his people are not in any way interfered with in this respect, but, on the contrary, every care is taken to avoid offence to their prejudices in any way. It is curious that the priests have never taken any trouble to make the boy a Sikh, by administering the *Pahul* to him, by which alone he could become a Sikh. The Ranee has lost caste by marrying a Sikh, and her people do not

Chapter eat with her in consequence nor do they eat with the Shahzadah  
 V. —the son of a Sikh.

1852-54 I feel sure this absence from his mother will do the boy good  
 he is getting older and will gain self reliance By the time he  
 sees her again they will probably have been separated ten months

I have &c

J S L

The Most Noble the MARQUIS OF DALHOUSIE

GOVERNMENT HOUSE *June 7th 1852*

MY DEAR LOGIN

All that you are doing in regard to the Maharajah seems to be very judicious and considering birth and early habits I think you have very good reason to be satisfied with his progress and with the results of your care of him in all respects. If you could only keep down his fat! But there you don't set the best of examples!

I see no objection to the line you have taken with the Shahzadah quite the contrary It is calculated to do him great good if directed with tact. So far your trip to the hills has been very successful Your friend Fraser\* has not only turned up a trump but the ace of trumps He has gained great distinction in Burmah and will I have no doubt achieve more if he has the chance

Yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE

---

\* Col. H. J. Fraser, Bengal Engineers. He was at the military command of the 1st of April, when besieged by the mutineers at 18

LORD DALHOUSIE to the MAHARAJAH

(On the receipt of the portrait of His Highness )

GOVERNMENT HOUSE, July 17th, 1852.

At last, after a long delay upon the river, your Highness's Chapter  
 portrait has arrived It is in excellent condition, not at all X.  
 injured by the weather It is very like you, and does great credit 1852-5  
 to Mr Beechey as an artist Your Highness has done me really  
 a great favour in offering to me this likeness of yourself If it  
 please God that I should live till I am old, I shall look upon it  
 with strong feelings long after my connection with this country  
 shall have been dissolved, and always with a renewal of the  
 interest which I feel in yourself, and in everything belonging to  
 your fate and fortunes You have gratified me, too, by asking  
 for my portrait in return I shall have great pleasure in sending  
 one to you as soon as I can get one worthy of your acceptance  
 But Mr Beechey, I fear, won't come to Calcutta, and there is no  
 good artist here

On Monday I start for Rangoon, to make arrangements for the  
 war As I hate the sea and everything belonging to it, and as  
 the weather will be very bad, I do not look forward with pleasure  
 to the voyage

Your Highness will have heard that many of your countrymen  
 have volunteered to go to Burmah, and I greatly hope they will  
 have an opportunity of meeting the Burmese, and of giving them  
 a lesson, which they are very well able to do

I beg you to believe me, my dear Maharajah,

Your Highness's sincere and faithful friend,

DALHOUSIE

To His Highness the MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

Finding the companionship of Major Boileau's sons most beneficial to the Maharajah, Login proposed that they should accompany him to Futtehghur, and pursue their studies under Mr Guise undertaking to defray all their expenses until they were old enough to enter Roorkee College. He had found the experiment of allowing the Shahzadah to mix with English boys most successful the only difficulty now experienced being to get him away from the playground !

LORD DALHOUSIE to the MAHARAJAH

*(On the receipt of a pencil sketch forwarded by Dr Login)*

GOVERNMENT HOUSE Sept 24th 1852

The drawing which your Highness was so good as to send to Lady Dalhousie shall be given to her as soon as she returns from Ceylon where she has been obliged to pass the hot season from ill health. She will I am sure be much pleased by your Highness's attention to her.

The drawing itself shows a progress most creditable to you. I cannot advise you too strongly to cultivate the art. It will be a resource to you in many various forms both in the house and out of doors.

When I was a boy like yourself I foolishly neglected the opportunities I had of acquiring it and a thousand times since have I regretted it when I desired to possess a sketch of some scene which I admired among the many beautiful and the many famous places I have visited and which if I could have used my pencil, I might have preserved by the labour of half an hour.

I am so rejoiced to hear from Dr. Login that you have enjoyed your stay at Mussoorie, and that you are really getting on with English, though not quite so well with other studies. Pray persevere—you have a great deal to learn yet before you can be considered a well-instructed gentleman, and nothing but perseverance will do it

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

Your interest in the conduct of your countryman is very pleasing to me. Their volunteering for Burmah gave me great satisfaction, and I have been glad to reward them for it by allowing two regiments, the 11th Sikh Local Regiment and the Loodiana Regiment, to go to Burmah. The first goes immediately. I have perfect confidence in them. The British never had braver enemies than your countrymen, and I am confident that they will show the same bravery now that they fight upon our side.

Shere Singh Attareewallah, who is now confined in Fort William, was very anxious to go also. I would not permit him to do so. He was an unfaithful and bad servant to your Highness, as well as a faithless friend to the British Government, and I would, therefore, not allow him to have the honour of taking part in a war on our behalf.

In the hope of hearing again from your Highness by-and-bye,

I beg to assure you that I am always

Your Highness's sincere and faithful friend,

DALHOUSIE.

To His Highness the MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH.

LORD DALHOUSIE to DR. LOGIN

GOVERNMENT HOUSE, *Sept 24th*, 1852

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I had the pleasure of receiving your letter of the ninth, enclosing one from the Maharajah, to which I now send a reply.

Chapter X. The sketch is really nicely done and if it was as you say *not*  
 1852-54 doctored by the master it does him great credit All you say of his progress and of the Shahzadah is more favourable than could be looked for If you cannot make the Maharajah industrious or learned you will at all events have given him the means of finding interests and occupations for himself if he chooses to have recourse to them

I am an advocate for his going to England and shall do my best to persuade the Court to it and if it should help to a marriage between him and little Coorg I shall be very glad for it will reconcile much which would otherwise be a considerable perplexity both in her case and his I would not renew the overtures for marriage just at present because it might look as if he had been moved to it by the notice taken of her in England The Rajah will return in a few months and you can then propose it to the Government if the Maharajah wishes to re-open negotiations

I have been greatly disgusted with the notoriety they have given to this man in England though I had carefully provided against it here and had warned them on the subject It has been calculated only to turn the girl's head and his too for he will now be more convinced than ever of his accomplishing his object of marrying her to an English nobleman Whether he would prefer a Maharajah *jucka* to a nobleman in prospect I don't know nor do I feel sure that the Maharajah would do well to arrange any marriage until he has seen the young lady for as he is a Christian and can't get Ranees in duplicate he may as well see how he likes her first The little leather sister whom Jung Bahadur took away with him to Nepal was really very pretty The orthodox one was not nearly so good looking!

Consider the points and let me know what you think

You are aware that I have been most anxious that there should be no fuss or display connected with Duleep's profession of

Christianity, in order that I might feel satisfied in my conscience that the boy had not been, unintentionally by us, or unconsciously to himself, led into the act by any other motives than that of conviction of the truth. To that end your management of the matter has been most judicious and highly satisfactory to me. I should wish that course steadily pursued. I consider that the Coorg christening in St James's Chapel, with royal godfather and godmothers, and the name of Victoria given her, has been a great mistake, calculated to make the child regard a sacrament as a Court pageant, and to lead all the world to believe (as I verily believe myself) that the father's motive was not so much that his child should be an "heir of salvation," as that she should be a god-daughter of Queen Victoria! I do not think I am uncharitable in concluding that the man could have no higher motive who, while he was leading with one hand his elder child to Christianity, gave over the younger with the other to Hinduism and Jung Bahadoor! Let us avoid all such reproach. If Duleep is to go to England, let him be quietly baptized before he goes, and by his own name of Duleep Singh. Indeed, I am prepared to advise his being baptized now, as soon as his minister can declare that he is sufficiently instructed, and is willing to receive the rite. If he is sufficiently instructed, and is willing to be baptized at all, he is quite old enough to take the obligations directly upon himself, and to be baptized without the intervention of godfathers and godmother.

Dr Caishore goes to Jhelum. He is to be succeeded by Mr. Jay, whom I have never seen, but whom I understand to be a learned, gentle, and pious man.

I shall be glad to hear from you on this subject after your return to Futtehghur. There will be no objections to the Maharajah being accompanied by his young companions.

I am in a difficulty about my portrait for Duleep. There is nobody here who can paint a good one. Mr Beechey can't be got, and I should not like to send a bad one. Do you think the



Chapter  
X  
1852-54

Maharajah would be disappointed by my delaying in order to get a good artist either here or in England?

I am very truly yours,

DALHOUSIE.

Login wrote Lord Dalhousie telling him that the Maharajah had begun regularly to attend church very quietly and without any attendance beyond Bhajun Lal who at his own desire accompanied him

I am fully satisfied that the Maharajah's knowledge of Christian truth and the sincerity of his convictions are such as to qualify him for baptism whenever it is thought expedient and I intend during the visit of Archdeacon Pratt to us next week to ask his opinion after he has had some opportunities of conversing freely with the boy

If the Court give permission for the Maharajah to visit England it would be a great advantage to him that it should be *after* your Lordship had gone home so as to have the benefit of your advice as to the manner in which he should be received and to prevent him from being brought forward prominently until his education is further advanced and he is enabled to take his place in society in a manner which will be creditable to himself and all connected with him

LORD DALHOUSIE to DR. LOGIN

GOVERNMENT HOUSE Oct 10th 1852.

DEAR LOGIN

Just a line to say that I know no reason why the Maharajah should not go to church when he wishes it and every reason why he should his mind being made up

I quite approve of all you are doing

In haste yours very truly

DR. LOGIN

DALHOUSIE

The cold weather was pleasantly passed on the march back to Futtehghur. By this time Duleep Singh had acquired a taste for shooting and coursing, and spent almost every morning riding and walking after game, with his two friends Frank and Charles Boileau, attended by Thornton, his English servant, of course, an escort of troopers were within easy hail. Seven or eight miles on foot was thought little of by the young sportsmen

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

At Meerut, His Highness was received by Sir Joseph Thackwell, who was in command, at Seharunpore, by Mr. Philip Trench, C.S., who invited the ladies and gentlemen of the station to meet His Highness at dinner. The same attention was paid by Mr. Blunt at Allyghur. Everyone remarked the great improvement in Duleep Singh's manner and bearing since he passed up the year before.

His love for music had developed greatly and as he brought his music master, Mr. Hunter, with him for the cold season, while he was not needed by his pupils in the hills, he worked very hard with him for some part of the day, amusing himself with his band of an evening.

Having undergone a probation of two years, the Maharajah himself now expressed his strong desire to be received into the Christian Church by baptism.

FUTTEGHUR Feb 10th 1853.

*(Anniversary of Sohraon)*

MY LORD

Chapter  
X  
1852-51

The communications which I have from time to time made to your Lordship regarding the Maharajah's progress in religious knowledge will have prepared you to receive the expression of his desire to be baptized. The enclosed letter which he has requested me to forward to your Lordship conveys the sentiments of his mind on the occasion.

From the marked consistency of his conduct and character during the last two years and the earnestness with which he applies himself to the study of the Holy Scriptures in contrast to his general application to his other studies I have every reason to think that his heart is deeply interested and that he desires to make an open profession of his faith in a right spirit.

The importance of the step he is about to take has been most carefully impressed upon his mind and he is fully aware of the duties to which his baptismal vows will bind him.

In the event of your Lordship's sanction being obtained to his public profession of his belief the Maharajah is anxious that he should be baptized by the Rev Mr Jay before he returns to Mu soorie. As the church here is still under repair and not likely to be finished for six months the ceremony may perhaps with every propriety take place in his own house in the presence of such witnesses as your Lordship may approve. I am sure that Messrs Buller and Cunningham the judge and the magistrate of the district Colonel Alexander Major Tucker or other of the gentlemen resident at the station will very readily be present on the occasion. Or if it be considered desirable I could ask the Commandant Mr Tyler or Mr William Muir the Secretary to the Lieutenant Governor who are not very far distant from us.

While taking every care that the ceremony should be nothing of its importance and solemnity I need not say how much I coincide in the wish expressed by your Lordship that when it

does take place, every ostentatious display should be avoided. Chapter  
 This has hitherto been carefully observed in all that has related X.  
 to the Maharajah's instruction in religious truth, and I do 1852-54.  
 sincerely hope that the substance, rather than the form, has been  
 impressed upon his mind

Although His Highness had, about three weeks since, expressed  
 his desire to be baptized, and Mr Jay had written to me proposing  
 that he should obtain the requisite sanction of the Bishop for the  
 performance of the ceremony, I thought it better not to take any  
 steps in the matter until the Maharajah should himself express  
 his wish to me on the subject, on receipt of which I immediately  
 wrote to Mr. Jay. . . . . As, in the event of your Lordship's  
 sanction to the Maharajah's baptism, it will be necessary that Mr.  
 Jay obtain the sanction of the Bishop, it may save some delay in  
 reference, if the Lord Bishop could be requested by your Lordship  
 to communicate with Mr. Jay for that purpose

The Maharajah has taken very great interest in reading the  
 Holy Scriptures with Mr. Jay, and that gentleman has been  
 equally gratified with the attention and earnestness with which  
 His Highness has received his instruction . . . .

I remain, &c

J. S LOGIN.

Enclosed with the above, were the following notes:—

*Feb. 8th, 1853*

MY DEAR GOOD FRIEND,

I think I now sufficiently understand the Christian religion,  
 and the duties to which it binds me, and have a strong desire to  
 be baptized, which I trust, therefore, I may be considered fit for

I remain,

Yours very sincerely,

DULEEP SINGH

Chapter Don't bring people from a distance Invite if you please to do  
 V. so the principal persons of the station but only those who will  
 1852-54 regard the occasion as a solemn administration of a Holy  
 Sacrament and not a common festivity

Probably it will not be necessary to give a name at all but if  
 requisite let it be his own name "Duleep Singh"

I pray God to bless this act to his eternal good

Believe me

Yours very truly

DALHOUSIE

DR LOGIN

GOVERNMENT HOUSE *Feb 15th 1853*

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH

I have received with the most lively satisfaction the  
 letter in which you express your desire to be at once baptized  
 and to be admitted a member of the Church of Christ When  
 you first showed an inclination to believe in the truths which you  
 found declared in the Word of God I advised you not to act  
 hastily to examine the truth of the Bible and to test by time  
 the truth and reality of your belief

I beg your Highness to believe in the strength and sincerity of Chapter  
the regard which I shall ever feel towards you, and to remain, X.  
1852-54.  
now and always,

Your Highness's sincere and affectionate friend,

DALHOUSIE.

HIS HIGHNESS MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH.

GOVERNMENT HOUSE, *March 16th, 1853.*

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH,

I have received, with the liveliest satisfaction, the letter which you wrote to me on the 8th inst, announcing to me that the rite of baptism had been administered to you, and that you had been admitted into the Church of Christ

I rejoice in the opportunity it affords me of again offering you the assurance of my affectionate interest in your welfare, and of my most earnest wishes for your happiness, both in this world and in that which is to come.

I beg your Highness to believe me,

Your sincere and faithful friend,

DALHOUSIE.

HIS HIGHNESS MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH

FUTTEHGHUR, *March 8th, 1853*

MY LORD,

It now gives me sincere pleasure to acquaint your Lordship that the Maharajah was this day admitted into the Christian Church by baptism, and took the vows upon him in a most solemn and impressive manner

The ceremony took place in His Highness's private dwelling-house, in presence of about twenty of the European residents of

Chapter the station and nearly an equal number of the Maharajah's  
X principal native servants whom I had invited to attend

1862-64 The truly simple and earnest manner in which the service was  
conducted by the Rev Mr Jay and joined in by all the Christians  
present commanded the reverent attention of all who witnessed  
it and I hope left a deep impression of its solemnity on many  
minds I forward a copy of the entry made in the baptismal

register at Futteghur

Mr Jay considered it necessary that the names of three persons  
(of whom one should be a lady) should be entered as witnesses to  
the baptism and Colonel Alexander and Mrs Login were proposed  
in addition to myself but with Mr Jay's consent I also asked  
Mr Guise to sign the register

The native names on the register have been spelt as the Maha  
rajah pointed out

I may add that everything approaching to display or unbefitting  
the solemnity of the occasion has been most carefully avoided in  
every respect

I remain &c

J S Login

The ceremony was felt, by those privileged to be  
present to be touching as well as impressive the  
earnest expression on the young boy's face the look,  
half sad half curious on the countenances of his  
people who were all witnesses of the rite by their own  
wish combined to make it so

It occurred to Mrs. Login at the last moment, that  
bearing in mind the veneration in which all Hindoos  
hold the River Ganges there would be peculiar appro-  
priateness in using its water for the sacred rite

thereby sanctifying it in the Maharajah's mind, from henceforth, with a new and holier association. Jewindah, the favourite Sikh attendant of Duleep Singh, begged to be allowed to fetch the water himself for this purpose from the river, and ran off with his brass *lotah*, evidently regarding the proposition with favour, as a concession to Hindoo prejudices.

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

GOVERNMENT HOUSE, *March 16th*, 1853

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I have had the pleasure to receive yours of 8th, enclosing one from the Maharajah.

I rejoice deeply and sincerely in this good issue to the great change the boy has passed through, with so much satisfactory evidence of the reality and genuineness of his convictions

I regard it as a very remarkable event in history, and in every way gratifying

Let me add that, under circumstances of peculiarity, of great delicacy, and of great difficulty, I have been most highly satisfied with the judgment and discretion, the prudence and kindly tact, which have been exhibited by yourself through them all

Believe me to be, my dear Login,

Yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE

DR. LOGIN

MUSSOORIE, *June 2nd*, 1853

MY LORD,

It gives me particular pleasure to acquaint your Lordship that ever since his baptism, the Maharajah has continued, by his conduct and character, to afford very satisfactory evidence of the



Chapter X. influence of Christian principles on his heart and I trust as his years increase they may continue to gain strength, and preserve him from the many dangers and temptations to which he must necessarily be exposed in the position he has to occupy. He is fully aware of the responsibilities which his profession of Christianity imposes on him and of the effect which his example may have upon others of his countrymen either for good or evil and I believe he is honestly anxious to use this influence aright. He is going on with his education with more energy than heretofore. His progress in music is rapid and he takes great delight in it. He performs really creditably on the flute and corneopean and with his music-master's assistance has got up a very good band of eight or nine men. It is a great amusement to him and it is an incentive to study as he pays the expenses out of his pocket-money. This band is a great pleasure to the community at Mussoorie as they play on the Mall on stated evenings where their appearance is hailed with delight.

I have been successful in getting up a course of lectures during the season which have already been well attended. Many gentlemen have been induced to offer their services as lecturers and I have got a course of them on various subjects arranged to fill up six months the three first, by Mr Mackannon on "Astronomy," were excellent—pronounced so by some of the best astronomers in India who were among the audience.

I have already expressed to your Lordship my anxiety that the Maharajah should not become a mere State pensioner but that he

Numerous letters were received by the Maharajah congratulating him on his baptism and giving him cordial welcome from many eminent Christians, both European and native. Some of them were very touching. Amongst others who wrote to him were—

Rev Krishna Banerjee.  
 Rev Gopy Nanth Nundy  
 Ganendro Mohun Tagore.  
 Bishop Wilson.

Mr Thomason.  
 Sir Henry Lawrence  
 Sir Frederick Currie

should be led to take an interest in all that concerns the welfare of the natives around him, and the progress in improvement of his neighbourhood, and if such was my wish before he became a Christian, I need not say how much my anxiety has been increased by that event. This is not likely to be fully developed unless he has some estate in the country to which his attention could be applied. I would, therefore, respectfully beg your Lordship's consideration to the propriety of giving him a grant of land on the occasion of his coming of age, of such extent, and on such conditions, as may appear suitable to his position and circumstances. Should His Highness's home be fixed in India, a part of the Eastern Dhoon would appear most suitable, as he is sure to pass the hot season here. The Dhoon is not looked upon as profitable, but I think it might be made so.

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

The two young Boileaus have passed with great credit in Urdu and Hindu, and are qualified for the army. Their father has, I fear, little chance of getting appointments for them, and as I feel that the Maharajah has gained much by their companionship, I am anxious to help them, and if your Lordship sees no impropriety in the Maharajah asking Lord Hardinge for a commission for the eldest, he will gladly do so.

I have the honour, &c ,

J S L.

Sir Frederick Currie, before leaving India, wrote the Maharajah as follows :—

CALCUTTA, *April 11th*, 1853

MAHARAJAH,

I wish to write to your Highness before leaving India to offer you my warm congratulations on the important event which has just been communicated to the Government by

Chapter your friend, Dr Login, viz your Highness's admission into the  
 X. Christian Church by the rite of baptism

1852-54 I have long regarded you with very sincere esteem (ever since we first met on that memorable occasion in February 1846) and those feelings are much enhanced by the contemplation that I can now regard you as a fellow Christian animated by the same hopes cheered by the same promises and seeking the same consummation of all our objects and desires in life—the love and glory of our common Saviour in time and His presence in eternity

I have in no degree lost the interest which I had in your Highness during the eventful year 1848 but I have thought it better considering our respective positions and hearing of the feelings which were at work in your heart and which have led to such a happy result that I should not write to you

Any communication between us might have been misrepresented to your Highness a detriment both in the Punjab and in Hindostan. But now there is no longer any cause for such reserve your Highness has taken the irrevocable step and I am about to leave India by the steamer of the 8th prox when my connection with the Government will be at an end. I therefore now write these few lines to assure your Highness that I have taken the most lively interest in all that has happened in regard to you since I saw you that I have read the reports of your progress in knowledge and of the development of your character sent from time to time by Dr Login with high gratification and that the last reported event above referred to has given me unfeigned joy

I do not know if there is any possibility of your Highness visiting England but should you do so during my lifetime it will give me very great pleasure to renew our acquaintance

I remain Maharajah

Your sincere friend

F CURRIE

His Highness MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH

The following is the first letter Login received from Chapter  
 Lord Dalhousie after the death of Lady Dalhousie — X.  
 1852-54.

GOVERNMENT HOUSE, *Aug. 4th, 1854*

DEAR LOGIN,

I have to ask your pardon for the long delay which has occurred in replying to the letter I had from you about middle of June. Since that period, though I have not allowed public business to be retarded, I fear I have left many letters unanswered, among them yours. Your account of the Maharajah continues to be as satisfactory as we have any right to expect. Your plans for at once instructing, diverting, and training him as a member of European society are excellent, and can leave on your mind no doubt of your meeting with full co-operation, as far as it depends on me.

With regard to the future, I cannot go quite so entirely with you. We are at one in thinking that he should go to England. It is my opinion, as it is yours, that he should go while he is yet what we should consider a boy. I shall therefore be prepared to ask permission from the Court to let him go next spring, if you consider him ready and desirous, as before, to go. I will not disguise from you that the Court may not give a very gracious assent, the visit of Jung Bahadoor, whom they spoiled, and still more, the present visit of the ex-Rajah of Coorg, whom, in spite of all my precautions and warnings, they have lifted wholly out of his place, making a fool both of him and of themselves thereby, has disgusted the Court and Board of Control with native, and especially with princely, visitors. Still I hope they will agree, and still more, I hope that the Maharajah will not expect pompous receptions, and will rather seek quiet and privacy while he shall remain in England. With respect to the question of a residence at Mussoorie, and also to a grant of land, I conceive that these matters should be postponed until the Maharajah shall have

Chapter X. returned from England and until he shall be at least of age  
 1852-54. which in his case I presume would be eighteen. The grant of the  
 Eastern Dhoon, to which you allude seems the carving out of a  
 large slice But without committing myself to details I have no  
 difficulty in expressing entire concurrence in your views of making  
 the Maharajah something different from a Delhi or a Lucknow  
 pensioner It is natural you should wish these points settled by  
 myself who must needs take a more peculiar interest in the boy  
 than any of my successors can do but you may be quite sure  
 that he will always be an object of interest to the Governor  
 General of the time and I think it would be open to objection if  
 I should attempt to decide upon and to provide for his future  
 prematurely

Believe me to be

Yours very truly

DALHOUSIE

DR LOGIN

*August 1853*

MY LORD

I have told the Maharajah of your intention to ask per  
 mission for him to visit England next spring

In the event of his obtaining the permission I shall see  
 that he has not a large retinue with him and will only take to  
 Calcutta those who are to proceed with him The Maharajah is  
 very anxious not to be separated from Sheo Deo Singh and if the  
 little fellow's own feelings were consulted I think he would not  
 be unwilling If your Lordship thinks it desirable I shall  
 endeavour to get his mother's consent.

The Maharajah and all of us would regret any circumstance  
 which would lead to any separation between them for they are

much more attached to each other than they were, and a very kindly feeling now exists between them. Mr Guise has lately received a very good offer from Mr Maclean, a large indigo planter near Futtelghur, to take charge of his work during his absence in England, and a share as partner. Up to the present time, I am satisfied that no one could have filled his place with His Highness more perfectly than Mr Guise has done.

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

The irregular, self-indulgent manner in which the boy had been brought up, his natural indolence and want of application, and the difficulty of exercising any restraint over him, required an amount of patient endurance and perseverance on the part of a tutor, in bringing him through the rudimentary stages of education, and establishing a desire for instruction, which is very rarely to be met with, and I feel that His Highness owes more to Mr Guise than he can ever repay. The Maharajah has now, however, reached a stage in his education at which he is more likely to derive benefit from the instruction of professional masters.

In the event of Mr Guise accepting the offer made him, I think that it would be only proper on His Highness's part to make a handsome acknowledgment of his services in any way your Lordship might think fit. Although this offer is most eligible, Mr Guise is quite willing to remain with His Highness if it is desired, but in this case, he would naturally look for some permanent employment on his return to India in place of that which he had declined.

In the event of Mr Guise not accompanying the Maharajah, it would be advisable to retain one or both of the Boileaus as companions for a time, and it might be more possible for me to obtain commissions for them while in England.

It was only in the event of His Highness not going to England that I was anxious to find some interesting and useful employment for him, to occupy his mind and engage his attention.

I have, &c ,

J S L

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

The following note from Duleep Singh to Login was enclosed in the above —

MY DEAR GOOD FRIEND

As I do not like to attempt a letter to the Governor General, I hope it will do as well to write to you what I wish to say

You told me that the Governor General wishes to know if I am as anxious as before to go to England I wish to say that I am very anxious to go and quite ready to start whenever his Lordship gives me permission I do not want to go to make a show of myself, but to study and complete my education and I wish to live in England as quietly as possible

Yours very sincerely

DULEEP SINGH

GOVERNMENT HOUSE Aug 31st 1853

MY DEAR LOGIN

Tell the Maharajah that it is wholly impossible for me to say when he may be allowed to go It does not rest with me I have not authority in this case to let him go without reference to the Court in the first instance

This reference I will make by the very next mail and I will make known to you the answer as soon as possible

If he goes he should go without a following In England as you say his education will be easily carried on either by masters or a private tutor The offer therefore which you speak of as made to Mr Guise should on no account be set aside by the Maharajah or by the Government because it would be impossible for either to undertake to compensate Mr Guise for the advantages

he will have consented to forego at their request Mr Guise Chapter  
 certainly deserves well of the Maharajah, and if he quits him X  
 now, a handsome acknowledgment of his services would, as you 1852-54  
 suggest, be very fitting, but it should not be in the shape of a  
 pension

If it is desirable that the Maharajah should have  
 a young companion, as you seem to think, *one* of the lads may  
 accompany him, *not* both—you will find a "tail" in England  
 very troublesome and very costly.

The going of the Shahzadah must depend entirely on whether  
 the Maharajah wishes it, so far as the wishes of his family are  
 concerned at all, but I think the wisdom of his going doubtful,  
 for he is as yet too young to derive any profit for himself, and  
 with respect to the pleasure of the thing, I think the Maharajah  
 would find him a great "taigle" in England Many people, who  
 would be glad to be civil to His Highness, would not choose to be  
 bothered with a second prince, who has no interest or importance  
 My present impression is that the little boy should not go, and  
 that some arrangement should be made for him here, by which he  
 would not lose what he has gained, during your absence

Believe me to be,

Yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE

DR LOGIN

*Extracts from some of LOGIN's letters to LORD DALHOUSIE from  
 Mussoorie.*

Mr Guise has accepted the appointment offered him,  
 and has left to join At parting, His Highness presented him  
 with a Government promissory note for 5,000 rupees, as a kindly  
 acknowledgment of his services

. . . I have thought it right to avail myself of the opportunity  
 afforded me by the return of Mrs Scott (now a widow) with her



Chapter family to England to allow the young boy Tom Scott who has  
 X. for the last four years been brought up with His Highness and the  
 1852-54 Shahzadah to accompany her for the purpose of going to school  
 but in consideration of the advantages which have resulted to His  
 Highness from the companionship of his young friend at so  
 interesting a period of his life and the very straitened circum-  
 stances of Mrs Scott with a family of seven children unprovided  
 for I trust no objection will be made to an allowance of fifty  
 rupees per mensem being granted for the education of the boy  
 during the minority of His Highness Charles Boileau returns to  
 his father at Ferozepore Thus Frank Boileau will be the only  
 European companion who will accompany His Highness to  
 England.

Your Lordship's principal objection to the Shahzadah's  
 accompanying his uncle seems to be the possible inconvenience of  
 the arrangement. I think that might be obviated, and the  
 Maharajah suggests many ways of doing so which shows how  
 much he desires to have him with him. But apart from His  
 Highness's wishes on the subject I would respectfully point out  
 other considerations. As the Maharajah by adopting our faith  
 has deprived himself of almost all political influence among his  
 countrymen they are now inclined to consider the Shahzadah as  
 the rightful representative of their old rulers and judging from the  
 boy's natural disposition it would be advisable to keep him as  
 much with the Maharajah as possible and accustom him to con-  
 sider their interests identical By allowing him to remain in  
 India while His Highness is in England, I fear he will be more  
 encouraged in the idea of his separate importance and it will be  
 difficult for his pretensions to be kept under control as easily as  
 while with his uncle and natural head The ignorant will hold  
 him in estimation for not having crossed the ocean There will  
 be no difficulty about the retention of his caste though it will entail  
 additional trouble and arrangements upon me which I would  
 otherwise escape

I can make arrangements to take two or three Punjabi Brahmins to attend the Maharajah, relatives (and servants) of the Misi Makraj at Lahore, of whose family two or three members still remain attached to His Highness. The old Misi has written to them to say that it is their duty to go, if the Maharajah wishes it, only that they should be careful to keep their caste. If they go with us, there will be no difficulty about the Shahzadah, as regards caste. I am willing to submit to all this trouble, rather than miss the opportunity of opening a way, and showing high-caste Hindoos that it is possible to break through prejudice, and set an example to their countrymen to visit Europe.

The Shahzadah's mother has returned from her home, and will remain here till we leave, when she will go to reside at Hurdwar, where she has a house. She does not like the idea of her son going with the Maharajah, and has sent me a petition to send to your Lordship on the subject. I have told her that as soon as we know that the permission is granted, I will send in her petition against it.

The little boy himself is really not unwilling to go, and has great faith in Mrs. Login being able to persuade his mother to let him go. He has been explaining to her the geography of Europe, showing her the map, and the pictures in the *Illustrated News*, and though, since her arrival, he does not say so much about it as before, his own inclinations are very evident. He has now for the last two years been absent from his mother's influence, for periods of ten and a half and ten months at a time, and seemed to enjoy life thoroughly.

LORD DALHOUSIE to J. S. LOGIN

GOVERNMENT HOUSE, Nov. 29th, 1853.

MY DEAR LOGIN,

You give so many good reasons why the Shahzadah should go with His Highness, if he goes to England, that no objection will

Chapter be made by Government In that case all your arrangements  
X. will be approved.

1852-54 A gift of 5 000 rupees to Mr Guise is both liberal and proper  
and your allowance to Tommy Scott will not be questioned The  
order of the Court shall be sent as soon as received If I go to  
Burmah I'll tell Mr Courtney to let you know I approve of all  
you propose to do

Yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE

*Jan 31st 1854*

MY DEAR LOGIN

I have just received the Court's leave for the Maharajah to go  
to England and I beg you to deliver the enclosed to him

I hope he will do me credit for they have had a sickener of  
native grandees at home lately

Yours most sincerely

DALHOUSIE

GOVERNMENT HOUSE *Jan 31st 1854*

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH

I am very happy to be able to tell you that I have this  
moment received the permission of the Court of Directors that  
you should visit England

In the belief that this intelligence will give you pleasure I  
hasten to convey it to you with my own hand

I have not time to write another word beyond the assurance of  
the pleasure it will give me to see your Highness again

I remain with much respect

Your sincere and faithful friend

DALHOUSIE

His Highness MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH.

*Letter from SIR HENRY LAWRENCE after the death of his WIFE* Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

CAMP, NEAR NEEMUCH, *Feb. 10th*, 1854

MY DEAR LOGIN,

Best thanks to you both for your kind letters and sympathy. Yes! my heart is a sore one, and hard to bear—God's will be done

Yes I will try and go to Rookee Napier will probably be there, and I long to meet him, also I want to see Cautley and Mr Colvin, and also your brother and sister

I am moving towards Bhutpoie, by way of Kohat and Kerowly My very kindest regards to Miss Login

Remember me kindly to the Maharajah

Always, my dear Login,

Yours very sincerely,

H. M. LAWRENCE

Bhajun Lal up to this time had fully determined to go to England with his master, but his people knew well that if he did so he would take the opportunity of declaring himself a Christian, they were therefore bent on preventing his going His convictions were very strong, but in his own case he had not the courage to throw off the bondage of Hindooism, though he had certainly helped the Maharajah in his decision with all the energy of which his nature was capable

When he got back to Futtehghur, to his young

Chapter wife and children, and his father, who was a shrewd  
 X. *bunniah*\* in the city of Furruckabad he became  
 1852-54. unable to struggle against the influences brought to  
 bear on him, and matters reached a climax when, on  
 the occasion of his youngest brother's marriage (which  
 was about to be celebrated with all the display and  
 lavishependiture that rich Hindoosconsider incumbent  
 on them on these occasions), he was induced by his  
 father to prefer a request that in the public procession  
 through the city the *sowares* of His Highness, i.e.,  
 the horses, carriages, and elephants, should form a  
 prominent feature, and that the Maharajah's tents, &c.,  
 should also be lent in which to celebrate the wedding  
 festivities.

Under ordinary circumstances Login would have  
 been very pleased to show some such token of the  
 estimation in which both he and the Maharajah held  
 Bhajun Lal's services and of the respect they would  
 wish to show to a member of his family. It was also  
 according to native ideas, a very customary mark of  
 favour from a prince or noble to a favourite attendant  
 or companion such as Bhajun Lal. But as in this  
 case the bridegroom was a mere child, and the bride  
 of equally tender age, Loginfelt a conscientiousobjection  
 to appear to give his, or the Maharajah's, public  
 sanction to one of those monstrous child marriages  
 which bring such misery into the homes of India.

---

\* Native merchant.

Especially he felt that this would be unbecoming on the Maharajah's part, since he had so lately made profession of the Christian faith

Chapter  
X  
1852-54

He therefore told Bhajun Lal that he could only grant his request on one of two conditions, viz, either the marriage was deferred, until the bride and bridegroom were of an age to understand the importance of the contract they were about to enter into (in which case, besides the loan of the things asked for, the Maharajah would bestow a sum of money to set the young people up in the world), or else, a bond or agreement should be given to the young girl, to the effect that, in the event of her boy-husband dying while she was still marriageable, she should be permitted to select another partner for herself, from among the widowers or unmarried youths of her husband's family. This alternative arrangement was suggested, because it is a frequent custom among the Sikhs to marry their brothers' widows, thus saving the girl from the awful slavery for life, which is the fate of Hindoo child-widows.

Poor Bhajun Lal, in whom family affection and love of money, were equally ruling passions, was persuaded by his relatives to send in his resignation, and thus cut himself adrift from his chance of becoming a Christian. It was a great sorrow to all who had been brought to know, and like him, during the three years he had been with the Maharajah, for he was, indeed, "almost a Christian" at heart, and

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

certainly had been under God, the instrument of confirming the desire of the Maharajah to come out from among his people. A handsome present of money and a horse were given him on leaving.

The Maharajah did not evince much sorrow at parting from him, though he had counted on his going to England with him, but he fully agreed in the propriety of lending no countenance to the iniquity of infant marriages.

It may be as well to mention here all that is known of the later history of Bhajun Lal. He wrote occasionally to Dr Login, but his letters were full of money-getting: he became a *bunniah* in the city of Furruckabad, and at the time of the Mutiny proved himself faithful and was of great use though he was unable to save the property of the Maharajah from loot and destruction. He is now the head of the great firm of tentmakers at Futtehghur (Bhajun Lal & Co.) but all idea of becoming a Christian seems to have passed away.

Early in February, the camp of the Commander in Chief (Sir William Gomm), came to Futtehghur, and with it Colonel Mountain one of the staff who was brought in from the district dangerously ill. He was conveyed to Dr Login's house and attended by him but medical skill was of no avail, and in a few days he died there. As Colonel Mountain was a very great friend of the Governor General Login at once wrote a full account of his last

moments to Lord Dalhousie; to which letter the following is a reply —

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I received your sad letter yesterday, and am grateful for what you tell me of the last moments of my poor friend. He has died the death of the righteous! I never doubted that, soldier and Christian as he was, he would die when his time came as hero or saint should die. I mourn for him with a deep and sincere sorrow.

I wish I could ask the Maharajah to come here to Government House on his arrival, but there are only really two or three rooms in the whole house. Would it be any convenience to you to put up at Government House, Barrackpore? there is plenty of room there, and you would not be far off. I will have it all got ready for him if I hear from you that he would like it. His houses, &c., will have plenty of accommodation at the stables there.

No objection will be raised to the Shahzadah going to England, if the Maharajah still desires it, so you can bring him with you.

Yours truly,

DALHOUSIE

In reply, Login said that the Maharajah would much like to go to Barrackpore, and was full of eager anticipation of his coming visit to England, that he talked of entering one of the public schools and taking his place among boys of his own age, "only hoping he won't get many thrashings."

This suggestion apparently did not meet with the



Chapter Governor General's approval as we may judge from  
 X the answer it elicited —  
 1852-54

GOVERNMENT HOUSE Feb 25th 1854

MY DEAR LOGIN

The proposal to go to public school won't do at all. He is much too old and would be thrashed beyond a doubt periodically. Even a university would not do.

Yours sincerely

DALHOUSIE

A short stay was made at Lucknow *en route* to Calcutta, owing to a kind invitation from the Resident Colonel Sleeman to the Maharajah, asking him to pay him a visit and see the sights of that city before leaving India. As there was no intention of exchanging courtesies with the native Court there the visit was made a private one though as the Maharajah was now on his way to Europe the usual ceremonials were observed as to guards of honour salutes &c. \*

*Letter from Major W. A. G. Mayhew (Asst. A. G. to Brigadier-General T. Palmer Commanding Cawnpore & Division) dated A. G. Office Calcutta 11th March 1854 No. 193:—*

Under instructions from the Most Noble the Governor-General in Council, I have the honour to request that should His Highness Maharajah Duleep Singh halt at Cawnpore he is to be received at that station with a salute of twenty-one guns.

I am further directed to inform you, that His Highness is to be provided with a Jemadar & Guard during his visit.

an escort of irregular cavalry accompanied his carriage to and from Lucknow, and a military guard remained in attendance with him. Whilst at Lucknow, Dr and Mrs. Login were treated with great distinction by the King of Oude and the Prime Minister; they were expressly invited to the Palace, where a *khullut* was presented to Dr. Login, with the addition of a valuable sword as a souvenir, and a pair of diamond bracelets and a ring to Mrs Login.

As Dr Login was not then in the service of the King, these presents could not be accepted, but the King made a request to Colonel Sleeman, that the circumstances of the presentation might be made known to the Governor-General, so that an exception to the ordinary rule might be allowed in this case. The amount of correspondence which this unimportant matter entailed between high officials in India and the Court of Directors at home before the official permission of the latter body was given, would cause no little amusement and surprise to those unacquainted with the idiosyncrasies of red-tape routine.

Colonel—afterwards Sir William—Sleeman, celebrated for his successful efforts for the suppression of "Thuggee," was an ardent ethnologist, and a great authority on the origin of races. The following letter, which he wrote to Login after the Maharajah's visit to Lucknow, may prove interesting, as containing the fruits of some of his researches on the subject of the great westward migration from the Pamir plateau of

Chapter the Hindoo Koosh, and the connection between the  
 X. Indo Teutonic races —  
 1852-54

COLONEL SLEEMAN to DR LOGIN

LUCKNOW RESIDENCY March 17th 1854

MY DEAR LOGIN

I have been reading up the book I spoke to the Maharajah about ( *Pictorial History of England* ) since he left You must get it for him, and let him see for himself that he is of the same race as the men of Kent They were from Jutland and came into England with the Saxons from Friesland and Angles from Holstein who dispossessed the old Britons in the fifth century They were the Juts or old Getae of the Greeks and Romans, who came from the countries about Kashgar Some came down and settled on the banks of the Indus whence they spread to the Jumna and Chumbal whilst others went and settled in western Europe (Sweden and Denmark) from them Jutland received its name Tell His Highness that their chiefs Hengist and Horsa were Juts like himself their family came from Kashgar and the Caspian and settled in Jutland while his part of the family settled on the Indus spreading to the Punjab The Juts took possession of Kent and some of the first kings were Juts like the Maharajah's ancestors and both might with equal justice boast descent from Odin the god of war they also took possession of the Isle of Wight and the Isle of Thanet All the old Kentish families are descendants of Juts and of the same race as Duleep Singh. You can show him some of the beauties of Kent as you go up the Thames and he will have an opportunity of seeing it if he visits Lord Hardinge Tell him with our kind regards that we would be very pleased if he would present the beautiful ring which he did Mrs Sleeman the honour of offering he to the first

pretty Kentish girl he sees, and claim brotherhood with her, on the authority of an old Indian officer, his friend, Colonel Sleeman. If she is of pure Kentish descent, he may feel assured that they are members of the same great family! I trust His Highness will cultivate his great talent for music—it will be a great resource to him hereafter.

Believe me, my dear Login,

Yours very truly,

W A SLEEMAN

At Benares, an addition was made to the party in the person of the Pundit Nehemiah Goreh, a young and learned Brahmin convert, who had joined the missionaries there to work among his country people, but who was induced by the Rev W Smith (senior missionary) to accept Login's proposal, and accompany Duleep Singh to England for three years, as his tutor in Oriental languages. Nehemiah Goreh was of the greatest benefit to Duleep Singh, he was so truly earnest, so pure-minded and simple, and his faith so strong, that his example was a living lesson. He returned to India at the expiry of his term to resume his work, unspoiled by all the attention and admiration he had excited.

The hot weather was beginning when the party reached Government House, Barrackpore, where every arrangement had been made for His Highness's comfort, his own carriage and horses having been sent on

Chapter a head. A note from the Governor General has  
 X.  
 1852-54 awaiting Login —

MY DEAR LOGIN

Come to breakfast if you can on Monday There shall be a room ready for you Of course this is only if convenient to you I have sent you a huge memorial from the mother of the brat you have brought accusing you of many enormities of which child stealing is the least !!

Yours very truly

DALHOUSIE

Of course since the mother of the Shahzadah had lodged a petition against her son's going to England, the idea was abandoned Her uncle, Meah Mullick, who came to Calcutta as her *takeel* to present it was seized with cholera. He refused the advice or assistance of any other doctor than Login himself, to whom he despatched a messenger in the middle of the night imploring him to come to him! No time was lost by the Doctor Sahib in obeying this urgent summons and he remained with the poor man till he was out of danger \*

---

*Extract from official letter dated Fort William, 18th April 1854 :—*

His Lordship thinks it only just to you to state with reference to the memorial of the Ranees of Dookhoo that the Government entirely acquits you of the charge of attempting to influence the Shahzadah's religion and to add, that you have not sought so conceal from the Government the reluctance of the Ranees to allow their son to accompany the Maharajah

A few days after his arrival at Barrackpore, the Maharajah was received by Lord Dalhousie.

Chapter  
X.  
1852-54.

GOVERNMENT HOUSE, *April 3rd, 1854*

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I have ordered the "Sooramooky" to be at Barrackpore to-morrow by ten a m. The best plan for the Maharajah to follow will be to come down in the steamer, taking tiffin on board, so as to be here by five p m. I can then have the guard out for him at half-past five, and he can return to Barrackpore by road, in the cool of the evening. For this purpose he can take my carriage to the half-way stables, if you will have his own waiting him there. If he were to come during the day, I can't well have the guard out. He will receive his salute (twenty-one guns) when he lands, and will have the Body Guard troopers if he goes through the town.

Pray impress upon His Highness that while in India he receives all the honours of his rank—in England he will be entitled only to courtesy \*

Yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE

On the 19th April the Maharajah and his party

\* *Extract from a Letter of LORD DALHOUSIE to JOHN LAWRENCE —*

CALCUTTA, *April 11th, 1854*

"The Maharajah Duleep Singh is here, and sails on the 19th. He has grown a great deal, speaks English well, has a good manner, and altogether will, I think, do us credit in England, if they do not spoil him there."—"Life of Lord Lawrence," vol 1, p 452

Chapter sailed for England. The following is Lord Dalhousie's  
 X letter of farewell to his ward on his leaving India —  
 1852-54

GOVERNMENT HOUSE April 18th 1854

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH

Before you quit India I have been desirous of offering you a parting gift which in future years might sometimes remind you of me.

Since that day when the course of public events placed you a little boy in my hands, I have regarded you in some sort as my son. I therefore ask you before we part to accept from me the volume which I should offer to my own child, as the best of all gifts since in it alone is to be found the secret of real happiness either in this world or in that which is to come.

I bid you farewell my dear Maharajah and beg you to believe me always

With sincere regard

Your Highness's faithful friend

DALHOUSIE.

His Highness MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH

## CHAPTER XI

### ENGLAND.

THE voyage to England was uneventful On the deck of the steamer, the young Maharajah bade farewell with great equanimity to all his Punjabi retainers, his mind being full of pleasurable anticipation of all the wonders he was about to see on the other side of the "Kalee Panee"

Chapter  
XI.  
1854-56.

In Egypt he met with a cordial reception Through the instrumentality of Mr Bruce, whose kind offices Lord Dalhousie had bespoken, the carriages of the Viceroy were placed at his disposal In order that he might have time to see something of the sights in the neighbourhood of Cairo and Alexandria, it was arranged that he should remain in Egypt, until the departure of the following steamer

In this way, he was enabled to pay a visit to the Pyramids, an expedition which he much enjoyed, and where he, like the boy he was, insisted on organizing a race to the top with his companions, much to the disgust of the Arab guides, who, on these occasions, are accustomed to take forcible possession of the unlucky



Chapter  
XI.  
1854-56

tourist and haul him by main force from block to block, up the side of the pyramid, demanding black mail from him, at every particularly perilous point in the ascent and who regarded the Indian Prince as their especial prey and as furnishing an opportunity not to be missed of unlimited *backsheesh*. They took their revenge however—these gallant ‘sons of the desert’—when the party prepared to inspect the interior of the pyramid. Not a second time were they to be hauled of their lawful dues and once engulfed in the *literally Egyptian darkness* within their hapless victim was seized on, dragged pushed and hustled where and how they would till—what with the confusion pressure and especially the stifling heat caused by bad burning torches and swarms of ill-odorous half naked followers of the Prophet—their ‘distinguished visitor’ was only too glad to re-emerge into the open air, with a very hazy idea indeed as to where he had been (save that it was as near proving his own tomb as that of any old Egyptian monarch!) but not a little surprised to find himself still intact and that his dusky conductors had considerably refrained from relieving him of even one of his pearl necklaces, but contented themselves with demanding a heavy toll in coin for the privilege of their *attendance*!

Whilst at Cairo he was taken to visit the American Mission Schools and was greatly interested to see so many orphan girls being educated in the Christian religion

While still in Indian waters, at Aden and elsewhere, the regular salute ordered by the Governor-General was given the Maharajah, on the vessel which conveyed him dropping anchor; but there was some uncertainty in Duleep Singh's mind as to the exact amount of recognition to be awarded him by the Home Government. When on board the homeward-bound steamer from Alexandria, therefore, there was a certain degree of anxiety in noting the exact number of guns fired to greet his arrival at Malta and Gibraltar, especially was this evident at the latter fortress, where—spite of his well-maintained *sang-froid* before his fellow-passengers, who were deeply interested in the proceedings—a close observer could discover that the Maharajah was in reality quietly counting the number, as each report was heard, and when the total reached twenty, and there could be no doubt that a full “royal salute” of twenty-one guns was intended, he could no longer repress the look of satisfaction which appeared on his countenance

On Login's application to the Treasury, Sir Charles Trevelyan arranged that His Highness's baggage should be passed through the Customs, as is usual with royal visitors, and he also obtained, as a mark of consideration from the Court of Directors, the compliment of having a residence provided for him at their expense during his stay in England. Until this could be arranged, apartments were taken for him at “Mivart's (Claridge's) Hotel”

Chapter  
XI.  
1854-56.

Chapter  
XI  
1854-56

A close correspondence was still kept up with Lord Dalhousie, whose interest in the reception of the young Prince will be shown by the following letters, written in reply to Login's announcing his arrival —

GOVERNMENT HOUSE CALCUTTA

*August 10th 1854*

MY DEAR LOGIN

Your letter of 24th June gave me very great pleasure. You have made a most favourable start in your London life and I have no doubt all will go on agreeably and upon the excellent plan you have laid down for the Maharajah. He has made a very pleasing impression on those to whom he has been introduced, several of them having already written to me to that effect. My friend Sir George Couper \* will I am sure do all that his own many duties will allow him to do to help you.

Sirdar Lena Singh Majeetia has died at Benares. The Shah zadah's mother has arrived there and wrote to me lately. It was a very civil letter and, among other things, protested that she had never said a word against you in her life!!

We are all very quiet here in India. The king of Ava is sending up an envoy to Calcutta and Dost Mahomed is settling to be well with us at the other side of the land. I enclose a letter for the Maharajah.

Yours very truly

DALHOUSIE

September, 1851      Chapter  
   XI.

MY DEAR LOGIN,

1854-56

I have had the pleasure to receive yours of July 21th

The reception that the Maharajah has had, and the pleasing impression his unassuming manners and well-bred bearing have made, are very agreeable to me.

You have done a tidy little bit of business in getting a house out of the Court, and I advise you to rest content with that, and not seek for more "marks of consideration," or they may be anxious for his return to Futtehghur!

Sir G Couper writes in warm terms of His Highness, he is very happy to be of use to you

Yours, &c ,

DALHOUSIE

Chapter  
XI  
1854-56

pearl earrings. After he came to England, he only wore his complete national (Sikh) costume, with all its splendid jewels, when he went to Court, or at any great entertainment, but it was not for some years after this that he fully adopted English dress for all occasions. The Court of Directors were agreeably impressed with the unassuming manners and quiet dignity of the deposed young ruler of a warlike nation, and accorded him a friendly welcome. The Queen and the Prince Consort, very soon after the Maharajah's arrival gave him a special audience and he returned charmed with the kindness of the Queen's manner to him, and every successive interview added to the warmth of the feelings with which he regarded the Queen and the Prince. Her Majesty gave orders for a full length portrait of him to be painted by Winterhalter and for this he gave sittings at Buckingham Palace twice a week. This brought him much in contact with the Queen and Prince Albert for they were always present, and greatly amused by his naïve remarks on all he saw and heard in this, to him strange country.

The candour and straightforwardness of his comments seemed especially amusing to the Prince, who delighted in drawing him out and getting him to talk freely to him.

Duleep Singh contrasted favourably with the generality of natives of India in the truthfulness of his character, and this was encouraged in every way by his guardian, who was most desirous that his love of

truth, hatred of deception, and habit of calling "a Chapter  
spade a spade," in which he had been trained, should XI.  
1854-56  
not be rubbed off by intercourse with the world.

His zeal for truth, and disapproval of "polite lies," were sometimes unsparingly displayed at this time. On the way back from a large party, on one occasion, he said, "I am afraid you believe the Duke of —— to be a good man. Now, I can tell you that he does not speak truth, for I heard him tell Lord A—— that he had quite enjoyed his son's visit, and hoped to invite him again, for he was a delightful companion, and he had just before told *me*, that he was nothing but an ass, and not worth my making his acquaintance!" and another time, "Did you hear Lady —— praising that lovely Lady ——'s dress, telling her she thought it the most beautiful at the Drawing-room? when I had heard her say to Mr. D——, that she looked a perfect fright!"

At a large dinner given in his honour, by a General just returned from high command in India, where he had already met Duleep Singh, the hostess pressed the Maharajah to take some curry she had had specially made for him. She went on to say that no doubt it was very inferior to what he was accustomed to, but she trusted, in that case, that he would honestly tell her if it was not good. The poor boy had been politely endeavouring to swallow a little of the mixture, which was certainly very unlike an Indian curry, but when his hostess said this, he believed she *meant* it, and, putting down his fork and spoon with a sigh of relief,

Chapter  
XI  
1854-56

he ejaculated, Oh ! you are quite right, it is horrible—take it away ! The dismay of the hostess may be conceived ! She thought herself an authority on Indian dishes and this was the *plat* of the occasion !

During a visit to Windsor with the Maharajah, the Queen was graciously pleased to confer the honour of knighthood on Login—a mark of royal approbation which gave sincere pleasure to Duleep Singh. The latter's own rank was already determined to be the same as that of an European prince, and as chief of the native princes of India he was authorized to take precedence next after the Royal Family. Just before this announcement was publicly made, a large dinner party had been arranged in honour of Duleep Singh at the house of Sir Robert Inglis, the Primate (Archbishop Longley) Lord Shaftesbury, and other notables being invited to meet him. Poor Sir Robert who was too good a Churchman to like the idea of any Indian prince (although a converted one) taking precedence of the Primate of the English Church came in great distress of mind to consult Login as to what could be arranged, to prevent such a scandal taking place in his house. He was assured that the young Prince would make no difficulty in giving way to the Archbishop and he went away much relieved. On the way to the house Sir Robert's dilemma was explained to the Maharajah and the suggestion made that he should signify to his host his willingness to come *after*

the Archbishop Lady Login remembers how eagerly Chapter  
 he assented, saying, "I am very glad: *now* the Arch- XI  
 bishop will have to take the *oldest* lady present and 1854-56.  
 this time surely I may please myself I always get  
 such old ladies!" When he was told of Sir Robert's  
 suggestion, that he and the Primate should walk in  
*together*, his shout of laughter startled the solemn  
 servants, who were marshalled to usher him in, but his  
 face of dismay, when a *second old lady* was brought up  
 to him, was truly comical!

Sir John Login steadily resisted all the proposals of  
 different religious bodies to bring forward the distin-  
 guished convert to Christianity on public platforms,  
 and strenuous efforts were made by the Exeter Hall  
 party to induce him to allow his name to appear in  
 religious and missionary reports

He explained his reasons fully to Lord Shaftesbury,  
 who acknowledged their force and propriety, and this  
 correspondence was the commencement of a warm and  
 sincere friendship between them Login's Indian  
 experience being frequently called upon, for the benefit  
 of missionary and philanthropic work, during their  
 many conferences in London, and at Lord Shaftesbury's  
 country house, St Giles, he was also brought into  
 close correspondence, with the Secretary of the Church  
 Missionary Society, the Rev. Henry Venn

Hitherto, since the arrival of the Maharajah in  
 England, the subject of the Koh-i-noor had not been  
 touched on in conversation in his presence, his



Chapter  
XL  
1854-56

Governor and Lady Login were however, well aware of his sentiments on the matter, as, indeed he had made no secret of them. They knew that, to him, 'the Koh i noor' meant something beyond a mere jewel of fabulous value,—in his eyes, and in the eyes of Oriental nations it was an object of superstitious veneration as the symbol of imperial sovereignty over Hindostan and the countries adjacent, marking its possessor as chief among the rulers of Southern Asia, it was on this account that Runjeet Singh had made such strenuous efforts to get it into his hands, as setting the seal to his ambitious designs, and for this reason too, that he never trusted it far from his own person but had it always conveyed with him, under a strong guard, wherever he went.

Lady Login was present by special desire at all the sittings for the Maharajah's portrait, given by him at Buckingham Palace. At one of these, the Queen, in the course of conversation, asked her, "If the Maharajah ever spoke of the Koh i noor, and, if so, did he seem to regret it?" observing at the same time, that she had never mentioned the jewel to him, and would feel a certain delicacy about wearing it in his presence. Lady Login replied, that he had never spoken of it since he came to England, though he had often done so in India and had been greatly interested in the descriptions of the operation of re-cutting it. Her Majesty then said that she hoped Lady Login would be able, before the next sitting,

to ascertain what the Maharajah's feelings were on the subject, and whether he would care to see it, now that it was re-cut, adding, "Remember to tell me all he says "

Chapter  
XI.  
1854-56

The task was by no means an easy one to Lady Login, for she dreaded what the Maharajah might say, and did not wish to bring the matter formally into discussion. No good opportunity presented itself, as the days went on, until just the day before the next sitting, when, as she was riding with him in Richmond Park, she managed to lead the conversation up to the subject. Then trying to put the question in a casual manner, "Would you like to see the Koh-i-noor again?" she waited in some anxiety for his reply. "Yes," was his answer, "I would give a great deal to hold it again in my own hand?" "Why? For what reason?" "I should like to have it in my power myself to place it in Her hand, now that I am a man. I was only a child then, when I surrendered it to Her by the Treaty; but now I am old enough to understand"

The feeling of relief caused by this answer was great, and it was with a light heart she repeated it to the Queen on the following day

Unknown to the Maharajah, who was engaged with the painter at the further end of the room, Her Majesty at once gave orders for the Koh-i-noor to be sent for from the Tower. After some interval, there was a slight bustle near the door;

Chapter the arrival of the jewel and its escort was an  
 XI  
 1854-56 nounced and it was brought in, and presented to the  
 Queen.

Taking the diamond in Her hand Her Majesty then advanced to the dais on which the Maharajah was posed for his portrait and before the astonished young man realized what was passing he found himself once more with the Koh-i-noor in his hand, while the Queen was asking him if he thought it improved? and whether he would have recognized it again? At first sight indeed he would hardly have done so, the cutting and European setting had so altered its character yet in spite of these it remained still the

Mountain of Light and it was with some emotion and eagerness that he walked to the window and minutely examined it making remarks on its diminished size and greater brilliancy whilst the spectators could not help watching his movements with some anxiety. It was a nervous quarter of an hour for Lady Login.

But when at length he had finished his inspection Duleep Singh walked across the room and with a low obeisance presented the Koh-i-noor to his Sovereign, expressing in a few graceful words the pleasure it afforded him to have this opportunity of *himself* placing it in Her hands. Whereupon he quietly resumed his place on the dais, and the artist continued his work.

The Queen and Prince Consort held many conver

sations with Login, on the subject of the Maharajah,\* and took particular interest in all the details given them, with regard to his education. The Pundit, Nehemiah Goreh, having been mentioned in high terms on one of these occasions, Her Majesty expressed a wish to have him presented to Her, it was arranged that Sir John should bring him to the Palace, where he was received in private audience, as the Prince was desirous of an opportunity of personally questioning this learned and interesting Brahmin convert.

Chapter  
XI  
1854-56

The Maharajah witnessed, for the first time, the ceremony of the Prorogation of Parliament, and, by her Majesty's special direction, was accommodated with a seat on the "woolsack"

*Letter from LOGIN to LORD DALHOUSIE*

ROEHAMPTON, Nov 22nd, 1854

MY LORD,

I had the pleasure of seeing Sir G. Couper a few days ago, and he mentioned that he had acquainted your Lordship, by last mail, that it was Her Majesty's intention to confer the honour of knighthood upon me, so that your Lordship will have been prepared for the announcement of it in the *Gazette*. It has been as much a spontaneous act of Her Majesty's favour, as it is possible to be, and can only be considered in the light of a com-

---

\* Her Majesty was very anxious thoroughly to understand the Maharajah's history and position, and by her request, Login drew up a memorandum on the subject for her private perusal, from which document much information in the earlier portion of this work has been culled.

Chapter XI  
1854-56

pliment to the Maharajah and a token of Her Majesty's high approval and encouragement For my own part, I must confess that I should feel more easy under my new dignity if a good many others who have far higher claims were equally honoured. Sir James Melvill while expressing his own satisfaction at this mark of Her Majesty's approval assures me that it has been highly gratifying to the Court of Directors

The Maharajah expresses himself much pleased that Her Majesty has thus honoured me but he is shrewd enough to see that the compliment will be fully more useful to himself than to me

It was Sir James Melvill himself who suggested that I should look out for a larger and better residence for His Highness than that at Wimbledon which was the only one available at the time and this was backed by Sir Frederick Currie and Sir George Pollock I mention this in case you may think that I have been asking for more marks of consideration from the Court of Directors!

At the Treasury I have found Sir Charles Trevelyan most anxious to help me and through his kind representations the Maharajah has been exempted from income tax and all other assessed taxes This has been done without any official representation or question as to its legality merely as a matter of expediency and by private reference to the Inland Revenue Board which Sir Charles has had the kindness to arrange for me I am anxious however that the Maharajah should be fully aware of the value and extent of these exemptions and marks of consideration which have been shown to him and I have given him to understand that I have not been exerting myself merely to give him a greater amount of money to hoard up but to enable him to be generous and liberal His natural disposition is I am afraid very much the reverse of this indeed at times I am ashamed of his stinginess but so long as I find him willing to agree to any act of liberality I may recommend I ought not to complain that he never originates any!

As it is now time that he should begin to take an interest in his own accounts, I propose to make over to him the management and direction of all charitable disbursements as a commencement, and to show him how much he has it in his power to be bountiful, in consequence of the liberality which has been shown to him Chapter XI. 1854-56

I intend, in addition to his ordinary allowance for charitable purposes, to place to the credit of this fund for benevolent purposes—

1st —The amount saved to him by the liberality of the Court of Directors in furnishing him with a residence during his stay in England

2nd —Amount saved by exemption from income and assessed taxes

3rd —By remission of import duties on his baggage

4th —Discount on tradesmen's bills, and, perhaps, the table allowance paid by me, on account of myself and family

In his position, and with the disposition he evinces, I think it will be very desirable to set off all these items, in order that he may see how much the liberality of others has placed in his power

Whether he may apply it all to benevolent purposes will depend on himself. He has already, out of this fund, agreed to give 1,000 rupees for yearly prizes at the schools at Amritsur, near Lahore, £100 to the Patriotic Fund, a donation of £500 to an Institution for Destitute Natives of Distant Lands, of whom there are now so many in London, and is to subscribe £250 annually for its support during his stay in England

ROEHAMPTON, Dec 23rd, 1851

I have to thank you Lordship for your kind letters of Sept and Oct 21st. I am very much gratified to hear that Her Majesty should have Herself informed you of the good impression which

Chapter the Maharajah had made and of the genuine interest which she  
 XI. takes in him.

1854-56

I have already acquainted your Lordship that the Maharajah has had an opportunity of meeting the Coorg Princess and that he was favourably impressed with what he had seen of her. She is indeed an amiable and engaging little girl and so far as one can judge is likely to turn out well. Mrs. Drummond has brought her several times to visit my wife and children and the Maharajah has also twice called on the Princess and Mrs. Drummond with me. I am however very anxious that any advances towards intimacy should come from himself and I know that although he is inclined to be pleased with her he is rather apprehensive of leading her to expect too much from his attentions. I have little doubt if it were not for her father's character and the dread he has of coming into contact with him he would be more disposed to cultivate acquaintance with her. As I have however been lately engaged in reading the History of the Sikhs with him and especially Carmichael Smyth's Reigning Family of Lahore he perceives that, in respect to their parents they are similarly situated and that the same feeling which may prevent him from wishing to be connected with the Rajah of Coorg's family is likely to be an obstacle to his forming an alliance *elsewhere*.

I have thought it right that he should be aware that everything regarding his early history is known in England and that the attention and kindness which have been shown to him have been caused by a desire to encourage him to raise himself out of the mire of treachery murder and debauchery in which but for God's grace he would have been overwhelmed. As he is now able to appreciate the difference between the standard of Christian morality which he ought to aim at and the miserable debauchery from which he has escaped I think that the perusal of the history of the Sikhs and of his family (which he acknowledges to be on the whole correct) is likely to be useful to him especially if accompanied with remarks introduced with sufficient delicacy by

one who has his welfare much at heart, and that it is calculated Chapter  
 not only to render him contented, but most thankful to have XI  
 escaped from the dangerous position in which he had been placed 1854-56  
 Your Lordship is doubtless aware that Her Majesty has been  
 pleased, after due consideration, to give the Maharajah the rank  
 and precedence of an European Prince When the Queen did me  
 the honour to ask me what were the Maharajah's own wishes on  
 the subject, I said that His Highness was so confident of Her  
 Majesty's goodwill towards him, that he was satisfied that she  
 would graciously order what might appear best for him In con-  
 versation with Colonel Phipps, regarding the manner in which  
 His Highness was to be received at Osborne, I agreed with his  
 suggestion, that the Maharajah should go down to the Isle of  
 Wight to reside for a short time, and be invited to dine frequently  
 at Osborne, being received and treated as a subject of high rank,  
 and I was therefore taken by surprise when Colonel Phipps  
 informed me, some time afterwards, that it had been, on consider-  
 ation, determined that he should have the rank and precedence of  
 an European Prince I mention this, in case you may think that I  
 have been taking any part in this elevation \*

The Maharajah was made very happy during his  
 visit to Osborne. The Queen and the Prince Consort  
 treated him with the most gracious kindness, and

---

\* It is the intention of the Queen to invite the Maharajah to come down here  
 for a couple of days early in next week I will take care that one of Her  
 Majesty's yachts shall be in attendance in the docks to bring His High-  
 ness over You are probably aware that, after deliberation, Her Majesty has been  
 advised that the Maharajah is entitled, in this country, to the same rank and pre-  
 cedence as an European Prince — *Quotation from a letter to Logan from Sir Charles*  
*Phipps, dated Osborne, Aug 14th, 1854.*



Chapter  
 XI.  
 1854-56

all the royal children made much of him treating him as if he were one of themselves. The Princesses introduced him to their special domain—the Swiss chalet in the park, which was fitted up for them with all conveniences for cooking and housewifery, here they entertained him and their brothers, and exhibited their skill in cookery. The Maharajah thoroughly appreciated the joke when the Princes, affecting greater proficiency in the art of boiling potatoes, basely took forcible possession of the cottage, locked out the rightful owners, and with Duleep Singh's valuable (!) assistance, proceeded themselves to prepare the repast.

From this time forward, a correspondence was established between the Maharajah and the young Princes and many letters (now extant) bear witness to their cordiality and friendliness towards him. Birthday presents were exchanged, and sketches executed by the Prince of Wales and Prince Alfred are still to be seen, treasured in the same book with photographs of the Royal Family taken by the Maharajah on one of these visits, with the friendly assistance of the Prince Consort. In some of these photographs, the young Princes are seen dressed in the Maharajah's Indian costumes.

The Queen never forgot the Maharajah's birthday; as regularly as it came round arrived the royal birthday gift. A valuable thorough bred hunter was the first of these he also received, at different times,

a dog, a beautiful time-piece, and other gracious tokens of her kindly interest in him.

Chapter  
XI  
1854-56

At Lord Hardinge's invitation, the Maharajah, Sir John and Lady Login paid a visit to South Park, near Penshuist. They spent here a delightful week among the pretty Kentish scenery, and the Maharajah did his best to carry out Sir William Sleeman's injunctions!\*. As the Maharajah's horses had been sent down beforehand, the party were able to take many rides, and thoroughly explore the neighbourhood around. The late Governor-General (then Commander-in-Chief in England, in succession to the Duke of Wellington) was a fine, hale-looking, old man, with the remarkable bright-blue eyes peculiar to his race, and it was with a grand, old-world courtesy that he received as his guest the ex-Sovereign, whose armies he had defeated in three bloody fights, yet whose crown and kingdom he had magnanimously spared.

This was Duleep Singh's first experience of English country life, later on, with Sir John and Lady Login, he went down to Scotland for a short time, and from Edinburgh, paid a visit to Lord Morton at Dalmahoy. On the return journey, they stopped for a week at Hickleton Hall, in Yorkshire, belonging to Sir Charles Wood (afterwards Lord Halifax), at Wentworth, the seat of Earl Fitzwilliam, and at Teddesley, Lord Hatherton's place in Staffordshire; and thus

---

\* See *ante*, p. 326

Chapter extended his acquaintance with the homes of English  
 XI. noblemen.  
 1854-55

He thoroughly enjoyed English life in all its phases and acquired a keen taste for sport. As he was very anxious to get some shooting in the Highlands, Castle Menzies, in Perthshire, was hired for a period from Sir Robert Menzies and the two or three succeeding years of his English life were mostly passed there, the house at Roehampton being occupied merely during the winter and spring months.

It had been decided by Lord Dalhousie that Duleep Singh should attain his majority at the age of eighteen, although according to Sikh custom and the Treaty of Bhyrowal,\* his minority would end when he became sixteen when had he not been deposed in 1849, he would have been left to himself to manage his kingdom. As time was now passing, the Maharajah was naturally anxious to know what arrangement (if any) was contemplated for his future and the following letter to Lord Dalhousie will show that at this early period the question was already being pressed by Login, on the attention of Government —

WIMBLEDON Oct 1854

Sir Charles Wood has no doubt told your Lordship the opinion he had formed of the Maharajah on closer acquaintance during his visit at Hickleton and he told me that he had also communi-

cated with you on the subject of his settlement on coming of age Chapter  
 Since the visit to Hickleton, His Highness has spoken to me on XI.  
 the matter, and I think it right that your Lordship should be 1854-56.  
 informed of the views he entertains, in order that I may be able,  
 before the question is settled, to prepare His Highness for such  
 an arrangement as may be decided upon On mentioning to the  
 Maharajah that it was very desirable that the arrangements for  
 his settlement on coming of age should be made while your  
 Lordship remained in India, he quite agreed with me And I  
 then asked him what his own wishes were on the subject? He  
 said that his own wishes at present were, not to receive an  
 assignment of land or any estate from Government, as in that  
 case he would feel under obligations to reside there, and could  
 not, perhaps, have the power to dispose of it, if he wished to do  
 so, but that he was anxious that such accumulations as may  
 have taken place during his minority, by lapses of pensions from  
 the allowance of "not less than four lakhs, and not more than five  
 lakhs, per annum," to which he and his family and servants were  
 entitled by the Treaty, should then be made over to him, and  
 that from that sum he could appropriate a part to purchase an  
 estate, and allow the balance to be deposited for him in  
 Government securities His Highness is evidently under the  
 impression that the "not less than four lakhs" mentioned in the  
 Treaty were to be allowed to him and his family and servants in  
 perpetuity, and that he is entitled to such accumulations as may  
 take place by lapses of pensions from this fund, and, as your Lord-  
 ship may view the matter in a different light, it is very necessary  
 that you should be apprised of it, to prevent any future mis-  
 understanding

I told him that I should mention his wishes to your Lordship,  
 and also to Sir Charles Wood, but said, at the same time, that he  
 might rest satisfied that whatever justice and goodwill towards  
 him might dictate would be done

As His Highness had never before so decidedly expressed his own

Chapter wishes I am anxious that your Lordship should know them and  
 XI. that you will favour me with your instructions. I shall, of  
 1854-56 course say nothing on the subject to him until I hear from your  
 Lordship

Since his return to Wimbledon he has been applying himself assiduously to his studies. My letter from Edinburgh would give all particulars of His Highness's visit to Dalhousie Castle. He certainly enjoyed his stay at Hickleton Hall, where he made many new acquaintances and I think, made a very favourable impression on all.

Yours

J S L.

GOVERNMENT HOUSE Nov 11th, 1854

MY DEAR LOGIN

It gave me great pleasure to receive letters from you and the Maharajah when at Edinburgh and to learn that you had paid a visit to my children at the Castle

You may well believe that I anticipate my daughter Susan's coming with great delight, not free however from anxiety regarding this pestilential climate. I have resolved to go next summer to the Neilgherries as practically the nearest point to Calcutta at which I could take refuge. We are all very quiet here in India. Instead of a Russian army from Cabul we have received a friendly mission from the Ameer and I am in daily expectation of a similar mission from the King of Ava. Your former potentate the King of Oude is very ill. He has wine-drenched and wasted himself to death's door and I fear we shall have that wretched Government prolonged throughout another minority. Old Sleeman is quite done. Colonel Outram is to act and will no doubt remain permanently

I remain my dear Login

Yours very truly

DALHOUSIE

ROEHAMPTON, *April 9th*, 1855. Chapter  
XI.

MY LORD,

1854-56

The Maharajah continues to apply himself to his studies, and has made much more progress than formerly, because he now puts some heart in his work. At present he devotes his attention to the German language, which, from its affinity to the Sanscrit and Hindu is, he thinks, more likely to be useful to him than French.

Perhaps his intercourse with the Prince Consort has been a spur to application in this particular branch. He has great facility in acquiring languages, however, and this is likely to be very useful to him, if he travels. Among his other accomplishments, he is learning photography, with much success. This also has been greatly encouraged by the Prince Consort, who has taken great interest in his progress. He has had the honour of dining with Her Majesty several times since I last wrote, and continues to receive most kind attention. The Queen has caused a likeness of him to be published, from Winterhalter's picture, and I think the artist has been most successful. I am happy to say that he does not appear to be in any way spoiled by these attentions; he seems to appreciate them in a very proper way. On receiving your Lordship's last letter, I explained to him (as you requested me) his mistake in supposing that lapses from the four lakhs were to fall in to him to increase his allowances. He listened in silence, making no remark, but appeared satisfied to trust his future settlement, on coming of age, to the justice and liberality of your Lordship and the British Government.

I mentioned in a former letter that His Highness intended to subscribe liberally to get up a Home for Strangers—Asiatics, Africans, &c, visiting London. He was present at a meeting held for the purpose a fortnight since, and there is every prospect of the institution being successful. I am quite aware of the danger to be apprehended, in allowing him to occupy too

Chapter XI. conspicuous a position in such matters but I trust with  
 1854-56 prudence to avoid all risk and at the same time enable him  
 to effect much good this seemed especially an object which  
 he ought to help

I think I told your Lordship that I was engaged in making  
 up a conveyance for the wounded in the field. I think I have  
 been successful and that I have been able to turn my Indian  
 experience in such matters to good account

With earnest wishes for your restoration to health

I remain &c

J S L

Jan 1855

MY DEAR LOGIN

Your description of Duleep's life in England is really very  
 gratifying If this lad does not grow up with right notions and  
 principles and well-directed sentiments it certainly will not  
 be your fault I agree with you that if he will only follow when  
 rightly led we need not be disappointed that he does not  
 lead the way I have no right to consider you under my  
 authority at present but you may be assured that the  
 unrestrained correspondence between us is a real pleasure  
 to me The Queen has again mentioned to me the Maharajah's  
 second visit and she also alluded to the Coorg affair I am glad  
 to find that it promises well and I hope may come to some  
 thing although like other cases of true love it may not  
 always run smooth!

I am very shaky and nearly done

I beg to offer my most sincere congratulations to Lady Login  
 which I omitted to do before when I wrote to congratulate  
 you

Believe me my dear Login

Yours very truly

DALHOUSIE.

Duleep Singh's education continued all this time to be regularly carried on by masters for the various subjects, and, on the whole, he made very fair progress, though there was always a difficulty in keeping his attention alive. He had a great admiration for Shakespeare, even if he could not quite reach the same pitch of enthusiasm as his English master, who, to the amusement of his pupil, always spoke of "the divine William" as an *emanation*! In the study of German he made some advance, but Italian was his favourite European language; and as he contemplated a lengthened residence in Italy during the following year, his Italian tutor, Signor Montanari, accompanied him to Scotland, to continue his instruction. The Rev. Henry Estridge, an Oxford coach, was at the same time engaged as resident English tutor, and remained in that capacity, and as companion to the Maharajah

Chapter  
XI  
1854-56.

Soon after coming to England, Sir John Login obtained from Lord Hardinge a commission in a Queen's regiment in India for Charles Boileau, and received from a member of the Court of Directors the promise of a cadetship for the other brother, Frank. He had thus the satisfaction of seeing both lads launched in the world under favourable auspices. Entering the Company's army, Frank Boileau\* landed in India

---

\* Now Lieut.-Colonel commanding the Mhairwarra Battalion



Chapter just before the Mutiny broke out served at the siege  
 XI. of Delhi where he was severely wounded, and was  
 1854-56 obliged to invalid home in 1859

The Boileaus having left, Duleep Singh now found congenial companions in the young Leslie Melvilles sons of the Earl of Leven, who lived near him at Roehampton. With them he had constant intercourse and greatly enjoyed their society, and that of other lads of his own age. Granard Lodge the house at Roehampton then occupied by the Maharajah could only be got for six months, but Ashburton Court was afterwards secured for as long as he cared to live near London.

Young Tom Scott had come to England with his mother for his education some time before this and was later on sent by Login to a tutor at Wimbledon to prepare for the army. Mrs. Scott after remaining two or three years in Europe returned to India in 1856. Just before sailing in December she came down to Ashburton Court on a visit to her friends and then Login undertook to see after her son whom she was leaving behind her. He was enabled through the kindness of Sir Henry Rawlinson to procure him a commission in the Indian army.

Poor Mrs Scott! Little did those who then bade her farewell dream of the awful death she was going forth to meet and that her son on following her to India would be met on landing by the terrible announcement that his mother brother and sister

were among the first victims of the outbreak of the Chapter  
 mutiny in the vicinity of Lucknow !  
 XI  
 1854-56.

Sir John was beset by requests from photographers and illustrated papers for permission to take Duleep Singh's likeness for publication, but this he always steadily refused, on the plea, that the Maharajah was in England for the purpose of study, and had no desire to court notoriety

Besides the portrait by Winterhalter, the Queen ordered a bust of the Maharajah to be executed by Baron Marochetti, which, by Her Majesty's directions, was afterwards "*tinted*" by Mr. Millais, somewhat in the style which Gibson's "*Venus*" rendered so much in vogue at this period \*

Addiscombe was at this time the Military College of the East India Company, and the Maharajah having, at Logan's suggestion, given a yearly prize to be competed for by the cadets, he was present, as the guest of the Governor (Sir Frederick Abbott), at the annual inspection and prize-giving, and was an interested spectator of the "sports," although neither then nor afterwards did he evince any special military tastes

The close of the Crimean War brought to the notice of the public the hard case of many discharged soldiers, who had faithfully served their Queen and country,

---

\* A bust of the Princess Victoria Gouramma of Coorg was treated in the same manner. they are both to be seen now in the gallery at Windsor

Chapter yet whose pension was insufficient to form their sole  
 XI. support and whose wounds disabled them from earning  
 1854-56 their livelihood in any save the lightest forms of  
 employment Sir John Login was one of the first to  
 urge their cause and—before the Corps of Com-  
 missionaires was formed of which he was one of the  
 original promoters—he was the very first to set the  
 example of employing these men in positions of trust,  
 by taking into the Maharajah's service in the year  
 1855, six of these wounded heroes as stablemen, house  
 porters and gardeners.

One of them Harry Naylor, a handsome young  
 dragoon had been in the famous "Balaclava Charge"  
 and his appearance as a groom in the Maharajah's  
 livery his breast covered with medals attracted much  
 attention on the part of strangers

At Castle Menzies the Maharajah received at  
 different times many distinguished visitors\* and met  
 with much kindness and attention from the neighbour-  
 ing landowners particularly the Marquis of Breadal-  
 bane and the Duke of Athole whose acquaintance he  
 had already made in town

The friendly intercourse with Taymouth was a

Among these were most of the chief officials at the India House viz Sir James Hogg and his son Colonel Hogg (now Lord Magh ramorne) Mr Vernon Smith (Lord Lyveden), Sir James Melvill, Sir George Pollock (afterwards Field Marshal), Sir Frederick Currie Colonel Sykes, &c. also Mr Dalrymple Marjoribank (Lord Tweedmouth), the Earl of Leven, Lord Hatherton Mr John Bright Mr Elliot M.P. and many others.

pleasant feature of the sojourn at Castle Menzies. Lord Breadalbane (at that time Lord Chamberlain), entertained as his guests a constant succession of eminent personages, to many of whom the Indian Prince was an object of great interest, in this way, he met Archbishop Tait (then Bishop of London), the Bishop of Oxford (Samuel Wilberforce), Lord Clarendon, the Duke of Leeds, Mr. Delane, editor of the *Times*, Lord Bathurst, Lady Ailesbury, Lord and Lady Kintore, and Lord Stratford de Redcliffe.

Great amusement was created at Castle Menzies on more than one occasion when the Duke of Athole's party arrived to luncheon, having driven all the way from Blair Athole, a distance of about fifteen miles, in the so-called "boat-carriage." It really consisted of a boat on wheels, and however convenient it might have been—as the Duke was fond of pointing out—for crossing rivers or lochs, it could scarcely be called an elegant equipage, or comfortable for a long journey.

The Duke of Athole persuaded the Maharajah to adopt the "kilt" for shooting on the moors, and undertook the ordering of one for him from his own tailor!

Seeing their master wearing the Highland dress, the ambition of several of the Maharajah's English servants was fired to exhibit themselves also in that becoming costume. Thornton, who had accompanied His Highness from India as his valet, often attended him on the moors wearing the kilt; but this fell far

Chapter  
XL  
1854-56

short of the ambition of Russell the butler, who went in for a full dress costume of the royal tartan, with sporran silver ornaments, and all complete ! Being a fine looking man no doubt he thought the result repaid him.

One evening at dinner Lady — asked Sir John what distinguished visitor had called at the Castle that afternoon ? as she had been absent at Taymouth He named several ladies but Lady — enquired if no *gentleman* had been there because she said as she drove over the Weem Bridge she met an aristocratic looking stranger in full Highland dress evidently on his way to the Castle and she was afraid that her admiration must have been expressed in her countenance for he *actually blushed* as he gracefully doffed his cap Both Sir John and the Maharajah had seen the person in question and knew it to be Russell who was at that moment filling the lady's glass with wine which in his tropidation, he managed to spill all over her and the table and so created a diversion under cover of which he effected his escape from the room !

Picnics were a great delight at this time the house party used to go out on the moor and meet the sportsmen at an appointed spot where luncheon was spread. Ponies were allotted to the ladies each led by a gillie or groom, and it was very amusing to see the competition that went on to get the Balachava hero Harry Naylor, as escort.

At one of these picnics, a renowned professor, who had come from London to teach the Maharajah botany, fell a victim to his ignorance of entomology; for, selecting a nice green grassy hummock as his seat at lunch, in the middle of the repast he suddenly precipitated himself with a yell into the centre of the table-cloth, knife and fork in hand, having discovered that he was sitting on an ant's nest all the while! Later in the afternoon the Professor was found testing the depth of the various pools in the neighbouring burn on his way home!

The Maharajah was able once more to indulge his passion for hawking, and his hawking-parties attracted much attention and curiosity, as the revival of an old sport now almost obsolete in Britain. John Barr, the well-known falconer, was in his service, and no expense was spared in securing first-rate falcons

The small group of houses known as the "toun" of Weem lay just outside the gates of the park at Castle Menzies, and here was the parish kirk which the family and household attended every "Sabbath" The long sermons then usual in the Scottish kirk were rather a tax on Duleep Singh's patience, though his behaviour was most exemplary, even when the metrical Psalms were led off by the precentor, with the aid of a tuning-fork,—ostentatiously exhibited as if it were a species of musical instrument—and though the situation was rather trying for him, when, after praying for the Queen and Royal Family, the old

Chapter  
XI.  
1854-56

minister invariably added a petition enumerating the particular graces he desired for 'the Prince now sojourning amongst us.'

An amusing incident occurred one Sunday at the Free Kirk, Aberfeldy which some of the household were in the habit of attending in the afternoon.

The day was very sultry and the congregation consequently rather somnolently inclined, especially was this the case with the Castle Menzies' servants, who were tired with their long, dusty walk. The text was from Acts xvi. 14—"Lydia, a seller of purple" and the voice of the minister, a noted preacher, acted on all as a soothing charm when, perhaps, becoming aware of this fact he suddenly thumped the pulpit cushion and raising his voice, declaimed in stentorian tones, 'And—Lydia—' Instantly to the amazement of the preacher and congregation a voice from the gallery replied 'Yes, Sir John!' while an unfortunate stillroom maid, whose name happened to be Lydia, being observed at the same time standing erect in her pew and gazing round with bewilderment and consternation, revealed at once the fact that here was the author of this unseemly interruption self convicted of sleeping during the sermon!

The adulation paid to the young Prince at this time, especially by ladies, was not calculated to produce a beneficial effect upon him, though, to his credit be it said, he seemed to prefer the plain

speaking, or honest censure, by which his friends sought to counteract such lavish and unwise flattery. There is no intention to portray Duleep Singh as a perfect character, or saint. He was surrounded by temptations of an unusual sort, yet had hitherto led a blameless life as regards morality. Some infirmities of temper, indolence, or selfishness, showed themselves with, perhaps, the Oriental tendency to be indifferent to suffering. Of the latter, an instance may be given —

Chapter  
XI.  
1854-56.

During the first shooting season at Castle Menzies, when the house was full of guests, there arose one evening at dinner much chaffing talk amongst the young men concerning a cat which had been shot, when discharging their guns near the village, on their way home. Sir John "hoped it was not a poor woman's pet." Duleep Singh "did not care if it were! It had no business there!"

Lady —, a devoted admirer of the Maharajah, when enlarging afterwards in the drawing-room to the other ladies on his gentleness and amiability, undertook to prove her words, by dressing up in character as the poor woman who had lost her cat, in order to excite his compassion.

On the entry of the gentlemen, therefore, a poor, weeping woman was found in the billiard-room, "waiting to see His Highness." So pathetically did she relate the story of the loss of her favourite and only companion, her "paur cattie," that young



Chapter I have built a school here for fifty, and have twenty three  
 XI. children always I hope soon to have another at Neilgherries  
 1854-58 With kindest love to Lady Login.

Ever yours affectionately

HENRY M. LAWRENCE

P S —I enclose a letter to the Maharajah.

The following year, Duleep Singh, having gone to the Highlands early in the season for salmon fishing, wrote from thence to his guardian —

CASTLE MENZIES *June 30th, 1856.*

MY DEAR GOOD FRIEND

I enclose in this a note for the Prince of Wales will you kindly send it on?

I intended to write to you before but there is little to write about We are getting on pretty well with our housekeeping and are all well I did not catch a salmon, as I hoped the day you left but as soon as I catch one *myself* it shall be sent straight to Lady Login at Roehampton.

I commenced lessons seriously this morning with Mr House and hope to get on very well with him I trust to hear that Lady Login and all of you continue to be quite well When will Lady Login and the children come to Castle Menzies for I begin to feel very lonely without them? I miss them dreadfully I hope Hancock sent the things I ordered for the little one With my love to the children

I remain, yours affectionately

DULEEP SINGH

P S.—Please bring the Treasury of Histories when you come It was packed for India

## CHAPTER XII

### ITALY.

[Readers already satiated with descriptions of Italian travel are recommended to skip this chapter.]

As a tour on the Continent formed part of the scheme for the Maharajah's education, it was arranged that, previous to his return to India, he should spend some months in France and Italy. Accordingly, in December, 1856, he left England, accompanied by Sir John and Lady Login, and by his friend, Mr. Ronald Leslie-Melville (then an undergraduate of Christ Church, Oxon.), whom he had persuaded to join the party. To avoid publicity, and ceremonious receptions at the various foreign Courts, it was thought advisable that the Prince should travel as a private individual, under the name of "Mr Login."

Chapter  
XII.  
1856-57

As the party travelled in the old-fashioned style, taking their own carriages with them from England, the following quotations, from a diary kept at this

Chapter period, may prove amusing to those unfamiliar with  
XII. the Italy of thirty years ago —  
1856-57

CHAMBERS Jan 2nd 1857

Made our first essay at Marseilles, in travelling by post in our own carriages for there is no more rail after that place You would have been amused to see the carriages starting—a long string of horses to each and each postillion dressed differently one only had any pretension to being smart and he had jack boots a sheepskin coat a conical hat with a flower in it and a pipe in his mouth! We pitied him very much for it was a hot day and he must have been nearly boiled in that warm coat after bumping up and down so long (for he did not rise in his stirrups like an English postillion) The horses are great heavy strong animals all decorated with bells The harness is wretched, and always breaking being mostly of rope the traces are *always* rope and very insecure One postillion manages four horses sitting on one of the wheelers and guiding those before with reins We enjoyed the posting very much and all got out and walked on through the villages when we stopped to change horses. In the evening we reached Brignolles our halting place the cracking of the postillions whips as they come near their destination is something astonishing It is like a succession of pistol shots let off close to your ear

Next day we ascended the Esterolles pleasantly but our descent was not so comfortable The view from the mountain on going up is beautiful and as the sun was setting it looked to perfection The waters of the Mediterranean were so bright and blue the hill-sides covered with cork trees pines and olives varied with jutting crags deep ravines and frightful precipices (without any parapet) below us with the bold outline of the mountain tops beyond made a glorious panorama At the post house on the top we remained so long owing to some delay about the horses

(on going down we had four horses only, though coming up we had ten), that the gentlemen walked on, and I was to follow in the carriage. It was nearly dark when at last we set out, and, to make up for lost time, the postillion set off at a hand-gallop, and I was very nearly upset over the precipice before he could pull up. When we overtook the gentlemen it was quite dark, and, as they got in, the postillion was warned to go carefully, but nevertheless before long, the same thing happened again, and we were brought up *bump* against a post! In a minute we were all out, and the first thing we saw was Presanzini, the courier, and Thornton, thrashing the postillion, whom they had discovered to be drunk! Here was a nice dilemma! still five miles to the bottom, and no help near. We decided on leaving the drunken postillion behind, with Presanzini and Mr Cawood (the Maharajah's secretary) in the *fourgon*, to wait till we sent a sober driver, and we took the lady's-maid in the rumble, with Thornton. Taking the sober postillion from the *fourgon*, we reached Cannes very late, for we had a further adventure with a jibbing horse, that seemed very anxious always to look in at the carriage windows, instead of going along quietly.

A most amusing dinner party at the ——— The Maharajah would not go, but made some excuse of having a cold. Sir D Brewster and the Anstruther-Thompsons were there.

A little girl, a niece of the hostess, was introduced at dessert. She had evidently heard of the Maharajah, and was very anxious to see him. She was talking to me in the evening, after dinner, whilst I was sitting beside her aunt, and when her aunt happened to express great regret that the Maharajah had not come, the little girl suddenly said, "*Is he really a blackamoor? What is a blackamoor?*" Her aunt looked perfectly horrified, and exclaimed, "What a vulgar expression! I am ashamed of you!" evidently thinking I must be greatly offended, and the child was seized on by the uncle and asked, "Whom she could have heard speak of the *Prince* in that manner?" With the utmost *naïveté*

Chapter she at once replied, Now aunt, you know you said so this  
 XII morning to Miss Crow!

1856-57 Poor Mrs ——— looked so relieved when she heard me invite the little girl to pay me a visit in the morning to see the black Prince! The Maharajah was much amused when he heard the story and made himself very agreeable to the little girl who went home delighted.

We enjoyed our stay at Nice very much, as we had lovely summer weather. A picnic was arranged to Villafranca and St Hospice by Major Reynolds, in the Maharajah's honour to which all the *élits* of Nice were invited but the Maharajah had one of his obstinate fits and it was with much difficulty we prevailed on him to go. He consented at last with the stipulation that I would keep near him and not leave him alone among all those strangers. He does so hate to be lionized and be looked upon as a sort of natural curiosity! The excursion to Villafranca is usually made on donkeys, but as the Maharajah could never be persuaded to mount one of those animals, very good horses were provided for us. The ride there and back was beautiful the first part of the way across the mountains and the rest all along the shores of the Mediterranean by a rocky footpath overhanging the sea, just fit for donkeys though we found our horses more sure footed than the less noble animals ridden by the rest of the party. We were all very merry particularly when entering Nice on our way home for a wicked little donkey boy (who seemed to think I approved of the measure) would every now and then give a sort of scream as a signal to the donkeys on hearing which the animals set off helter-skelter at a tearing pace. No matter who was riding them lady or gentleman there was no holding them! The ladies screamed and several of the party I believe had tumbles from their Jerusalem ponies before we got up to them owing to their falling on their knees scampering downhill. Indeed I saw one gentleman roll over his donkey's head—for the creatures would halt as suddenly as they started with an abruptness calculated

to launch their riders into space! Being mounted on nobler steeds, who were deaf to the cries of the donkey-boy, we could survey the scene in safety ourselves, and the absurdity of it was altogether too much for the Maharajah's politeness, for, I regret to say, he went into such fits of laughter that he nearly tumbled off his horse himself!

Chapter XII.  
1856-57.

We were engaged to a large party at Lady Ely's in the evening. It was a great crowd. Several of the Empress of Russia's suite were there, for the Elys seem great friends with the Empress, though the rest of the English society here are very indignant at the airs the Russians give themselves. It is a great pity, there seems to be such a bad feeling between them, and it is difficult to say on whose side the fault lies. When the Empress came first, she used to go out in great state, with outriders preceding her, armed with long whips, which they cracked loudly, ordering every carriage to draw up to the side till Her Majesty passed. This several English refused to do, and complained of such overbearing conduct to the authorities, so, as it was feared that the place would suffer by the withdrawal of the English visitors (they having threatened to do so), Her Majesty was induced to adopt a quieter style, and now she drives about in a more unassuming manner. We met her returning from some church ceremony, attended by her Court ladies, all in *full* evening dress! She looked very ill and delicate. The Grand-Duchess Helen was expected this evening, but could not leave the Empress, who was unwell.

I met several old acquaintances here, amongst others, Lady William Harvey, who was our neighbour on Putney Heath. Lady Ely introduced me to Lady Dufferin, and young Lord Dufferin, who is one of Her Majesty's Lords-in-Waiting. He was very amusing, and I cannot quite make out whether his pretty lisp is real or affected! \*

---

\* Little did the Maharajah dream, on this occasion, that a day would come when he should stand arrested as a disaffected subject, by order of this same Lord Dufferin, then Viceroy of India!

Chapter

Expected to have found John Bright at Mentone as Mr

XII.

E Ellice, M P had told us Mr Bright was looking out for us at  
1856-57 his desire but he had not arrived.

GENOA, Jan. 19th Sir John slipped down some steps at the Hotel de la Ville from the slipperiness of the marble so to guard against evil effects is to keep quiet for a day We have therefore given up the idea of going to see Turin from here thinking it will be better to do so on the return journey

Jan 20th Put off our departure as Sir John did not feel quite recovered. John Bright having come in to spend an hour or two with him and talk politics the Maharajah Ronald Melville and I set off to visit the Fieschi Convent, on the hill above Genoa It was very interesting and amusing also as we were escorted by two nuns (neither of them young nor pretty) and shown all over the place they seemed charmed to have a chat with our *laquais de place* and entered into any joke that was made by us with great glee. We saw their dinner laid out and a small decanter of wine for each nun they laughed heartily when we said we hoped they did not drink all their allowance! Their dormitories looked very clean and airy but no washhand-stands were visible only a little pump of water outside the door in the corridor! Their pillows were like pin-cushions, and I wish you had heard them laugh when the Maharajah asked how they managed bolstering matches with them he and Ronald illustrating what he meant to the nuns intense delight!

We also went to see the famous Catina or emerald dish, kept at the Duomo and said to have been presented to King Solomon by the Queen of Sheba The Maharajah was very anxious to examine it having been told it was the largest emerald in the world and being exceedingly proud of the size and lustre of his own (the emeralds of Runjeet Singh were celebrated) he was therefore immensely relieved to find that it was only a piece of green glass after all.

FLORENCE Florence is famed for its flowers and flower-girls, Chapter  
 the latter mostly large, coarse, good-natured-looking *contadine*, XII  
 who all wear enormous Leghorn hats flapping about their faces 1856-57  
 They are most persevering in their attentions, and *will* decorate  
 you with a bouquet *per force*, though, as they always *want to be*  
*paid*, their attentions are not quite so disinterested as strangers  
 at first imagine! I used to laugh heartily at the way they  
 victimized both the Maharajah and Sir John.

We drove to the Cascine, or darry of the Grand-Duke, on the  
 way we met the Grand-Duke himself, and his suite, also the  
 young Grand-Duke, and his bride. We had the use of Lord  
 Normanby's (the English Ambassador) box at the Pergola, and  
 went three times, the music was good, but the singing and  
 acting very poor That, however, does not matter to the  
 Florentines, as they merely go to the opera to pay visits to their  
 friends, as we do at their houses, during the day, in England The  
 first time we went to hear a new opera, called *Violetta*, which  
 the Maharajah had never heard, by the time it was half over, we  
 discovered it to be the *Traviata*, under a different name! and  
 we had always refused *on principle* to hear the *Traviata* in  
 England! The other two were *La Sonnambula* and *Linda*  
*di Chamouni* On Saturday we had a pleasant dinner-party at  
 Lord Normanby's, and heard a good deal of singing afterwards  
 We met all the diplomatic "swells" there—Prince de la Tour  
 d'Auvergne, the French Ambassador, the Piedmontese, Duc de  
 L——, also the Tuscan Prime Minister, and Baron Hugel  
 Maria Phipps and her son were there also

One evening, when we were dining at the Embassy, the great  
 bell of the Duomo began to toll Immediately a Florentine  
 nobleman, who was of the company, rose from the table and  
 with a word of apology to the hostess, quietly left the room  
 The rest of the assemblage seemed to regard his action as the  
 most natural in the world, but the Maharajah was very curious  
 to know the reason for it "He is one of the *Misericordia*



Chapter XII. 1856-57 Brothers was the reply to his question ' and he is on duty to-night After that we heard more about the Misericordia and several times met their procession in the streets carrying litters with sick people going to the hospital They look ghastly in the extreme, with their long black dresses which cover them from head to foot having round holes for the eyes The people hold them in great respect and when they pass all uncover their heads

The Society is composed of noblemen and gentlemen of Florence, and the Grand Duke himself is one though since the Revolution he has not ventured to take any part in the duties They dress in black monastic attire with a black silk visor to conceal their face a certain number are told off daily for duty and on the tolling of the city bell—whatever is their employment or engagement—they must hasten to their guard room and assume the dress and go out to perform their duty whatever it may be—whether to carry sick to the hospital or to rescue sufferers from any danger or accident So many are appointed to go forth collecting for their charity fund and the first person I saw on arriving, was one of them holding a box for charity I was quite startled—he looked like a demon in his dark dress with his eyes flashing through the holes in his visor

Rome I was delighted with the Coliseum and I think I should like to spend hours there Nothing in Rome I think recalls the idea of former grandeur and present decay more than that magnificent pile so full of historical interest Inside all around the amphitheatre they have erected stations for pilgrims to walk or crawl round for penance and indulgences and there is a great cross put up and a pulpit where a friar preaches frequently All this is incongruous-looking and I wish it were altered Just as we left the Coliseum the Pope (Pio Nono) drove past in a carriage and four with an escort of the Guardia Nobile formed of Roman nobles He is a very benevolent looking old gentleman and gave a special benediction to our party as he passed though the Maharajah did not receive it at all

in a proper spirit, and declared the Pope had only made "snooks" at him! We were told that we were very lucky, as he is not often to be seen out. The guard of French soldiers all knelt as he passed, and so did everybody but ourselves, of course, the gentlemen took off their hats to him, as they would to our Queen.

Chapter  
XII  
1856-57

The moon being full, Ronald returned to the Coliseum, to see it by moonlight, as I have still a cough, I did not venture. We advised him not to fall into the same mistake as is attributed to Mr Macaulay, the historian,\* who also went to see the Coliseum by moonlight, and when in the shadow of the arches, was suddenly jostled by a man, who passed with great rapidity. Immediately afterwards Mr Macaulay missed his watch! The "thief" was still in view, with great presence of mind, Mr Macaulay at once gave chase, overtook, knocked him down, and repossessed himself of the stolen article. Fearing the arrival of accomplices on the scene, Mr Macaulay now made the best of his way home, where the first object that met his view was *his own watch*, safe in the spot where he had left it before going out! Overwhelmed with the idea of the robbery which he had committed, he rushed off to the police-office, to find an unfortunate stranger describing with much excitement the shameful outrage of which he had been the victim!

Feb 12th Went to St John Lateran. The "Santa Scala," or Holy Staircase, was crowded with penitents, going up on their knees, repeating a prayer at every step. Nothing would serve the Maharajah, but he must also try the sensation of this form of penance, which he declared was not at all difficult, and he would undertake to do it much faster than any of them! The steps are covered with planks, to preserve them from the wear of the pilgrims' knees, and these planks have already been renewed

---

\* The late Lord Macaulay

Chapter three times the steps themselves are said to have been those of  
 XII. Pilate's judgment seat down which Christ walked after being  
 1856-57 condemned. We visited Macdonald's studio and saw a number  
 of busts (mostly of English nobility) and a fine copy of Young  
 Augustus we ended by going to Saolini, the great cameo-  
 cutter, and arranged to have our profiles taken by him next  
 day

*Feb 13th.* Mr Gibson showed us his studio to-day and we were delighted with all we saw His "Venus" is beautiful the hair is tinted in imitation of ancient Greek statues and the skin has a faint life-like glow The Cupid also is very lovely I admired his bust of the Queen, but though the large statue for the Houses of Parliament is greatly admired I did not think the likeness was so good. There was a beautiful thing there "The Sleeping Cenci in Prison" just finished by his pupil Miss Homer a young American lady Arranged with Mr. Gibson about sittings for the Maharajah's bust

*Feb 14th* To-day shortly after noon the great bell of St Peter's tolled to announce the beginning of the Carnival and at two p.m. we went to the Corso and sat in our hired balcony to see the procession pass. It is a very gay scene and full of animation The whole street is choked with people in gay and fancy costumes shouting and laughing leaving barely space for the brightly decorated carriages filled with people all attired in fancy dresses and having on wire masks who pass up and down slowly The balconies and windows are full of ladies and gentlemen and gay with flags and draperies of all colours each person has a store of chalk *bon-bons* or *confetti* bouquets of flowers, and real *bon bons* which they fling at every passer by the balconies throwing at the carriages and *vice versa* Every one wears a wire mask or runs the risk of being blinded by the chalk dust even with a mask one does not escape scatheless Every now and then gay processions of the military civic authorities or cardinal

magistrates varied the scene, and the whole was wound up by a race of six or more horses (without riders), goaded on by steel plates hanging loose all over their bodies, and stuck full of sharp spikes, which flapped about as they galloped, and urged them almost to madness. This race is repeated each day of the Carnival, and formerly used to be run by poor unhappy Jews, for the amusement of the people! but of late years they have purchased exemption from this degradation, by paying for handsome prizes, for the owners of the fortunate horses

Chapter XII.  
1856-57.

The Maharajah and Ronald joined the procession of carriages, and went up and down, pelting and being pelted by gentlemen, and exchanging bouquets with ladies; but I contented myself with looking on

*Sunday, Feb 15th.* . . . On our return from the English service, we went with John Bright into San Carlo, to hear Dr Manning preach\* on the Immaculate Conception of the Virgin, and were glad to find that his arguments and reasoning were so miserable. I expected to hear much more specious reasoning. He gave several very far-fetched interpretations to several texts, to give colour to his own side of the question. Poor man! he certainly seems very earnest in his belief himself, he looks worn-out with penance and fasting, and his voice is quite weak. It was quite lost in that great church. He is evidently a trap set for the English and American visitors, who are all attracted by his eloquence and good style of delivery.

*Feb 17th.* Rather sleepy after last night's ball at the Princess

\* . . . Dr Manning is to preach to-morrow afternoon in the church of San Carlo, perhaps Lady Login and yourself, may wish to hear him—he will not, I suspect, overthrow your Presbyterianism, any more than the faith I hold with the Society of Friends!

Yours very sincerely,  
JOHN BRIGHT

*Feb 14th, 1856*

Chapter Doria s It was a grand sight and a rare one for the magnificent  
 XII. picture-gallery was lighted up and many splendid rooms There  
 1856-57 were a great many royalties there—the reigning King of Bavaria

Queen Christina of Spain and her daughters and I believe  
 Henri Cinq Comte de Chambord—though I did not see  
 him We were introduced to the Princess Doria she is one  
 of our Shrewsbury family

The Caldwells, and John Bright with his pretty daughter  
 Helen have just dined with us and gone home early as  
 is the good custom in Rome We were a merry party Mr  
 Bright very eloquent about the *wrongs* of India to the  
 Maharajah's infinite amusement! and Colonel Caldwell giving  
 us histories of what was done in Lord Wellesley's and Lord  
 W Bentinck's time! I have promised John Bright to go  
 out with him in the carriage to-morrow and run the gauntlet  
 up and down the Corso His daughter is very anxious to do so

*Feb 18th* Went for an hour in the carriage with Mr Bright  
 as agreed upon We were deluged with bouquets and bon bons  
 and all sorts of harmless missiles and thumped with distended  
 bladders Poor Helen Bright had to mourn the loss of a lovely  
 bouquet of sweet violets just presented to her by a gentleman  
 which was snatched out of her hand by a laughing imp of an  
 Italian boy Her father scolded her for not having kept a  
 tighter hold but next minute the laugh was turned against him  
 for his own bouquet was snapped away out of his hand as he  
 was in the very act of presenting it to a lady!

*Feb 10th* Went out on the Campagna, near Cocilia Metella's  
 tomb to see the hounds throw off We managed to keep up  
 with them in the carriage by going at a hand gallop along the  
 Appian Way as the fox doubled back and forward across the  
 road We were just in front of the King of Bavaria's carriage  
 and his people were calling to ours to make way for His  
 Majesty But this did not at all fall in with the ideas of our

coachman, whose sense of his own importance would not suffer him to give place to anybody, so whipping up his horses he kept the "lead" throughout the chase!

Chapter  
XII.  
1856-57

*Feb 20th.* The masque ball was a very curious sight. We engaged a box at the theatre, so as to look down upon it without being crushed, and were constantly invaded there by parties of ladies and gentlemen of our acquaintance, all in masks and dominoes. It is ridiculous what a complete disguise a domino is, for Fred Kane and Ronald, who were of our own party, left us, and came in again, and we never knew them, and Sir Norton Knatchbull never recognized his own wife!

Mr. Bright was in our balcony that morning, looking on at the Carnival, and got into a combat with Lady Knatchbull, on the opposite side of the street. She got the worst of it, for "the Quaker" made a capital shot with a sugar-almond, which effectually silenced the enemy's guns! As she was an utter stranger to him, we had to introduce him at the masque ball, in order that he might make his apologies for the result of his combativeness!

*25th, Ash Wednesday.* At half-past eight, Ronald, Sir John, and I, started for the Sixtine Chapel, to see the Pope put ashes on the cardinals' heads. We could not persuade the Maharajah to go with us, as he declared, when he went to bed the night before, that now the Carnival was over, he did not know when he would get up again! As ladies must dress in mourning to gain admittance to this ceremony, I wore a long black veil instead of a bonnet, Sir John his political uniform, and Ronald full evening dress.

We got there a few minutes before the door was opened, and were greatly amused to see the anxiety of those assembled to get in *first*, though there was plenty of room for all. One very fat lady was sitting on the doorstep, in such a way that the door

Chapter could not be opened till she rose She looked as if she had sat  
XII there all night—her hair and veil were so untidy !

1856-57 I was separated from the gentlemen as men and women are not allowed to sit together,—and Sir John from his uniform being supposed to be at least an ambassador—I was handed into the large pew specially set apart for the ambassadors wives It was empty and remained so all the time (I suppose the ambassadors are all bachelors.) During the service I observed the ambassadors all highly amused at seeing the solitary lady who represented their womankind and each seemed to ask the other who on earth I was? Sir John was asked to go in among the ambassadors but declined and went with Ronald to a less conspicuous place It was lucky he did so for every one of the ambassadors present had to go and kiss the Popes toe afterwards !

At last the procession of cardinals came in with their attendants and after their robes (or rather the skirts of them) had been unrolled and smoothed down they were assisted up into their perches and displayed to our admiring gaze a collection of as heavy sensual worldly looking countenances (with only one or two exceptions) as could anywhere be found

Soon after in came the Pope—a fine looking old man—with a great crowd of officials the most important being a bishop in golden boots—of which portion of his attire he appeared very proud—and whose privilege it seemed to be to take the Popes mitre off and put it on again at intervals of about five minutes. Six or eight people were kept constantly occupied in assisting the Pope to get up sit down kneel turn to the altar and bow at different parts of the service The Pope chanted the service beautifully he has a splendid clear voice The cardinals changed their robes frequently and when the time came for them to go up to be sprinkled with ashes they put white napkins on their backs and over that grand gold vestments and went up one after another holding their little scarlet skull-caps in their

hands The Pope put the ashes on the crown of each head, just on the tonsure, and then they kissed his hand, still kneeling After the last cardinal had retired to his place, the King of Bavaria advanced and went through the same ceremony—save that he, and all those who followed, had to kiss the Pope's *toe* instead of his hand, then came Queen Christina's husband, and all the big-wigs and ambassadors It was rather a shock to one's feelings, remembering the original meaning of this solemn ceremonial, to see how, as soon as the Duke returned to her side, the Queen of Spain, assisted by the Princesses, at once set to work—amid much smothered laughter—to blow at his hair, and dust off his clothes all traces of the ashes, using for the purpose their own handkerchiefs, and also a clothes-brush, with which they had come ready provided! This occupation, and the merriment it caused, lasted them throughout the remainder of the service Meanwhile, the stream of people continued to pass up and back, till nearly everybody in the church, including the soldiers, had been sprinkled by the "Holy Father," and it was not till one o'clock that all was over, and we returned to the Hôtel de Londres thoroughly tired

*Feb 26th* Mr Gibson took us round to see all the principal studios, and pointed out the beauties of each work of art We visited, amongst others, the *ateliers* of Mr Spence, Mr Penry Williams, Signor Tenerani, the great Italian sculptor, Wolff, the German one, and Miss Chawner

*Feb 28th* We had an amusing party last evening Sir Charles Nicholson, Mr Gibson, and Mr and Miss Bright dined with us There was a great deal of table-rapping, and Sir Charles gave a most interesting account of Egypt, where he has lately been travelling This evening we dined at Colonel Caldwell's, and met a large party, amongst whom were the Baron von Orlich and his wife The Baron recognized Sir John



Chapter as an old acquaintance having met him in India, some years ago  
 XII when on his travels there  
 1856-57

*March 2nd* Baron von Orlich kindly got us permission to see the Etruscan Museum of the Marchese Campana, and escorted us to see it. This evening was fixed for a treat to which we have long been looking forward.

As a special compliment to the Maharajah, the Pope gave orders to have the sculpture galleries of the Vatican lighted up with *flambeaux* for his inspection and we were permitted to invite a select company of our friends to enjoy at the same time this unique opportunity of viewing the statuary under such favourable conditions. A man with a torch was stationed behind each statue while Mr Gibson and Mr Macdonald gave us a sort of art lecture showing the special points in each figure and their relative degrees of beauty. We enjoyed it all very much and it has added greatly to the interest and usefulness to the Maharajah of this visit to Rome. For this special favour from His Holiness we are of course indebted to the good offices of Mr Odo Russell the representative here of the British Government.

*March 7th* Visited the Quirinal Palace which is the Pope's summer residence saw his private apartments and a few good pictures.

*March 9th* Went to a party in the evening at Mr Forbes the clergyman's house and met Mrs Beecher Stowe. Had a long conversation with her and found her agreeable and amusing altogether a younger and more pleasing person than I had imagined.

*March 11th* Took the Brights to Tivoli with us for a picnic and spent a delightful day. Spread our luncheon on the grass in the gardens of the Villa d Este and in the basin of a dried up fountain in the centre of which was a stone galley the Maharajah seated himself to personate Neptune as he informed

the company, though he was too much engaged with a game-pie Chapter  
 to spare much time for flourishing his fork as "trident!" After XII.  
 luncheon we started to see the waterfalls, Miss Bright and I 1856-57  
 mounted on respectable ponies, the gentlemen walking We  
 enjoyed our five-mile ride exceedingly, though I think the  
 gentlemen found it very hot, for I observed the Maharajah toiling  
 along with his coat off, in his shirt-sleeves! On our way home  
 we nearly met with an accident The two "politicians" (Mr  
 Bright and Sir John) were too deep in discussion on the present  
 condition of India, its needs, and its future government, for any  
 one to dream of separating them, so we left them to follow by  
 themselves in one carriage, whilst Miss Bright, the Maharajah,  
 Ronald, and I, went on in the other The two young men were  
 in high spirits, and were making a great noise in the carriage,  
 something went wrong with the harness, and the coachman got  
 down to put it right, when either the voices, or something else,  
 startled the horses, and off they dashed, leaving the coachman  
 behind on the road! We were only saved from imminent peril  
 by Ronald's agility, in clambering on to the box and getting hold,  
 somehow, of the reins

*March 12th* Left Rome on a lovely morning, and travelled  
 along the Appian Way, on our road to Naples, our route having  
 been carefully and minutely made out for us, by kind Baron von  
 Orlich, so that we might not miss any of the points of interest  
 We had no adventures with brigands, the line of road is so well  
 patrolled, by both horse and foot soldiers, and there are military  
 stations at short intervals, all along to Molo de Gaeta

*March 14th* It was dark when we reached the gates  
 of Naples, and as the hotel was a long way off, we were very  
 weary of dragging through the streets at a foot's-pace, for  
 travelling carriages are forbidden by law to go any faster in the  
 streets At last we reached the Hôtel Vittoria, and, after a late  
 dinner, got to bed

Chapter  
XII  
1856-57

From Naples the party visited Pompeii and Herculaneum, and ascended to the crater of Vesuvius.

*March 20th* Dined at the Stranges and met some nice Italian families. We were much taken with the young Marchesa Bugnano and her husband and mother in law. The Dowager Marchesa is an Irish Roman Catholic—a sensible old lady who treated Sir John to all the politics of Naples. Her son the Marchese is quite a Neapolitan having been educated on the Continent yet he is a great admirer of England and English liberty and speaks English very well. His pretty wife is a fascinating creature the daughter of one of the Neapolitan princes. She is very lively and amusing.

I was also introduced to Captain Farquhar R.N. He commands the frigate lying off this port to protect the English inhabitants in case of any outbreak. He told me he knows several of my sailor cousins and had been Flag Lieutenant to my uncle Admiral Patrick Campbell at the Cape of Good Hope.

Naples was left on the 24th March, and the party proceeded by steamer to Leghorn, calling at Civita Vecchia on the way. Stopping for one day in Florence, they went to Bologna, having had some difficulty in crossing the Appenines for an avalanche of snow had carried away great part of the road, thus rendering it impassable for horses. The travellers were obliged to get out and walk and bullocks were procured to drag the carriages over this part during this operation the pole of the *fourgon* snapped which caused a further delay. At Padua they joined the railway again, and so reached Venice by the first of April.

*April 4th* . We saw two *live* horses, belonging to the Austrian General, being exercised on the Campo Maito, followed about by a crowd of admiring boys. It seems that, a few years ago, some of the Venetian gentlemen, anxious to teach their daughters to ride, united together, built a riding-school, and made a ride round a small island in the town. When, however, the horses arrived, they were looked upon by the inhabitants as a show—very few of the people ever having seen one; and at last the whole project had to be abandoned, owing to the noise and excitement of the children, hurrahing and shouting after the riders, so as to render the horses quite unmanageable from fright

Chapter  
XII.  
1856-57.

*Monday, April 13th* Since last Monday we have been very anxious about Ronald, who has been very ill of gastric fever. To-day, however, I am thankful to say, we have been able to send a message, by telegraph, to his mother, to tell her that the fever has left him, and that he is now doing well. In consequence of this, I have been only able to go on the water now and then, as I could not leave Ronald, except for a short time daily.

There was a grand military funeral the other day—such a display of troops, and firing of cannon, under our windows, when they were all drawn up! I was glad, for poor Ronald's sake, when it was all over! The hearse was a gondola, and the procession on the water was very curious and interesting. Our *laquais* told us we were very *lucky* to have been here to see such a *gay* funeral! There will be some more of this *gaiety* soon, for the bells have been ringing to announce the death of the Bishop, or Cardinal, who has been long ill.

On Easter-day I went into St Mark's, to see the Arch-Duke go in procession to high mass. It was a curious ceremony. The Arch-Duke Maximilian (afterwards Emperor of Mexico), brother of the Emperor, is Viceroy of Italy, he is a fair-haired, simple-looking youth, and appeared rather nervous during the ceremony, and very glad when all was over, without any open mani-

Chapter XII. festation of hatred on the part of the Venetians to their Austrian  
masters

1856-57 The Maharajah has kindly fed the pigeons of St. Mark's daily and now they know him and follow him all over the town!

The Brights arrived on Easter-day having been detained in Rome by Miss Bright getting measles they came and dined with us last evening also Major and Mrs Young from the Punjab The Maharajah felt unwell just before dinner and Sir John made him take a hot bath and go to bed I hope he is not going to take fever This morning he is better though not well and we have resolved, as he seems nervous about remaining in Venice that if he is well enough he shall go on to Padua or Milan on Thursday in my charge leaving Sir John to follow with Ronald I am in hopes however that Ronald will be strong enough to go also on Thursday

PADUA April 16th

The Maharajah not being at all well and Ronald better we thought it wiser to get away from Venice at all risks so here they are—and they both seem so far none the worse for the short trip of one hour by train We had Ronald carried in a chair but the Maharajah was able to walk though far from well We hope they may be able to go on to Verona to-morrow

We left Venice so suddenly that all our clothes were at the wash and as Thornton and Mrs Sandison were needed to attend on the invalids we could only spare Mr Cawood to remain behind and bring on the remainder of our luggage It appears it is a rule of the Austrian railway authorities never to allow a man to take any clothes belonging to a woman out of the town unless there is a woman in his company and vice versa a woman is not permitted to travel with any man's clothes among her baggage We were all of course quite ignorant of this regulation and so when poor Mr Cawood innocently showed our boxes at the Custom-house he was horrified to find himself at once treated as a suspicious character by the police for having so large a quantity

of clothes in his possession, more than they thought could possibly belong to one man alone! Their suspicions were confirmed, on the further discovery, that a great portion of his luggage consisted of *ladies'* habiliments, and as, when questioned as to whether there was any *lady* with him, he told them, quite innocently, that there was *not*, the affair began to wear a serious aspect for him! He tried his best to explain the position to them, and how it happened that he was found in possession of other people's clothes—but all to no purpose. They could not make out half he said, and thought he was declaring the clothes to be his own, to his consternation and wrath, they then proceeded to pull about my things—flourishing a smart lace cap in his face and asking, “if he wore *that*?”—and, shaking out one of my nicely starched and frilled petticoats, sarcastically inquired whether “*this* were a usual article of his attire?” After this they formally arrested him as a thief escaping with stolen property! and would have put him then and there in “*durance vile*,” only that he begged that the landlord of our hotel should first be sent for. On this man vouching for his respectability, poor Mr Cawood was suffered to *return* with him to *Venice* (the landlord being made answerable for his safe keeping), and the clothes were detained until next day, when Presanzini was sent to claim them, and satisfied the Austrian police as to the truth of Mr. Cawood's story

Chapter  
XII.  
1856-57.

*April 16th* Still at Padua, and likely to be for some time, as the Maharajah had regular intermittent fever last night, and now we must let him and Ronald rest here. It is a good thing we have got them out of Venice, this is a tidy, clean town, and we have good medical advice, and excellent rooms at the Hotel de l'Etoile d'Or

*BRESCIA April 20th* We came here by train from Padua, to-day. The patients are both very weak, particularly Ronald. I only hope they may not be stopped here for more than this night, for

Chapter XII.  
1856-57 it is a very uncomfortable sort of place the stables being directly under our sleeping and eating rooms causes a most unpleasant odour to pervade the whole which cannot be very wholesome for sick people

MILAN April 22nd Dr Cappelli says that Ronald may be laid up for six weeks as he has got miliary fever on the top of gastric (a common sequel to Venice fever in this unpleasant country) The Maharajah has also felt ill to-day and is laid up—so matters are not very bright! We have thought it advisable to telegraph to Rochampton and tell them how things stand with Ronald He would like his mother to join him I think.

April 28th Mr and Mrs Melville \* with their old nurse arrived last night having travelled night and day they reached us on the fourth day after leaving Rochampton

TURIN May 2nd Reached Turin last evening Baron Solaroli found us out and came and spent the evening with us Sir John knew him in India he married a sister of Dyce Sombre's and of course has got lots of money with her He is a very intelligent gentlemanly man

3rd May Sunday Went to English service held in a private house by a converted Jew it was very strange to hear the prayers and sermon given in English by a foreigner, with a strong accent

Sir James Hudson the Ambassador called to offer his services and also Mr Lusk of Wiltshire's brother Baron Solaroli came with his daughter a pretty young woman newly married to Count — The Baron will bring his wife to meet us at the train to-morrow as she is no well and could not come to call

Next day the party crossed Mont Cenis, into Savoy

At St Michel, where they slept, the inn could only furnish eight trout and six eggs for the party of seven famishing folk ' Luckily they had with them some hermetically-sealed soup for the Maharajah and a cold chicken; and, as they always travelled with a supply of English tea, they did not do so badly

Chapter  
XII  
1856-57.

Geneva was reached on the 6th of May. Here they made a halt of five days, before starting on their homeward route. They made several excursions on the lake, and revelled in that glorious Alpine scenery. They had also the pleasure of making the acquaintance of many members of that cultured society, which has rendered Geneva so famous in the religious world, and among men of letters, this privilege they owed, in great measure, to Sir John's previous acquaintance with M. Merle d'Aubigné, who was on the look-out for him, and to the kindness of Lord Shaftesbury and the Rev. Henry Venn, who had written of Login to their friends in that city.



## CHAPTER XIII.

### THE MUTINY

Chapter THE annexation of the kingdom of Oude, which took  
XIII place in the previous year was an event in which the  
1857 Maharajah naturally took the deepest interest, as it was the first case of the deposition of an Indian sovereign which could in any way be compared with his own \* and the handsome terms offered to this "disrowned debauchee,"† by Lord Dalhousie were a hopeful augury of the liberal interpretation which the Indian Government was prepared to place upon the treaty forced upon himself in 1849

Captain Trotter thus describes the causes which led to this annexation —

‡ Ever since Lord Hardinge's visit to Lucknow in 1817 the affairs of Wajid Ali's kingdom had been steadily declining from

---

Though even in this instance Wajid Ali had never been an independent king, like the Maharajah of Lahore and he was deprived of his crown for his own malpractices as a ruler

† Trotter

‡ Trotter *India under Victoria* "p. 317 ch. x. vol. I

bad to worse In that green garden and teeming granary of India, Chapter  
every man did that which was right in his own eyes, from the King XIII  
King himself, amidst his fiddlers, buffoons, and dancing guls, 1857  
down to the humblest followers of his Court The two years of  
grace allowed to the royal debauchee passed by, and, in 1849,  
the Resident, Colonel Sleeman, reported no change for the  
better, nor any hope of such change, whether in the King's own  
conduct, or in the general state of things in Oude . The King's  
favourite fiddler was made Chief Justice, and a singer acted as  
Vazir for a King who never troubled himself about public affairs  
In short, there was no such thing as government, law, or justice  
throughout the land Such was the state of things reported by  
Sleeman, in 1851, and such, or even worse, did his successor,  
Colonel James Outram, find in 1855 "

Small marvel was it, therefore, that the two men should unite  
in petitioning the Governor-General to put an end to this con-  
dition of affairs by "enforcing his treaty rights against a dynasty  
which in fifty years had broken all its pledges again and again,"  
and besought him to "assume the government of a country whose  
native rulers had long proved their unfitness "

In response, Lord Dalhousie laid before his Council a minute,  
unfolding his plans for the future government of Oude "His  
chief design therein was to show the utter disregard evinced by  
the Oude princes to the treaty of 1801, which bound them to  
'govern well and justly, and *always to advise with, and act in con-  
formity to, the counsels* of the officers of the Honourable East India  
Company '" On referring the question to the Court of Directors,  
a reply was sent out in November, 1855, which reached India in  
January, and was construed by Dalhousie into a direct order to  
annex, in accordance with which instructions, Outram, on the  
4th February, appeared before Wajid Ali, the bearer of a letter  
from the Governor-General, and with the draft of a treaty for  
signature

The new treaty declared that "the sole and exclusive adminis-

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857.

tration of the civil and military government of the territories of Oude shall henceforth be vested for ever in the Honourable East India Company together with full and exclusive rights to the revenues thereof. For Wajid Ali himself and his heirs was reserved the title of King with full sovereign rights over the palace at Lucknow and park at Dilkusha a yearly pension of twelve lakhs (£120 000) with three more lakhs for his body guard,\* and due provision for all the members of his family

But these or any terms Wajid Ali refused to sign he submitted to his fate but preferred to retain a right of protest

Delaying the execution of his orders till the 7th of February on which day a short note from the King confirmed his previous resolution of refusal to ratify any treaty Outram issued a proclamation of Lord Dalhousie's declaring the annexation of Oude an accomplished fact As Chief Commissioner he took over formal charge despatched civil commissioners to their stations and marched in British troops no resistance was offered from any quarter Over the whole face of things there stole a change as complete as any produced by the shifting slides of a magic lantern Neither in India nor in England were many voices raised at the time against a measure which the great Proconsul had carried through less in accordance with his own ideas than with the virtual commands of Londonhall Street and Cannon Row † By refusing to sign the new treaty Wajid Ali had pronounced the doom of a dynasty which had reigned only by British sufferance ever since Sir John Shore had

This body guard, composed of Beedees (pure black Africans or Romances), was the King's pet hobby. Their uniform was most gorgeous, and immense sums were lavished on their equipment. Wajid Ali was continually devising new uniforms for them and, at every grand review they would appear attired from head to foot, in an entirely fresh colour so that one day they might be seen all in blue even to their loots and on another occasion transformed into green grasshoppers, or yellow butterflies!

† Trotter vol. I. p. 321

displaced the son of Asaf-ud-daula by a ruler of his own choice . Few people questioned the right of the Paramount Power to enforce against a refractory vassal the treaties which he and his forefathers had steadily broken for so many years past "

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857.

Even the *outside* amount offered to the Maharajah Duleep Singh, of *five* lakhs of rupees yearly, "for the support of himself, his relatives, and servants of the State" (with which, however, he was quite satisfied), looks rather meagre beside this *fifteen* lakhs (£150,000) per annum, destined for the King of Oude and his amusements alone!—*other* due provision being made for the members of his family.

Before proceeding to Italy, in 1856, the Maharajah wrote the following letter —

*To the CHAIRMAN and DEPUTY CHAIRMAN of the HON COURT  
OF DIRECTORS of the EAST INDIA COMPANY*

CLARIDGE'S HOTEL, Dec 9th, 1856

GENTLEMEN,

Having now attained an age at which, according to the laws of India, I am entitled to assume the management of my own affairs, and being anxious, before my intended departure for India, in October next, to have everything relating to my future position clearly defined and settled, I have to request the favour of you, at your earliest convenience, to bring the subject to the notice of the Hon Court of Directors, in order that sufficient

Chapter time may be afforded for such reference to the Governor General  
XIII. in Council as may be required.  
1857

In taking the subject of my future settlement into consideration I hope that the circumstances in which I have been placed under the protection of the British Government may receive due attention

Having at the early age of ten years been required to resign the throne of the Punjab and with the advice and approval of my then ministers and guardians to accept the terms offered to me by the Government of India, I readily consented believing the conditions to be as fair and liberal as under the circumstances could be obtained.

Although I still consider them to be such as my ministers and guardians were justified in recommending me to accept and very gratefully acknowledging that the kind and liberal consideration which I have experienced from the Government has left me no cause to regret that I placed myself with so much confidence under their care there are nevertheless certain restrictions as to residence imposed upon me by Treaty which however prudent at the time are now in my altered circumstances felt to be irksome and certain conditions as to the amount of income to be assigned to me which, if carried out in accordance with the literal interpretation of the Treaty may place me and my family in a less favourable position than the ministers and their families by whom the Treaty on my behalf was made I trust therefore that in considering the subject of my future settlement the whole circumstances of my position may be carefully reviewed and that such provision may be assigned to me as may appear liberal considering my former rank my present recognized position and the expenses necessary for its proper and dignified maintenance

I have &c

(Signed) DULEEP SINGH

To the above letter, the following reply was received by His Highness at Rome, in March, 1857 —

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857.

EAST INDIA HOUSE, *Feb* 19th, 1857.

SIR,

I am commanded to state, in reply, that the Court have observed with great satisfaction the excellent disposition manifested by your Highness during your stay in England, and are prepared to relieve you from the restriction as to residence

The Court will make a reference to the Government of India, to ascertain the present and prospective appropriation of the sum set apart by Treaty for your support and that of your family and dependants, and on the receipt of the answer from that Government, they will again address you on the subject of your pecuniary circumstances

I have &c ,

(Signed) JAMES C MELVILL.

On the Maharajah's return to England in May, 1857, finding that no reply had been received to the reference to India, he was much disappointed, and was again about to address the Chairman of the Honourable East India Company, regarding the delay which had taken place, when, late in June, 1857, the intelligence reached this country of the mutiny of the native troops at Meerut, and the occupation of Delhi by the mutineers

Under these circumstances, he at once felt himself precluded, for a time, from requesting the attention of the Honourable Court to the subject, and refrained

Chapter  
XIII  
1857

even from asking to be released from guardianship, and entrusted with the management of his own affairs, until intelligence was received of the recapture of Delhi, the relief of Lucknow, and the success of operations, in which his countrymen and former subjects had most loyally assisted, which released the British Government from all present anxiety as to the re-establishment of their rule.

In the year 1857, the Queen Mother of Oude arrived in England, to plead her son's cause in person at the feet of his Suzerain.

Remembering the old friendship of former years, she was most anxious to obtain the assistance of Sir John and Lady Login—who were at that time down in Scotland—in laying her petition before Queen Victoria. As the rigorous seclusion in which, according to Mahomedan custom, the old Queen lived, made it seem necessary to obtain the services of some *lady* who could act as interpreter in the forthcoming audience with her Majesty she earnestly requested that Lady Login, the only English lady of her acquaintance, might perform this office, and the idea was very warmly taken up by Mr Vernon Smith (Lord Lyveden) then President of the Board of Control. The suggestion rather alarmed Lady Login, who dreaded the responsibility of acting as go-between in important matters of State but she was not, after all, called on to perform this office, as Sir George Clerk,

one of the Directors, himself undertook the duty. The interview, one would think, could hardly have fulfilled the expectations of the poor Queen of Oude, for, though the principal personages could *see* each other, they were unable to converse, while the presence of an interpreter *behind a screen*, could scarcely have been a convenient arrangement.

Chapter  
XIII  
1857.

The Queen of Oude remained in England, doing her utmost in her son's cause, until seized with fatal illness. In January, 1858, Sir John Login was summoned to consult on her case, by the following note from her son, the late Commander-in-Chief of the Oude army, who had accompanied his mother to England —

14, WARWICK ROAD, MAIDA VALE, W ,  
*Jan. 18th, 1858.*

H R H General Sikunder Hushmut Bahadoor presents his best compliments to Sir John Login, and has the deepest regret in informing him that his royal mother, the Queen-Dowager, is dangerously ill. Under this distressing circumstance, H R H, considering how well-acquainted Sir John Login is with Indian manners, customs, and physical constitutions, would feel particularly obliged by Sir John's informing him when and where he could send his native physicians, for the purpose of consulting with Sir John, and having the advantage of his invaluable advice and suggestions.

Not long after this the Queen of Oude died at Paris, on her way back to India.



Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

Duleep Singh continued to receive frequent invitations to Windsor and Osborne, and on two or three occasions the Prince of Wales and Prince Alfred came down to Ashburton Court, accompanied either by Mr Gibbs or Dr Packer, to spend the afternoon with him, when the chief amusements consisted in cricket and photography.

On the Prince of Wales's first visit, Login's eldest boy was unwell, and obliged to keep his room. Hearing this, the young Prince—even thus early giving tokens of that kindness of disposition which has rendered him so deservedly popular—insisted on leaving his game to go and cheer the invalid, by talking to him from below his window—an act of gracious thoughtfulness with which the boy\* was infinitely delighted.

Readers of the Queen's '*Journal*' will remember the accident to the Princess Royal, which occurred about this time caused by the sleeve of her muslin dress catching fire from the candle which she was using when sealing a letter—and many were the rumours spread abroad of serious injury to her Royal Highness.

The following note from the Prince of Wales was written in answer to the Maharajah's inquiries on hearing of the accident —

BUCKINGHAM PALACE, *July 16th*, 1856.

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857.

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH,

I am very sorry to have neglected writing to you till to-day, but I have been so busy that I have not had a moment's time

Princess Royal's arm is a great deal better now, and she thanks you very much for having inquired after it. She really has borne it very well. A minute more and it must have proved fatal.

I saw Sir John Login the other day, who gave me very good accounts of you. Will you remember me to him? We are going to spend two nights at the camp of Aldershot, and are then going on to the Isle of Wight

I remain,

Yours affectionately,

ALBERT EDWARD

When the Emperor Napoleon III brought his lovely young Empress to England in 1857, the Maharajah was amongst those presented to their Majesties by Queen Victoria, and like all who came in contact with her, fell under the sway of the Empress Eugenie's beauty and charm of manner

Lord Canning had several interviews with Duleep Singh and Sir John Login before he left for India to take up the Viceroyalty, and took great interest in the young Indian Prince, though, of course, he was not so fully acquainted with his character as the Marquis of Dalhousie. After Lord Canning's arrival in India, some suspicions arose that Duleep Singh was

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

in clandestine correspondence with his mother, the Maharanee Chunda (Jinda), in Nepal, as will appear by the following letter from Sir John Kaye, then a high official at the India House.

INDIA HOUSE Nov 25th 1856

MY DEAR LOGIN

I think it very probable that you have not heard that the Government of India have sent us home copy of a letter addressed by the Maharajah to his mother suggesting that she should come to England. The letter written in English, was dated from Grindlay's Agency, to which it was suggested that reply should be sent. It fell into Jung Bahadoor's hands. Jung Bahadoor gave it to our Resident at Khatmandoo who sent it to the Government of India, whence it has come home with a minute of the Governor-General.

I need scarcely ask you whether you know anything about the matter—for the very fact of the Maharajah's writing through Grindlay's Agency shows that he wished to keep the matter from you. I write this confidentially (with the knowledge of the Chairman) so do not at present say anything to Duleep about the matter. When I have heard from you I will let you know what it is thought should be done.

The letter was a somewhat harmless one but the Nepal Government think that all letters to Chund Kowr should go through their hands.

I write in haste but you shall hear from me again.

Ever yours very sincerely

J W M KAYE.

SIR J S LOGIN

Sir John Login however was able to convince the

Government that the letter in question was an impudent forgery, and an attempt to extort money from the Ranee, on the part of some person in England.

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

Up to a period a little anterior to this, Duleep Singh had manifested not the faintest desire to communicate with his mother, or even to hear of her in any way, but a few months before the incident above alluded to, he showed signs of stirrings of conscience with regard to her, and an anxiety to put in practice the duty inculcated on him as a Christian, to "honour his mother," according to the Scriptural precept, and to manifest some care for her well-being in this world and the next

As the Pundit Nehemiah Goreh was then about to return to India, to resume his missionary labours, the Maharajah entrusted him with a *personal* mission to the Maharanee at Khatmandoo, which forms the subject of the ensuing letters

The Pundit not being aware of the affair of the forged letters, and being unable himself to proceed to Nepal before the unhealthy season, wrote to the Maharanee, through one, Manee Ram, a Udassee

FLORENCE, Jan 30th, 1857

MY DEAR PUNDIT,

I am very sorry to find, from your letter to the Maharajah, that you have been unable to go up to Nepal to communicate *personally* with the Ranee, and that you have, in consequence, sent messages to her through some of her people

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

I had thought it the best way to avoid any correspondence through doubtful channels to ask you to speak to her personally to tell her all you knew of the Maharajah and to give us an account of her and the people about her. I wished also to know if she was living in a respectable way and to ascertain the best way in which the Maharajah could be of service to her. You may not have gathered my meaning clearly and have naturally thought it sufficient to let her know *through the Udassies* of her son's goodwill towards her. The Maharajah does not know anything of this Udassie or of the other people you mention and does not wish to communicate through them. As he is unable to correspond with her in Goormookhee it is useless to send on her letters. My last letter from London will have informed you of the letter which has been sent by some scoundrel in the Maharajah's name to induce the Ranees to apply for permission to visit England and other letters I have since ascertained have been written in the name of the Ranees (with or without her sanction) to Mr John Bright and perhaps to others in Parliament to induce them to take up her case. I am therefore afraid that she will find difficulty in distinguishing between the Maharajah's genuine communications and the forgeries unless you can speak to her personally and explain. I have no doubt whatever that her desire to communicate with the Maharajah through you has been awakened of late by the other letters sent her in the Maharajah's name as for several years she has made no attempt to correspond with him or even enquire about him. I am very anxious that you should impress upon her mind that the Maharajah is entirely opposed to her proposal to visit England and that the safest course she can adopt is to remain quietly at Nepal for the present living respectably so as to afford her good grounds for asking the Governor General in Council to permit her to return to Hindostan where she could be with relatives and friends.

But if she makes the least attempt to give trouble to the

Government, it will be quite impossible for the Maharajah to assist her in any way, however his natural feelings, as well as his Christian duty, may incline him to do so. I shall not be at all surprised if, on his return to India, he should himself ask the permission of Government to go up to Nepal to see her, and ascertain for himself in what way he can be most useful to her, and, from what I know of the sentiments of the authorities, I do not apprehend that they would make any objections to this

Always, dear Nehemiah,

Yours very sincerely,

J S LOGIN

*From PUNDIT NEHEMIAH GOREH to SIR JOHN*

BENARES, *Feb 26th*, 1857

DEAR SIR JOHN,

I thank you much for your letter. The money also came safe which you sent for my expenses to Nepal, but my going there has been put a stop to by Lord Canning, who writes Mr Tucker, in answer to his request for permission to let me go, thus "I beg you to tell the Pundit Nehemiah that he can write all he wishes to the Ranee, with the certainty that it will reach her safely, through the Resident, but that he cannot proceed to Nepal at present "

I am, therefore, writing her a letter. She has been anxiously looking for me, I believe. I shall tell her about the forged letters, and tell her to be very careful in trusting any person in such matters. I had heard that she was cheated of some thousands of rupees by some man in this very matter.

It seems she has a set of dishonest people about her, from whom she should be separated.

I remain, dear Sir John,

Your affectionate,

NEHEMIAH GOREH.

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

The Maharajah's craze for photography continued unabated, and in this way, all visitors to Castle Menzies were induced to leave their 'shadows' behind them for the art of photography, being still a novelty many felt a gratification in having their lineaments perpetuated by a *Prince*. He was more often successful with his gentleman sitters, and many were the likenesses he took of Harry Panmure Gordon his neighbour at Killiechassie, whose fine figure in the Highland dress made a capital subject. Colonel —, a gentleman with a number of good looking daughters was very anxious to have them photographed by the Prince. The dismay of the proud father may be conceived, when, owing to some error of focus the young ladies came out all with hands as big as their heads and looking remarkably as if they had donned boxing gloves for the occasion! He was not satisfied until further attempts produced something rather more complimentary.

The news of the Mutiny came like a thunderbolt in the summer of 1857

Great as was the turmoil aroused throughout the whole nation—of horror at the atrocities committed and desperation at the consciousness of our impotence at that distance — this was as nothing compared to the emotions excited in the breasts of those to whom both the scenes and the victims of this great tragedy were perfectly familiar who had themselves

but lately returned<sup>d</sup> from those regions, and who, but for a merciful Providence, might themselves have been numbered among the slain!

It was not long before the intelligence reached Castle Menzies, that the Maharajah's residence at Futtehghur had been sacked and burnt by the mutineers, and his faithful servants murdered! As the Maharajah's visit to England was only expected to be for two years, he had left valuable property behind him, under guard, in his Toshkhana, in charge of his English steward, Sergeant A. Elliott (Bengal Sappers). This man had been selected for work in the Lahore Toshkhana, by Login, who, discovering his value, afterwards applied for him for the Maharajah's establishment. His letters at the outbreak of the Mutiny, gave such graphic descriptions of all that occurred, that Login, having forwarded one of them to Colonel Phipps\* for perusal, was requested to continue to do so as they arrived. This he did, until their sudden cessation raised fears for the writer's own fate, which, alas! were to be only too speedily confirmed. Sergeant Elliott, his wife and children, and Mr. Walter Guise (the Maharajah's former tutor, whose house was hard by), were all murdered, along with other European residents at Futtehghur, shortly before the massacre of Cawnpore.

---

\* Colonel the Hon Charles Phipps — afterwards Sir C. Phipps — private secretary to the Prince Consort.



Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

It may well be imagined with what breathless interest Login watched the struggle of that devoted band who defended the Residency at Lucknow, familiar as he was with every foot of ground rendered memorable by that conflict and intimately acquainted with both European and native inhabitants of the city while the chief and central figure on whom the hopes and safety of that little garrison humanly speaking chiefly depended was his own best and dearest friend! We need not speak here of the grief with which he received the sad intelligence that that brave and gentle spirit had been struck down at the post of duty and carried in to die in the very house where years before the two friends had conjointly elaborated so many schemes for the welfare of the native races of India.

*Letter from COLONEL PHIPPS*

BALMORAL Sept 27th 1857

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

I was very sorry to find from a letter which I saw to-day that Lord Clarendon had formed the opinion that the Maharajah was of an unfeeling and cruel disposition upon what grounds his opinion has been formed I am at a loss to know but my observation certainly limited would have led me to form as far as cruelty is concerned an exactly opposite judgment I do not think that any Eastern ever shows much feeling and perhaps they do not possess much but I cannot believe that the Maharajah has any cruelty in his disposition I can believe it perfectly

possible that, being still an Indian at heart, he may not like the terms of execration, too well justified, in which he hears Indians spoken of, and that he cannot join in the hopes of bloody retribution so generally entertained; but surely we must make allowance for this not unnatural feeling on his part. Chapter XIII 1857

Lord Clarendon, in a former letter, said, that in conversation with you at Taymouth Castle, he elicited from you that the Maharajah did not evince particular interest in the subject of the scenes that had occurred in Bengal during the outbreak, and was more taken up at present with his sport. May I venture to suggest a little caution in the expression of any opinion as to the feelings of the Maharajah on this subject, because a very slight expression from you may give rise to a very comprehensive, and probably exaggerated, opinion. Pray, my dear Sir John, forgive this hint, which is suggested by the most friendly motives

Sincerely yours,

C B PHIPPS

CASTLE MENZIES, *Sept 30th*, 1857

MY DEAR COLONEL PHIPPS,

It is indeed kind of you to put me on my guard as to the impression I may give of the Maharajah's character, in my conversation regarding him at this time. As you may have perceived from my note, conveying the Maharajah's reply to Her Majesty's most gracious and considerate message, I have been a little disappointed that he has shown so much indifference on the subject of the treacheries and cruelties perpetrated in India by the mutineers, and that he has scarcely admitted the propriety of abstaining from a few of the usual gaieties at this season, in consequence of the sad intelligence we have received of the fate of his own faithful servants, and of his tutor, Mr Guise, and poor

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

Tom Scott's mother sister and brother who had been his guests at Roehampton only a few months before. I have endeavoured to find excuses for this want of sympathy in the natural tendency of young men at his age and in his position to allow nothing to interfere with their sports and amusements. When Lord Clarendon asked me what the Maharajah's thoughts and views were on the Mutiny I could only say truthfully that he did not show any *great* interest in it his thoughts being at present wholly occupied with shooting and field sports. I am sure nothing I said led him to form the opinion you mention, of the Maharajah's disposition I think it probable it has arisen from the Maharajah's own conversation with Lord Clarendon and the remarks he overheard him make to the ladies who were guests at Teymouth Castle at the same time and who have been more than usually observant of any traits in his character which they consider to be peculiarly Oriental.

He is I am very thankful to say extremely truthful and candid and I am certain that there is nothing in the character of English Christians which he admires so much and wishes so much to copy as straightforward honesty and openness. He certainly sometimes when he sees that any of the sentiments he expresses cause surprise or wonder exaggerates them a little for amusement but always with a tendency more to depreciate than exalt himself in the estimation of those he converses with; and although I have repeatedly pointed out this effect to him he has found people hitherto so ready to think well of him and has such a horror of hypocrisy that he considers it better to err on the safe side. Of all his amusements hawking is his favourite whenever he can enjoy it and as the falcons have to be trained by means which to us appear cruel he has often in course of conversation to explain the process and observing the effect the description has upon most people he no doubt amuses himself a little dilating on the subject. Knowing the feeling with which falcon training would be viewed among us I induced

him to lay it aside for some time in India, and hoped the passionate love for the sport might moderate, but having now attained an age, at which restraint on his field-sports is not expedient, he has resumed it with all his former ardour

Chapter  
XIII  
1857.

This style of talk, combined with a certain expression about his mouth, which I heard a lady at Taymouth point out as very indicative of Oriental character, has doubtless led them to attach an idea of cruelty to his disposition, but were I to attempt to say anything on the subject to him, I am afraid that his anxiety to avoid anything approaching to dissimulation would only increase the difficulty

Even his indifference to what is occurring in India, his apparent want of sympathy with the sufferings of our countrymen and women, arise in a great measure from a wish not to deceive, or to be better thought of than he is in reality. Of all the Christian virtues, truthfulness is the one to which he attaches most importance, though I am happy to think there are others besides which exert no little influence over his natural disposition

The Maharajah has certainly no sympathy with the mutinous Sepoys, nor any other wish than that we should effectually put them down. He does not look on them as his countrymen, nor refrain from expressing abhorrence of their conduct whenever it is mentioned, but although he even goes so far as to suggest and invent modes of punishment for them, perhaps as effectual as ridiculous, his feelings in our favour are not so strong as to overcome his natural indolence, or to tempt him to read or make many inquiries on the subject of the revolt. With the conduct of the Sikhs and Punjabis in assisting us, he is very much gratified, while, at the same time, he is not without misgivings as to their continuing faithful throughout, and expresses doubts of the propriety of bringing them to Delhi, where they will see a handful of English, opposed to a multitude who speak nearly the same language, and differ little in religion from themselves

In spite of all Duleep Singh's faults and deficiencies, I have still

Chapter much to be thankful for in his character although I have  
 VIII. reluctantly been obliged to forego the hope I at one time indulged  
 1857 that he would take an active and foremost part in enlightening the  
 people of India.

Yours very truly

J S LOGIN

Shortly after the tidings of the Indian Mutiny reached this country, and while all trembled with anxiety as to what news next mail might bring Lady Login was one morning told that two men on horse back had arrived at the Castle from Kinloch and one of them craved a private interview on matters of importance. Coming as they did from the home of her childhood she sent for the man at once, and on his entrance recognized one of her brother General Charles Campbells, tenants Donald MacCulloch, an old acquaintance, who shutting the door cautiously, and speaking in a whisper said "We just thocht we wad come o'er the hill to see if ye were a richt for there's no trustin thae black men noo!"

Seeing she looked puzzled, he asked in a hoarse whisper pointing with his thumb over his shoulder,

Is m' keeping quate? If theres ony fear o his breakin oot theres a wheen o us ready to come o'er the hill and saddle him for ye, gin ye gie the word!' To his great relief he was told that the 'black Prince' had only two native servants, and that both he and

they were very peaceably disposed—would he like to see the Prince? he had been in that room only a few minutes ago.

The poor man absolutely jumped! “What! is he loose? I never saw but ae black man in my life, and that was yer uncle, Sir Patrick’s, naygro, carrying his bag on the moors. I was but a laddie then, but I still shake when I mind o’ the Admiral cryin’ on me, ‘Donald, here’s *auld Cloodie* wi’ his bag come for ye!’”

The *brave* Donald was reassured when he saw that the Prince was not black, like his negro acquaintance, and he went off home quite happy, *on foot*, having made a capital bargain, and got a good price for his sturdy little black mare, to which the Maharajah had taken a fancy as a shooting-pony.

The idea of the Strathbraan men being on the watch for symptoms of a “rising” on his part, was greatly enjoyed by Duleep Singh!

This year of the Mutiny brought an immense amount of work and correspondence on Sir John Logie. Having so lately returned from the scene of operations, and being in constant communication with many of the leading actors in the suppression of the revolt, he was appealed to on all sides for information on the matters then absorbing public attention.

Here is a letter received at this time from Mr Bright, who had been staying at Castle Menzies a few days previously —

ROCHDALE Sept 1st 1857

Chapter  
VIII  
1857

DEAR SIR JOHN

I ought to have written you sooner to tell you what took place after I left you so suddenly at Castle Menzies but you will have seen it in the newspapers The Birmingham people have treated me most handsomely and I only hope I may be able to repay them I am keeping quiet till February but I am not very sanguine that I shall even then be able to venture into the House of Commons for the strength of my head recovers but slowly and after such a shock as I have suffered from restoration is always slow without being always sure

The India chaos is a truly melancholy business and the death of Lawrence will have come upon you as a calamity The more I consider the whole question the more its magnitude and its difficulty oppresses me The cruelties perpetrated by the Sapoys and the scarcely less horrid cruelties inflicted by our countrymen under the name of punishment and vengeance will leave a desperate wound which time can never heal The restoration of order therefore will be not a small part of the difficulty—the future government of India is the great problem and I know not how this is to be solved The loss of India would not ruin England but the effort and the cost of keeping it may do so and the crimes we have committed there must be atoned for in some shape by ourselves or our children

I say remember me most kindly to Lady Login, and say to the Maharajah that I was very sorry not to see his hawks fly and to leave him so abruptly if not indeed so rudely

Believe me always

Very sincerely yours

JOHN BRIGHT

SIR JOHN LOGIN

Castle Menzies

In answering this letter, Login took occasion to disabuse Mr. Bright of some misconceptions of the native character he appeared to have formed, and of the effect produced upon it by the high-handed proceedings of some of the first representatives of English rule among them. He was very anxious to secure, as an advocate for the future interests of India, a man of such sterling integrity, and extraordinary power of influencing the masses of his countrymen, and of whose character, as personifying honesty and uprightness, he was a sincere admirer.

Lord Canning's anxiety to prevent bloody retribution, and to discourage the indiscriminate thirst for vengeance, found an echo in the minds of a large body of noble-minded statesmen and philanthropists at home, who dreaded lest this un-English lust for blood might grow to such a pitch as would baffle the restraints of discipline and humanity, and lead to excesses, such as the nation would have cause to deplore in its cooler moments. The fearful descriptions of the mutilations and outrage to which English ladies and children had been subjected were repeated and exaggerated to such an extent, that men's minds were stung up to an intensity of hatred to the native races of India, which forbade their listening to reason!

A committee of gentlemen was therefore formed, of which Login was one, to institute an inquiry into

---

\* Login's reply to John Bright's letter will be found in the Appendix



Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

those cases of mutilation brought forward by the newspapers to which special features of atrocity were attached and Login offered himself to go down to the ports of arrival, and board all steamers and sailing vessels with passengers from India,—especially those named in the journals as conveying victims of the ferocity of the Sepoys. Though at first himself a believer in the possible truth of these assertions, he had the satisfaction of establishing the fact, after interviewing both officers and passengers on board these vessels that at least among those who had returned to their native country, no single case of such mutilation was to be found. His own impression of the matter was, that in cases of mutilation it was most improbable that the victims would be suffered to survive.

This evidence was of great assistance in strengthening the hands of Lord Canning, whose ‘clemency’ to the rebels had raised a storm against him, both in India and in this country.

It must be remembered that at this time, excepting Login very few (if any) officers of the East India Company had been brought much in contact with the Court. Login’s personal intimacy, therefore with the Hon Charles Phipps then private secretary to Her Majesty the Queen as well as to H.R.H. the Prince Consort made him the medium of communicating the views and counsels of Indian officers on the crisis.

Having forwarded to Colonel Phipps, soon after the

earliest accounts of the Mutiny reached England, some private letters received by the last mail from India, Colonel Phipps wrote to him as follows :—

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857.

OSBORNE, *July 24th*, 1857

MY DEAR SIR JOHN,

I was exceedingly obliged to you for your letter and its enclosures

In the present awful crisis of the affairs of India, any opinion or views, propounded by one so well acquainted with the country as yourself, must be most valuable, and you could not do me a greater favour than to continue your communications

I think that we had no right to be much surprised at what has occurred. Everybody who has had boldness or sincerity enough to face the question, has long since known, and many have declared, the utterly rotten and unreliable state of the Bengal native army, nor have frequent occasions been wanting, on which the Sepoys of this Presidency have sufficiently shown their mutinous and exacting spirit. Upon such emergencies as the present, however, the least profitable and least satisfactory process is a retrospect of the past. It will require all the wisdom and all the energy of the Government (I hope they may have enough), to provide for the future. I should think that no Government, either national or under charter, would be so mad as to entrust again the safety of an important part of the Indian Empire to high-caste native troops, and yet I can conceive that much difficulty may arise from the sole employment of white soldiers, entirely unacquainted with the language and customs of the people. From the amount of the force heretofore maintained, I should suppose that the Company's troops must be employed upon many duties other than the mere military repression of disturbance.

Chapter With regard to the other question of gradual conversion I have  
 XIII. always understood though I profess to be very ignorant upon  
 1857 Indian subjects that it is one of very great difficulty

The difficult epoch appears to me to be that in which you have not made progress enough to reap any of the fruits that may be hoped to result from the knowledge of the doctrines of Christianity and yet have done enough to alarm the prejudices and fanatism of those whose existence almost depends upon the adherence to their rules of caste I have very little faith in any number of adult converts—a few isolated cases there must be but in general a sincere believer in any religion will not be a sincere proselyte and it is the weak and the worthless who in general first embrace a new faith—worthless in themselves and by their characters throwing discredit upon conversion But this must always be a stage to pass through In the present case you have so long preached up non interference with religious prejudices as the doctrine of your Indian rule that you give a plausible excuse for discontent when you depart from the principles proclaimed by yourselves

I look with the most painful anxiety for the next mail How much may depend upon the news which that brings! but I fear from what I hear that our army was very deficient in all the materials for striking a decisive blow and its efficiency very much cramped by the limited power and authority which has been accorded to the generals commanding

Sincerely yours

C B PHIPPS

In response to this Login, on the 28th July, 1857, addressed a long letter or rather memorandum to Colonel Phipps, which led ultimately to a voluminous correspondence on Indian affairs in general, too long to

receive here more than a passing allusion That these papers—written thus early, before it was known outside the Cabinet, that the Queen's Government had determined on taking into their own hands the future destinies of India—were not without their influence on the measures then under consideration, for the re-organization of the Indian Government, and of its army, will perhaps appear on a perusal of a short summary of their contents, which will be found at the end of this volume \*

Chapter  
XIII  
1857

While engaged in this correspondence with Sir Charles Phipps, Login wrote to Sir James C Melvill, Secretary to the Court of Directors, explaining to him (for the information of the Board) the circumstances under which the correspondence had arisen, and forwarding copies of all his letters as they were despatched, ending by saying —

“ As I think it not unlikely that these opinions are made known in a high quarter, although I cannot presume to think they are likely to have much weight, I consider it my duty, situated as I am, to let you know what I have done I hope that you will, whether you approve of my opinions or not, be assured of my desire to do nothing which I cannot freely communicate to you . . . I have also had frequent conversations with Mr Bright on the subject of India, whilst he was here on a visit, and have done my best to modify his views From all the opportunities

---

\* See Appendix *Correspondence between Sir C Phipps and Sir J Login*

Chapter of observation which I have lately enjoyed I am satisfied that  
 XIII. the transfer of the Indian Government to the Crown has been  
 1857 *determined upon* and that the *how* and the *when* have only to be  
 considered I have therefore thought it my duty to meet Colonel  
 Phipps's wishes by giving such information as I am able to do on  
 various points connected with the transfer I have no  
 doubt that I may be considered very presumptuous in all this but  
 the opportunities afforded me of expressing my opinion have not  
 been of my seeking and I think I do right to avail myself of  
 them

It is gratifying to note, from the following quotation from the *Life of Prince Consort*, that the Queen herself attached value to Sir John Login's opinions on Indian affairs. Writing to Lord Derby (then Prime Minister) in reference to Lord Ellenborough's secret despatch to Lord Canning, April 1858 and of his second despatch May 5th, Her Majesty says —

' The despatch now before me for the first time, is very good and just in principle but the Queen would be much surprised if it did not entirely coincide with the views of Lord Canning, at least as far as he has hitherto expressed any in his letters. So are also the sentiments written by Sir John Lawrence (in a private letter which Lord Derby had sent for her Majesty's perusal) in almost the very expressions frequently used by Lord Canning Sir John Login who holds the same opinion and has great experience, does not find any fault with the Proclamation however seemingly it

may sound at variance with those opinions; and he rests this opinion on the peculiar position of affairs in Oude."\*

Chapter  
XIII.  
1857

The following is the last letter Login received from Lord Dalhousie, who was on the point of going abroad in search of health.—

EDINBURGH, Oct 3rd, 1857

MY DEAR LOGIN,

We are just on the wing for London, on our way to Malta, for which we sail on the 20th inst. I have never had any communication from the Court regarding the Maharajah, and hope that the sentiments which were placed on record will lead to a satisfactory settlement of his affairs

The tidings from India are too distressing to write about, though they occupy my thoughts by day and by night.

Believe me, my dear Login,

Ever yours very truly,

DALHOUSIE

SIR J S LOGIN,

Castle Menzies

*Letter from SIR JOHN LOGIN to the EDITOR of the "TIMES"*

CASTLE MENZIES, Nov 25th, 1857

MY DEAR DELANE,

I have been lately asked by the Rev. H. Venn, secretary to the Church Missionary Society, to give him my views with

---

\* "*Life of Prince Consort*," vol iv, p 225

Chapter respect to Christian education in India and the extension of our  
 XIII missions I sent him a paper of which I enclose you a copy  
 1857 and I have also written to Lord Shaftesbury at his request on  
 the same subject

The article on the use of the Roman character in Oriental languages has attracted much attention I lately saw the editor of the Mirzapoor paper (Rev Cotton Mather) who is now engaged in an edition of the whole Scriptures in Urdu for the Bible Society and will I hope soon be able to assist Sir Charles Trevelyan and others in bringing out an edition of the New Testament English and Romanized Urdu in parallel columns for the use of persons going out to India It is also proposed to get up a Romanized edition of Shakespeare's or other standard dictionary

I have been much gratified by your articles on Indian finances and the means of getting the mercantile classes to contribute in fair proportion to the revenues of the State If we keep to our law of inheritance as now established permitting of course Hindoos to adopt by will as they please provided they pay a succession duty we shall get a pretty good sum out of them The proposal to sell freehold rights in the land (which I have also often thought of) although excellent in principle should not I think be brought into operation at present—not until confidence in our Government has been most effectually restored and the possibility of raising taxes from other sources than the land satisfactorily ascertained

I have had a letter from Charles Havelock, the General's brother Since I told him of your kindness he has found that the regulations of the Home Guards in respect to officers who had left the service by sale of commission precluded his return to it at his own but he had applied for an appointment under the East India Company I have sent on his letter to Sir George Dalrymple who is also interested in him and have written to Sir James Melville suggesting that he might be most useful in

drilling the Light Cavalry recruits, and mentioning that you had, through Mr Ellice, interested Lord Panmure in his case, and that they would carry the goodwill of all with them, for his brother's sake. I am glad to hear that Wilson and Havelock are both to be made baronets, but they must have pensions also, for neither of them are able to keep up the dignity without such assistance. I know Havelock well, and Wilson also. I served under him throughout the Punjab campaign. I do not know what is to be given to John Lawrence. He deserves a peerage, but his sister told me lately that he had only saved £20,000, so that he could not afford to take one without a pension attached. When I go up to London next week, I will show you the replies I have sent to some influential friends, who asked me to state my opinions on various Indian matters.

I fear I have written you a very long letter

Yours very sincerely,

J S LOGIN.

About this time (August, 1857) Sir John wrote to Sir James Melvill to ask if any reply had yet been received from India relative to the Maharajah's affairs. He suggested that as, owing to the Mutiny, the Maharajah's return to India had been put a stop to, and he remained in England more from necessity than choice, if the Court of Directors desired to induce him to settle contentedly in this country, it would be advisable to provide him with an estate. If left to himself to decide, whether to purchase property or not,



Chapter his mind was so unsettled, that it would be long before  
XIII. he could make it up, but if the matter were decided  
1857 for him, he would readily acquiesce in the arrangement,  
and very contentedly make this country his home, for  
several years to come

## CHAPTER XIV.

### GUARDIANSHIP ENDED.

THE marriage of the Princess Royal, in January, 1858, was the last Court ceremonial in which Sir John Login took part as governor and guardian of Duleep Singh, who was henceforth to be permitted to manage his own affairs. Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63.

The Maharajah celebrated his emancipation from guardianship by organizing a shooting expedition to Sardinia, with Dr. Parsons and a friend. Before starting for the land of banditti he made due preparations for the worst—making his will, and leaving a power of attorney with Sir John Login, to act for him in the settlement of his affairs.

When the lease of Castle Menzies expired, the shootings of Auchlyne, on Loch Tay, were rented from Lord Breadalbane, which place became Duleep Singh's headquarters on his return from Sardinia, pending the conclusion of the arrangement for a lease of Mulgrave Castle, which Sir John was making with Lord Normanby.

The following letter was written by Lord Hatherton,

Chapter whilst the Maharajah was on a visit to him at  
 XIV Teddesley —  
 1858-63

TEDDESLEY Dec 11th 1857

MY DEAR LOGIN

I have been talking with the Maharajah about the expediency of his having some house in or near London but he seems unwilling until he has made up his mind whether he shall revisit India in the cold season of next year He talks of being entitled to consider his own pleasure and comfort and was so decided that I thought it best to say no more He showed me a draft of the will he intends to execute before going abroad. He evidently wishes to do what is kind liberal and right in the disposal of his property and I was pleased to hear his expressions of gratitude to you. His words to me on my proposing to him to alter the plan of his will and leave £10 000 at once to the Church Missionary Society and make you his residuary legatee were

You do not know him as well as I do if you think this would please him. Oh no! He wished me to leave it to the Church Missionary Society and I have fully resolved to do so All my interests and duties are in India but Sir John and Lady Login have the strongest claim upon me He has abandoned a career that might have been most profitable for my sake I shall leave him not less than £10 000 and if I live to come of age I shall settle £1 000 per annum on him to be followed by the legacy I feel the importance of not delaying the execution of my will and I intend to do it at once

I thought it might please you to know how he feels to you both. He says he is to consult his friend Mr Cuninghamne about being executor to his will when he passes through Edinburgh.

Very truly yours

HATHERTON

SIR JOHN S LOGIN

Login wrote to congratulate Sir Charles Phipps on the honours just conferred on him, to which Sir Charles replied :—

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

BUCKINGHAM PALACE, Jan 26th, 1858

MY DEAR LOGIN,

Many, many thanks for your kind letter of congratulation I claim no merit but that of doing what is given me to do, with a wish to do it honestly, and to the best of my ability I need hardly say that the honour given me was one that I should never have sought or expected, and that I felt doubly the insignificance of my services from the company I found myself in in the *Gazette* \* But this is not my fault The Queen cannot be *exclusively* served on the Ganges !

I assure you, my dear Login, that I consider one of the privileges of my position to have been, to have formed first the acquaintance, and then, I hope, gained the friendship, of one for whom I have a very sincere respect, and true regard

Ever sincerely yours,

C B PHIPPS

The Maharajah was, at this time, bent on enjoying life as a private gentleman, free from all the trammels of princely rank, and for this reason appointed no equerry or aide-de-camp

---

\* Havelock and Wilson

BUCKINGHAM PALACE *Feb 9th 1858*Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

The Queen and Prince would hope to see the Maharajah before he goes abroad. Would Sunday next be too late a day to name for that purpose? The Queen desires me to say that she hopes that the Maharajah will not think of going abroad without somebody as a sort of A D C and companion. Her Majesty thinks that to go quite alone would hardly be compatible with his rank and station. Your name will be restored to the ceremonial list (those present at the royal marriage) from which it had been accidentally omitted.

Yours very sincerely

O B PRINCE

A few letters from Duleep Singh, written while trying his wings on his first flight show his boyish character yet unspoilt

DOVER *March 3rd 1858*

MY DEAR LADY LOGIN

Here we are stuck at Dover and can't cross as the sea is very rough but if it is calmer to-morrow we shall cross otherwise we must delay till Thursday. We had a very pleasant journey my companions made themselves very agreeable. Dr Parsons I think is a very nice man he seems to know something about everything and enters into all my amusements. I fear I shall not enjoy this trip as I had hoped as they try to please me too much and I fear very much that if I do not take care I shall be spoilt for ever afterwards. They act towards me as I darsay Sir John remembers a Dr

Drummond used to do to the Duke of Athole. He used to call him "His Grace" at every word, and if the Duke happened to drop anything, he used to rush forward to pick it up, and also flattered him a great deal. It is not good to have people near me in this position, for I am very much afraid that I shall get quite vain, but perhaps when we get to know each other better, it will not be the case. My kind regards to Sir John and the children.

Believe me always, my dear Lady Login,

Affectionately yours,

DULEEP SINGH

CAGLIARI, SARDINIA, *March 29th, 1858*

MY DEAR GOOD FRIEND,

I received your letter this morning, which gave me great pleasure, for besides telling me that you are all well, you gave me all that news about Mulgrave Castle. I think it would be a very good bargain, if the shootings are what you describe them. If the moors are of the size of one-fourth of the whole property, I should like you to secure it, but if not, never mind. This is a very nice place for shooting, but I wish I had come in December, as now there is hardly any game to be found. Thank Lady Login for her kind letter; tell her I did her commissions at Genoa, and Presanzini is to send the parcel by a courier friend of his. I am very glad to hear that Allick Lawrence has got a Baronetcy and £1,000 a-year. Many thanks for the trouble you are taking about my settlement with the East India Company. It must delight Sir George Pollock to be made a Director, give him my congratulations, please. It is such a bother to have lost two of my best hawks, first time they were flown! We get Indian mail sooner here than in London, the last news seems better, I hope for peace soon. This way of travelling is

Chapter very much more expensive than I expected My love to the  
 XIV children  
 1858-63 Your affectionately

DULEEP SINGH

DOMO D OSSOLA, SIMPLOW May 3rd 1858

MY DEAR LADY LOGIN

I was so glad to get your letter We returned to Genoa on the 30th ult having had little shooting in Sardinia. I have come to the conclusion that there is no place in the world after all for sport like England however I have enjoyed my trip very much I think if you were to visit Sardinia you would think it very like India I almost fancied myself back there when looking at the scenery

When I was at Muro I was persuaded to give a ball "to the nobility and gentry" they came in their national costumes One young lady was very beautiful all our party were smitten even Dr Parsons I did not however fall in love with her as I did with — at Rome! Have you no commission for me to do? We hope to be home on 17th when I trust to see you I am going to send for Signor Brochi from Rome to continue my study of Italian I have found out my deficiencies and am determined to learn it well before I go abroad again Do you remember what fun we used to have with him? I have just written a long letter to the Prince of Wales so will now stop With love to all

Yours affectionately

DULEEP SINGH

AUCHLYNE July 6th 1859

MY DEAR LADY LOGIN

I am so very glad to hear that the Queen has asked you and you have agreed to take charge of the young Coorg Princess

I am quite sure you will make her very happy, and treat her with that motherly kindness which I myself have had the good luck to experience. Yes, I left the brougham to be sold, and I hear you have inquired the price ; it has *none* if it is for *your own* personal use, but if it is for the use of the Princess, I think she can afford to pay me £40, which is one-third of its cost ! Tell me when to expect Edward, he will enjoy fishing. Love to all

Your affectionate

DULEEP SINGH

Mrs Drummond, having resigned the charge of the young Princess of Coorg, god-daughter of the Queen, Her Majesty made it a special request that Lady Login should take charge of her, and, after taking her abroad for the winter, bring her out in society next season. Feeling that whatever inconvenience this arrangement might cause to herself, the Queen's wishes must be complied with, she agreed, trusting that another suitable chaperon might be found later on. In consequence, the house in Portman Square was given up, and the family removed to Kew, where one of the Queen's houses was prepared and furnished for them.

After Christmas, Sir John and Lady Login took the Princess and their two elder children to Rome.

This same winter, the Prince of Wales was there, with his Governor, General Bruce, and honoured Sir John and Lady Login with a visit at their apartments, No 56, Capo le Casa. During the Carnival, he also came to their balcony in the Corso, with a bouquet for



Chapter  
XIV  
1853-63

the Princess Gouramma, and, after watching the procession for some time, passed on to the balcony of the neighbouring house, which was occupied by the Prussian royal family

Though Login had regularly forwarded to the India House copies of all his letters and memoranda to Sir C Phipps, during the correspondence already alluded to, the Board never so much as acknowledged the receipt of any of these communications. It would seem as if they resented the fact of an officer in their service being consulted on Indian affairs or giving any opinion as to the direction reform should take, although they were perfectly aware that Login had only given expression to his views by particular request, after positive assurance that 'the rule of the Company was doomed' and that it only remained to be decided by what form of government it should be succeeded.

The treatment which they meted out to a hitherto trusted servant would almost justify the idea that the moribund Company of Directors were not above showing their displeasure in a somewhat undignified and ungenerous manner

It was not until the 29th December, 1857 that the Court of Directors acceded to the request of the Maharajah that he might be permitted to assume the management of his own affairs at that date he had exceeded by three years the age at which Hindoo princes attain their legal majority, and by more than a

year that at which European sovereigns are considered competent to assume the reins of government. The Court nevertheless informed him that though they granted his request, "purposing, so far as their authority extended, to show the esteem they entertained for the sense and good conduct which had marked all his proceedings in this country," yet, according to the laws of England, he was still a minor, and legally incompetent to undertake certain responsibilities; \* while, as a minor, he was incompetent to execute a legal instrument appointing another person to act for him †

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

Having decided that the guardianship was at an end, the Court immediately informed Sir John Login that his official salary must now cease, and it was only on his pointing out that his original appointment had been that of Superintendent and *Agent to the Governor-General* (personally attached to His Highness), and that the latter function did not necessarily cease on the Maharajah's attaining his majority,‡ that

---

\* A side of the question with which they were not concerned, as they were bound to deal with him only by the laws of India

† This palpably refers to the power of attorney, which the Maharajah had executed in favour of Sir John Login

‡ As agent to the Government with His Highness, it may still be my duty to draw his monthly stipend and sign the bill for it, and it may be in his power to communicate through me, if he should so wish it, instead of through the Honourable Court, with the local authorities in India, for the recovery of his property, plundered by the mutineers at Futtehghur, and in other ways to assist him officially, if he requires it, as I think he may — *Letter from Sir J Login to Secretary of the H E I C, Feb 15th, 1858*

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

the Court allowed him a further period of three months for the audit of his accounts, on an allowance of 600 rupees per mensem, that being the moiety of his salary hitherto paid by the Company, but when Lord Stanley the present Earl of Derby, who was the first Secretar of State for India came into office, he, 'fully appreciating the very conscientious and efficient manner in which he had discharged his duties' directed in a letter dated December 1st, 1858, that Sir John's full salary should be paid to him, up to the date on which his functions ceased

In announcing that the Maharajah was henceforth to be considered of age Sir James Melvill then wrote to Sir John Login —

The Court however cannot allow the connection which has existed for so many years between you and the Maharajah to cease without expressing their entire approbation of the manner in which you have performed the duties of your important office as evinced by the good results of the careful training for which the young Prince is indebted to you.

On the 27th February Sir John wrote to inform the Court that he had transferred all balances at the bankers and other securities to the personal credit of His Highness and made over all valuables to the charge of Mr. Cawood the steward appointed by the Maharajah and empowered to give receipts. In this letter he also informs the Court that "knowing it

had been out of his power to save much from his allowances, or make sufficient provision for his family, during the nine years of his guardianship, the Maharajah had spontaneously proposed to settle an annuity on him, and make further provision for him in his will, in the event of his surviving him" In requesting that this desire of His Highness might be favourably considered, Logan reminded the Directors, that owing to his having undertaken the charge of the young Prince, he had forfeited his chances of rising, either in the medical service, in which he had as fair a prospect as any medical officer in India, or in the civil and political service, where a career was well known to be open to him, while, on the other hand, from the peculiarity of his position he had been unavoidably led, not only personally, but in his family, into greater expenses than he would have been in any ordinary appointments of the service. He also mentioned that the Maharajah, before embarking, had left with him a power of attorney to arrange the settlement of his pension, the recovery of his property in India, and other matters requiring reference to the Court of Directors, and concluded by remarking, ' it has been a source of much gratification and thankfulness to me, that I have been able, under God's blessing, to establish and confirm a feeling of goodwill, loyalty, and respect towards the British Government, *on the part of one from whom such sentiments could scarcely have been expected.*'

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63,

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-69

The following letter was also written at this time to the Secretary of the East India Company —

Sir,

On the severance of the connection which has for so many years existed between Sir John Login and myself I am anxious to testify my appreciation of his character and my sense of his constant and kind attention to my interests and comfort. I have therefore to request the Honourable Court of Directors that on the termination of Sir John's official engagement in the management of my affairs the sum of Rs 833 5 4 per mensem may be paid in India to his order or as he shall direct and be deducted from the total allowance I receive from the East India Company. May I therefore beg of your doing what is necessary for carrying out these my wishes into effect.

I have &c.

DULEEP SINGH

LONDON Feb 26th 1858

The answer of the Court was conveyed to Sir J Login in the following terms —

March 10th 1859

In reply to this communication I am commanded by the Court to state that the letter of the Maharajah makes no mention of any testamentary bequest and with reference to the proposed annuity that the receipt of any present or gratuity from a native of India by any officer of the Company is prohibited not only as you must be aware by the rules of the service but by an

Act of Parliament. The arrangement, therefore, cannot receive either the approval, or the sanction of the Court of Directors.

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

I have, &c.

J. D. DICKENSON,  
*Secretary*

To this, Sir J Login replied, that he regretted he had not before informed the Court that, in the event of their acceding to the above request, he intended to retire from the service, but had thought it best to defer the announcement until all his accounts had been audited. And having, for the last eight years and upwards, been directed to draw one-half of his salary from His Highness, and, for the previous seven years, an equal amount from His Majesty the King of Oude, besides receiving special permission, on several occasions, to accept presents from the latter, it had not occurred to him that it was not within the power of the Court, *in like manner*, to sanction the acceptance of the Maharajah's offer, under the very peculiar circumstances of the case.

With respect to the absence of any mention, in His Highness's letter, of any testamentary bequest, as His Highness merely intended to ask the favour of the Honourable Court to carry out his wishes for the payment of an annuity, by deduction from his pay, it was not considered necessary by His Highness to make any allusion to it, and he (Login) only mentioned

Chapter XIV  
1859-63

it from a wish that everything should be known regarding his relations to His Highness.

*From SECRETARY TO BOARD OF DIRECTORS*

*April 3rd 1859*

You state that it had been your intention to apply for permission to retire from the service upon accepting the annuity offered to you by the Maharajah Duleep Singh. In reply the Court desire me to state that the remarks in their letter of 10th March applied to the supposed case of an officer of the Company's service receiving sums of money from one of the princes of India the rules of the service and the Act of Parliament referred to in that letter being applicable to such case.

Sir John then placed his resignation in the hands of the East India Company after a service of twenty six years and having again requested on the Maharajah's part that the proposed arrangement might now be carried out was answered in these words (under date April 21st 1858) — I am instructed by the Court to inform you that in their opinion the matter is not one in which they can with propriety interfere.

On resigning the service Logan addressed a short memorandum to the Court of Directors in which he says —

The few lines I send from Government and which the Maharajah has received will I believe satisfy them that they would

permit the annuity which His Highness wished to settle upon me, to be deducted from his pay *in the same manner as other deductions had been previously made, at his request*, in order that the circumstances under which it had been granted to me should be known officially, and that I should stand in a somewhat more satisfactory relation to the Court, than those officers who, having resigned the Honourable Company's service, had entered into engagements with native princes of India, not of the most creditable kind. I had hoped that the manner in which I had performed my duty, while guardian to His Highness, would have been sufficient to justify the Honourable Court in departing, under very peculiar circumstances, from their ordinary practice in this slight degree. It may cause some surprise that, during the time I have held my present appointment, I have been able to add only £1,500 to my small savings, partly owing to the fact, that, with a view to give me a more independent position in the management of His Highness's affairs, I credited to his account an allowance of £200 per annum, while *alone* with him in India, and £500 when in England, as my share of table-expenses.\* The Honourable Court, however, have seen fit to refuse the application with the *private* explanation, through one of their members, that I should "consider myself fortunate in having passed through the service so pleasantly as I have done!" . . . It is not likely, so far as the Honourable Court's treatment in my case is concerned, that my experience can afford encouragement to any other medical officer, to regard so little his private interests in the exercise of his public duty, as I have done.

In March, 1858, Login was appealed to by Sir Charles Trevelyan, then at the Treasury, to assist him

---

\* Besides this, Login paid the wages, &c., of all his own servants, and all educational and travelling expenses for his family



Chapter in carrying out John Lawrence's wishes, with regard  
 XIV to procuring a permanent endowment for the Lawrence  
 1858-63 Asylums.

The matter is somewhat complicated says Sir Charles by the relation which the Special Lawrence Fund and the General Relief Fund bear to each other. The proper course I think will be to throw all the strength we can at first into the Lawrence Fund and to supplement whatever may be deficient out of the balance of Relief Fund. Don't consult any one else until we can have a conference together to decide our plans. Perhaps you will go with me to introduce me to Lady Lawrence to-morrow or next day.

A few months later August 13th, came a private intimation from Sir John W. Kaye to the following effect —

A move is to be made in the Court of Proprietors against the grant to Sir John Lawrence. His offence being that he made a public manifestation of his respect for Christianity and his desire to do justice to native Christians. We ought to muster not only the friends of the Lawrences but the friends of Christianity.

Let me hear from or see you as soon as possible that we may arrange to meet this properly.\*

Mrs. Bernard a sister of the Lawrences wrote

---

\*The proceedings were discussed at the Treaty vol. II. p. 10

Login, February 10th, 1858, of the disappointment felt by the family, that nothing had been done, or even spoken of, up to this date, to honour the memory of their dear brother Henry, by Queen or country. She observed, that the orphan children of one who gave his life for his country, besides having lived in her benefit, and who were but poorly provided for, were surely entitled to the same distinction as had been already conferred on the family of Sir Henry Havelock.

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63.

Could you, without pain to yourself, dear Sir John, bring this subject before any of the high personages in the realm? I dare say you will have remarked how John has been passed over, but he is still alive to take care of his own good name. I do not know Lord Stanley personally, or anybody who has any communication with the Court but yourself, or I would write to them, but I would much rather leave it in your hands, knowing how dear his memory is to you, and how much he loved you while alive.

Five days later, Dr and Mrs Bernard wrote —

Your letter has given us great pleasure. We all feel most grateful to you for your most kind and successful exertions in expediting Alck's baronetcy, &c. We enclose a letter to Mr Vernon Smith, to be given if you approve. The recognition of our dear Henry's merits will be most gratifying to his family, and the annuity to his children most acceptable. We are quite sure it will be an additional pleasure to dear Alck to hear how to the last, as at the first, you have been concerned in this matter. . .

Chapter XIV  
1858-63

We know how grateful Richard\* also will be to you. Did you know that this is the eldest of five boys? and Richard is only a regimental Captain, so you may imagine the service you have done him. John never says a word about any honour or reward for himself but you must have seen how often the nation has said during the last few months that the Saviour of India should get a peerage and five thousand! We rejoice that you and Lady Logan are again to be employed on work for which you are both so well suited. The present loss of quiet family habits with your own children is a serious one in bringing this young Prince's into your home but remember this second important charge is from the Sovereign, not the East India Company and your children's present loss will be compensated afterwards. Our lads Alick and Charlie give an amusing account of how John stopped three days at Rawul Pindoo where Herbert Edward and Beecher came to meet him and the three talked over public affairs and arrangements from ten a.m. to six p.m. a half of the three days sometimes one sometimes another taking a short nap and waking up to join in the conversation! On the third evening the two departed and John went on with his camp. They don't work like this in England!

John Lawrence writing to his brother in law speaks thus of his nephew Alick excited among all the Sikh chiefs who welcomed him most warmly as the son Henry Lawrence.

With regard to public affairs, he says —

I have a very strong feeling against any discrimination among the natives. I would

---

I have a very strong feeling against any discrimination among the natives. I would

on certain terms, forgive all lesser criminals all those who have not murdered our people, and so economize our powers to hunt down desperate characters. People in England seem to think that we can hold India without a native army. However essential English troops are, native troops are still more so. We can do *nothing* without the latter. We seem drifting into the old system. Now, of all other opportunities, is the time for change and improvement . . . .

Give my kindest regards to Login, and thank him for so kindly looking after my interests

The rule of the East India Company ceased August 2nd, 1858, although it was not till November 1st, that the Queen's Proclamation, announcing that fact, was issued in India, by Lord Canning. Sir C. Phipps, writing to Sir John Login, on September 31d, alludes to the forthcoming Proclamation —

I have to thank you very much for your last letter, full of good sense and moderation

I do not think that you will find in the Queen's Proclamation much, if anything, that you will object to, the great desideratum appears to me to be to convince the inhabitants of India that our rule of their country will be an impartial one. Your proposal seems so just that I cannot see how it can be objected to—that the Government should give support to all schools for secular education, allowing the children the free exercise of the religion of their parents, but not preventing them from hearing the truths of the Christian faith, if they wish to do so

Chapter  
IV  
1858-63

When the terms of the Proclamation were known in England, Lord Shaftesbury thus writes —

*Dec 9th 1858*

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

Can you spare time to come to pay me a visit at St. Giles that I may have some Indian talk with you? I want it much

The Proclamation will do *our* work. The framers did not intend it. Their minds were one way but God made their pens go another! You may safely deduce from it everything we want. Call on Venn and talk with him. He takes a bright view as you do. He is a wise man the wisest I think in the ministry of our Church

Awaiting reply I remain

Yours very truly

SHAFTESBURY

Again on January 20th, 1859, Lord Shaftesbury makes arrangements for a more lengthened conference at St. Giles, on the subject of Indian missions.

Login was applied to for information by many statesmen interested in Indian questions among others the Duke of Marlborough

*July 0th 1859*

MY DEAR SIR JOHN LOGIN

I beg to return the papers you were kind enough to give me a sight of together with Sir John Lawrence a letter which was

most interesting Need. I say what pleasure you would give me, Chapter if you could spare time to talk with me on matters relating XIV. to these subjects, with which I am *very anxious* to become better 1858-63. acquainted?

I remain, dear Sir John,

Yours very truly,

MARLBOROUGH

Early in September, Duleep Singh writes Lady Login from Mulgrave Castle —

I wish you would arrange to pay me a visit soon, *before* you get tied down with the Princess, for I do not think it would do for you to bring her here Any time will suit me, and please invite any of your friends you would like to meet you What do you say to the Cunninghames, Alexanders, Pollocks, and any others you like? only do arrange it all, and tell me what you decide I have settled to start for Constantinople on November 1st. I take Thornton and Presanzini, and join Mr. Baker, who is a great *shikar* I fear there seems little chance of our meeting at Rome From what Mr Baker says, I expect good sport on the Danube.

Your affectionate

DULEEP SINGH

The Maharajah, it will be seen from this, had intended to have some sport on the Danube before going to Constantinople, and started with Mr.—now Sir Samuel—Baker as “guide, philosopher, and friend”

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63.

The expedition however, did not realize his expectations, and he left Constantinople for Rome, where, much to their surprise, the Logins found him awaiting their arrival.

As he was constantly with them during their stay, Lady Login was in hopes that the young Princess was the attraction but the Maharajah took an opportunity of telling her that he had considered the matter deeply, and had come to the conclusion that an Englishwoman alone would fulfil his ideal of a wife. As she knew that he had received every encouragement from some of the first nobility in England to seek a wife among their daughters she foresaw little difficulty in his forming a suitable alliance.

When at Kew after their return to England in the summer, they had many letters from Duleep Singh from Mulgrave and Auchlyne full of enjoyment of his bachelor life and fishing and he steadily declined to appoint any one as equerry saying he did not want to be tied to any one young man as a companion.

Sir John was anxious he should have some reliable person about him and knowing that he had liked and respected Colonel Oliphant formerly a member of the Court of Directors who had lately met with heavy losses he suggested his asking him on a visit to Auchlyne to keep him company and enjoy fishing trusting to his making his own way with him. In a letter from Auchlyne to Lady Login dated July 14th 1859, the Maharajah says —

I am very glad I have followed Sir John's advice, and asked Chapter  
Colonel Oliphant here. He seems quite happy fishing, though XIV.  
he meets with indifferent sport, the water being so low. I have 1858-63  
been away, at Susie, in order to get a shot at the deer, and have  
been sitting up at night watching for them, when they come to  
eat the corn. Colonel Oliphant does not give any trouble, and I  
am really thinking of doing as Sir John advised, and asking him  
to come to me when I require an equerry, but it must only be  
now and then, not to live with me always. I think this would  
meet the Queen's wishes too. I think he would just do, for he  
would not be a stranger to me, and I would feel free. What a  
good boy you will call me, when you will know that I actually  
did what you suggested in your letter, *before* I got it! and I  
intend to take him with me, on my return, as far as York, where  
our roads separate.

Later on, in August, he writes, giving an account  
of his grouse shooting, &c. —

I hope, from what you say, that you seriously think of agree-  
ing to my proposal, that you bring all the children to Mulgrave  
next month, they can easily go to Whitby daily for sea-bathing.  
Can you arrange to come on the 1st September, to meet Lord  
and Lady Normanby? Otherwise I will be in a great fix, for all  
my time will be taken up with the shooting arrangements for the  
first fortnight, and there will be no lady to entertain my guests,  
unless you come, besides I want to arrange, with Colonel Oli-  
phant, to come there for a beginning. There is a nice nursery at  
Mulgrave, and I will make arrangements for the whole party, and,  
if you like, get some of the young Oliphants to come, as com-  
panions for them.

Mind you get a photograph taken for me of my baby god-



Chapter daughter Hoping sincerely to hear, by return of post that you  
 XIV see no objections to complying with my request.  
 1858-63

I remain &c.

DULEEP SINGH

In November of the same year, when paying a visit to Lord Grosvenor, he writes —

EATON CHESTER 1859

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

My patience is quite exhausted! do for goodness sake, get the Government to settle with me and pay my arrears as soon as possible! I do believe they will take *another year* to settle my affairs!\* I trust to you to stir them up for I dread getting into debt. I am glad the poor Shahzadah has at last got a *jagheer* however small

I am going to a ball this evening, and expect (tell Lady Login) to meet the lovely Lady F——!

Will you write me to Teddesley where I shall be for a few days and say if you will have me on a visit at how if I run up on December 5th? If you cannot take me ask the Melvilles if they will

Affectionately yours

DULEEP SINGH

The Shahzadah had written Sir John, imploring him to get the Maharajah as head of his family to make

---

*Little did he think that thirty years later they would still be unsettled!*

him an allowance to enable him to marry ; he being, at present, dependent on his mother's pension.

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

After a long correspondence, a small *jagheer* was given the Shahzadah, 8,000 rupees per annum (less than £800 per annum), which the Government, in spite of Duleep Singh's remonstrance, considered ample provision for the only son of Maharajah Shere Singh. The visit to Mulgrave was paid, but Lady Login only took the two small children with her (one being the little god-daughter of the Maharajah) The Marquis of Normanby (owner of Mulgrave Castle) was there, with the Marchioness, and a succession of visitors, Colonel Oliphant was duly installed as equerry

Duleep Singh made a charming host, and did all he could to make the visit pleasant to his guests. He was very eager after sport, and one day nearly bagged an archbishop, when after partridges ! A covey rose on the other side of the public road, close to which he was standing, just as the Archbishop of York (Dr. Thomson) drove past, on his way to the Castle. In his excitement and eagerness not to lose his birds, the Maharajah lost his head, and gave his guest rather a *warmer* reception than he expected, for he fired right across the carriage, the shot passing in dangerous proximity to the Archbishop's shovel hat !

The Rajah of Coorg (father of the Princess Victoria Gouramma) died about this time, after a lingering illness. He had only been able to visit his daughter twice

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

at Kew before he was taken ill. It was very sad to see them together, neither of them able to understand the other, the Rajah could not speak English, and the child had forgotten her native tongue so that Lady Login had to be interpreter. After the Rajah was seized with fatal illness, Lady Login took the Princess to visit him at his house and, on one of these occasions he took the opportunity of making over to his daughter the jewels he had set aside as her portion, so that there might be no trouble afterwards, and that he could leave the rest to his family, at Benares. After the death of the Rajah it was discovered that in his will he had appointed Sir John Login his executor, to carry on to its conclusion his suit against the Honourable Company for some Government paper they had seized, after his country was annexed. Login was able to get some pension arranged for his large family at Benares who were left for a time, in great destitution by the sudden cessation of the Rajah's pension but of course, the case against the Company failed!

Hearing that Lady Login had been ill Duleep wrote thus to urge her to pay him a visit in Scotland, in August —

MY DEAR LADY LOGIN

I am delighted to hear from Sir John to-day that you are really better. He at last consents to your paying me a visit in Scotland! I'll ask Frank Boileau to come a same time. Do let

a day, and I'll have everything ready for you There will be rooms in the house for all, except Frank and Edwy, and they must sleep at the inn across the water. Chapter XIV.  
1858-63.

Your affectionate

DULEEP SINGH.

The Maharajah arranged to go out to India in December, 1860, intending to stay for some tiger shooting, to see his mother, and arrange with Government for her future residence in British territories.

He had taken an active part in promoting, with the sanction of the Queen, a marriage between the Princess Gouramma of Coorg, then under the care of her godfather, Sir James Hogg, and Lady Login's brother, Colonel John Campbell (Madras Army), whose acquaintance the Princess had made after leaving\* Lady Login's charge.

The Maharajah's chief reason for wishing to pay a visit to India was his anxiety about his mother. Hearing that she was thinking of employing a stranger to make an application to Government, he was anxious to prevent her taking such a step, but, after the experience of the forged letters, he was careful that there should be no doubt about the authenticity of any

---

\* On making over the Princess to Lady Catherine Harcourt, Lady Login had been much gratified to receive an autograph letter from the Queen, expressing Her thanks to Lady Login for having undertaken the charge at her request, and for the manner in which she had fulfilled it. This was followed by the gift of a bracelet, "as a more durable mark of the Queen's appreciation."

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-59

communication from himself So, as Sir John Login happened to be writing privately to Mr Bowring, private secretary to Earl Canning, the Maharajah took advantage of the opportunity to enclose a letter for his mother, with the request that it might be forwarded to the Resident at Khatmandoo who would be able to see that it was safely delivered into the Maharanee's own hands.

Mr Bowring replied —

GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S CAMP PANIPUT,

Jan 8th 1860

MY DEAR LOGIN

I received a short time ago your letter forwarding a note from Maharajah Duleep Singh to his mother Ranee Jinda which has been sent to Colonel Ramsay with a request that he will deliver it to her The Governor General to whom I showed your letter has written a despatch upon the points referred to in your letter viz the Maharajah's desire to visit India and the advisability of allowing the Ranee to reside in British territory On this latter point I believe his Excellency is of opinion that she may be permitted to do so Colonel Ramsay speaks of her as much changed She is blind and has lost much of the energy which formerly characterized her taking apparently but little interest in what is going on

The Governor General does not object to the Maharajah's visiting India though he does not deem it advisable that he should proceed to the Punjab His Excellency's despatch which I have mentioned should you see it will place you quite au courant of his views on the subject

I much regret that little Sisco Deo Singh was prevented from

visiting England with the Maharajah. He is a promising youth, and some day may have influence, which it would be well to direct beneficially. I fear that his proposed marriage with the daughter of the Shamgurh Sirdar, a small chief in the Thanesur District, will not prove advantageous to him.

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

As far as we can see at present the temper of the Sikhs is good.

Yours very sincerely,

L. BOWRING

This correspondence with the Viceroy's private secretary was apparently not viewed with favour at the India Office, where there existed some desire to sever all connection between Sir John and his former ward, for on the 31st March, 1860, Sir C Wood informed the Maharajah that —

Sir John Login having ceased to be officially connected with your Highness, any application made by him, on your part, cannot be officially recognized, and it would in all cases, be advisable, that you should communicate your wishes, in the first instance, to Her Majesty's Government

To this the Maharajah replied. —

I regret that the Viceroy having written a despatch to you on the subject of my return to India, founded on a private note written by Sir John Login to Mr Bowring, his Excellency's private secretary, you should have been led to

Chapter XIV  
1858-63 suppose that I had wished to communicate officially with the Government of India on any subject without in the first instance submitting my wishes to Her Majesty's Government.

Being quite aware that Sir John had ceased to be officially connected with me it never occurred to me nor I believe to him that his private note would be *officially* recognised.

The Maharajah having left for India to see his mother, and to have a season's tiger shooting, Sir John Login wrote him at Calcutta as follows —

LONDON Jan 18th 1861

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH

As objections are likely to be made at the India Office to the recognition of my authority to act as your attorney and agent—without a formal and legal document—on the ground I believe of your having—since the former power was given to me—been in direct communication with the Secretary of State on the subject\* (which by law invalidates the power) I have asked Messrs. Graham and Lyde to prepare another power of attorney which I now send to you and also a copy of the former one, in order that you may see in what they differ.

The new power is made out as you will see to enable me merely to settle your affairs with the Government which leaves it open for you if you like to grant another to Oliphant for other matters but if you wish to continue to me the same power as you gave before it can be written out accordingly

---

\* At a private interview with Sir C. Wood at India House Duleep Singh signed a power prepared in his presence, Jan. 25th, 1862.

by Messrs. Judge, or any other respectable solicitor in Calcutta, Chapter  
whom you may employ. XIV,

There is another difference—the power is not limited to your 1858-63.  
absence from the United Kingdom—but as it is rendered null (if  
the Government position be correct) by your entering into  
personal correspondence with them on the subject, this is of no  
consequence, as you can at any time set it aside. Just settle it  
in your own mind whether to limit it to Government matters, or  
extend it to others, as you may think best, but do kindly let me  
have the document one way or other, with the least possible  
delay

Sir Charles Phipps told me that now was the time to push the  
Government, as *I* should come in for all their blame in having  
the matter agitated, and that *you* could suffer no damage by  
my proceedings, and as he knew that I did not much care  
for their annoyance, so long as I had a good cause, he thought it  
by far the best opportunity for *you* to get the question advanced!  
So you see how coolly I am recommended to fight your battles.  
Well, be it so! It will be a great happiness to me if I can get  
our people to do what is liberal and right, to enable me to hold  
up my head before you, and to say that I am not ashamed of  
them. My dear Maharajah, it requires some knowledge of our  
national character to understand us! Because the Council  
of India do not benefit a single *pie* themselves, and think they  
stand up for the interests of 200 millions of subjects, they'll fight  
until they have not a leg to stand on, while all the time they have  
the most perfect goodwill to you, and would like to see you happy!  
However, it will all come right yet, I have every confidence

[Here follows a description of Applecross Estate]

\* \* \* \* \*

Edwy is at Roehampton with the Melvilles Frank (Boileau)  
and his brothers are as busy as possible skating on the Serpen-



Chapter time. What a contrast to your grilling at this moment near Aden  
 XIV I suppose! My wife and all here join in kindest regards to you  
 1858-63

Believe me ever my dear Maharajah

Your most sincere and faithful friend

J S LOOM

P S Get Bowring to hasten on the accounts you can explain to the Shahzadah that it is out of your power to do much for him until they have been settled in England by the Secretary of State

The Maharajah writes from Calcutta —

SPENCE'S HOTEL, Feb 1861

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

I received your second letter and reply at once as the mail is going I think I would prefer Applecross of the two properties if the grouse and the salmon fishing are both good Oh it is too cruel of you to write me so soon after coming out here about an estate in Scotland for now I cannot make up my mind to stay a day longer than is necessary to see my mother! Your letter has almost driven me wild so you may expect to see me back sooner than I thought of when I left I have got the Shahzadah here on a visit He is a very quick intelligent lad but a thorough native in his manners I regret to say He wishes to marry another wife already! You will be surprised to hear that he has no objection to read the Bible now and often reads a chapter to me and listened attentively when the Rev Gopee's authority read the Scriptures and explained them to him though he would not stay for prayers I have no doubt he will one day be a Christian He has no objection to be touched by low-caste people as long as none of his people are present!

He tells me he has no belief in his own religion, and would like to go with me to England if he could, without his mother knowing!

Chapter I  
XIV.  
1858-63.

Now, I must tell you that India is a beastly place! I heartily repent having come out, for I cannot get a moment's peace with people following me, and all my old servants bother the life out of me with questions. The heat is something dreadful, and what will it be in another month? I hate the natives, they are such liars, flatterers, and extremely deceitful! I would give anything to be back in dear England, among my friends! I cannot think or write about anything else but this property. Oh! buy it for me, if possible. My mother is to be at Rani Gunj in ten or twelve days. I wish her to await me there, as it is quieter than Calcutta. I have heard (not officially) that she is to have from two to three thousand a year, but will know for certain when the Governor-General returns here. They gave me a salute of twenty-one guns, and, *you* will be amused to hear, *an escort of two sowars*! and a guard of one *paharah* of four Sepoys, and a Naick!

Sheo Ram is here. I am sending him to my mother, as she is surrounded with very low fellows. Sowdagar, Kashee, and Bolund Khan all send their most respectful salaams to you. Lady Login and Harry, they are so glad to hear about you.

Yours affectionately,

DULEEP SINGH.

A little later he writes again.—

MY DEAR SIR JOHN,

I have signed, and send herewith, the full power of attorney. Mr. Bowring told me yesterday he thought the accumulation would not be *much* over £70,000 (*without* interest), but was not

Chapter sure but that all the papers would be sent off to England without  
 XIV delay I hope you are arranging about Applecross I am trying  
 1858-63 to get a house outside Calcutta, for my mother I have not yet  
 settled whether I remain over the hot weather here going up to the  
 hills and then returning to England. I am to have elephants  
 from Government for tiger shooting It is already very hot  
 Shahzadah is very anxious to come with me to England but does  
 not expect to manage it

Yours affectionately and sincerely

DULEEP SINGH

P S —Since I wrote this my mother has declared she will not  
 separate from me any more and as she is refused permission to go  
 to the hills I must give up that intention and I suppose we  
 shall return to England as soon as I can get passage

*Letter from COLONEL RAMSAY Resident at Khatmandoo*

NEPAL RESIDENCY Nov 24th 1860

MY DEAR LOGIN,

I quite agree with your estimate of Jung Bahadoor a more  
 unprincipled scoundrel does not tread the earth. He would have  
 taken part against us at the time of the Mutiny If it had not been  
 for that providential visit of his to England and the experience he  
 gained there and for this we have to thank your poor brother  
 who exerted such a wise influence over him and persuaded him  
 to the step

Jung has often told me so himself and one of his brothers told  
 me the same thing as early as the month of June in that eventful  
 year adding that every attempt was being made by influential  
 men to induce him to join in driving us out of the country  
 but that no persuasion would cause him to commit such an act of

suicidal folly The Government will be in a dilemma respecting the ex-Maharanee of Lahore, unless they or Duleep Singh are prepared to allow her a permanent subsistence in our provinces Jung Bahadoor longs to get rid of her, for various reasons personal to himself, and declares that if ever she sets foot in the British provinces, she shall never be allowed to re-enter Nepal, or receive a stiver from his Government He declares she now gets 20,000 rupees per annum, which he grudges exceedingly. He also wants her mansion, which is on his own premises They are always quarrelling, and she contrives to wound him on a tender point—his vanity Pray offer my best regards to Lady Login. That is surely not a brother of hers who married the Princess Gouramma of Coorg the other day! Her sister, who married Jung Bahadoor some years ago, is now a very fine-looking young woman, and seems happy enough The other sister, whom he also brought with him from Benares in 1858, was sadly duped, and wanted to go back to her brothers. She is said to be very unhappy—at least, she was some months ago, but I have not heard of her lately.

Believe me, my dear Login,

Yours very truly,

G RAMSAY.

About the time of Duleep Singh's visit to India, several Sikh regiments, who had arrived from China, besieged his hotel, and were very demonstrative in their welcome to their former ruler. Though perfectly amenable to discipline, their excitement was great, and in consequence, Lord Canning thought it desirable to urge the Maharajah, to give up his intention of going up country, and to return to England at once Although the Maharajah had gone

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

to great expense in preparing for a seasons sport, having brought out with him an india rubber boat and a swivel duck-gun, besides all the latest inventions in rifles, &c., for tiger shooting, he yielded his own wishes gracefully and took passage for himself and his mother in the first available steamer for England.

On the voyage home, Duleep Singh wrote Sir John Login to beg him to secure a house in his neighbourhood (Lancaster Gate) where he might bring his mother on arrival until her jewels and property could be landed safely, and passed through the custom house. He said *he* had been very sea-sick, but that she had borne the voyage well! He was anxious at the same time, to have good medical advice for her in London, as he feared her health was seriously impaired. A large empty house in Lancaster Gate was taken, and Sir John sent in some furniture and arranged cooking places for the natives out in the area.

Jinda Kaur was truly an object of commiseration when one contrasted her present with her former state. To see her now, with health broken, eye sight dimmed and her once-famed beauty vanished—it was hard to understand the power she had wielded through her charms. It was only when she grew interested and excited in conversation that one caught glimpses beneath that air of indifference and the torpor of advancing age of that shrewd and plotting brain which had distinguished the famous "Messalina of the Punjab."

She had brought with her several native servants, both male and female, but Soortoo, a slave, who had been born in her house, and had followed her mistress' fortunes, was her favourite and confidential attendant ; she had also been Duleep's playmate as a child, being about his own age

The Maharanee was full of curiosity about the customs and manners of the English. She was much shocked to find, on Lady Login's presenting to her her little boy (aged eight years), that as yet his marriage had not been arranged, nor a suitable *partie* selected !

She paid Lady Login the great compliment of a return visit, when she was *assisted* up the stairs to the drawing-room floor by several servants (a piece of Oriental *etiquette* which her infirmities rendered perhaps not unnecessary). The exertion, indeed, to her, must have been most fatiguing, and a great mark of condescension on her part, for she appeared dressed in full English costume—bonnet with feather, mantle, dress, and large crinoline complete!—which she had put on *over* her native dress ! It was no wonder, therefore, that with the added weight she found it difficult to walk. The crinoline with which she was encumbered would not permit the poor Ranee to seat herself, until two of her servants lifted her bodily on to a chair, on which she was then able to sit comfortably, Indian fashion, with her feet under her, while her crinoline spread all around ! She had only just received her jewels from the custom-house, and was naturally

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

delighted to have them again in her possession, for since her flight from Chunar Fort to Nepal, the Indian Government had retained them and only delivered them to her at Calcutta when she embarked for England. On this occasion she was decorated with a large assortment the most remarkable being some beautiful pearls and emeralds which, as a graceful concession to English fashion, she had arranged in a sort of fringe beneath her bonnet in place of the 'cap' usually worn at that period, inside the brim!

She was evidently quite surprised to find Sir John Login so different from what she had imagined him to be, and took occasion to inform him with great *naïveté* that, if she had only known before what kind of man he was, she would never have plotted to have him poisoned! A hint of the Maharanee's kind intentions *had* reached him at Futtehghur!

As soon as the Maharajah had departed for India, in the preceding December Login forwarded to the India Office (December 22nd) the power of attorney made out in his favour in 1857, and also an autograph letter from Duleep Singh, dated Southampton, December 20th 1860 empowering him to act as his attorney in settling his affairs with the Government.

These credentials the Indian Office refused to recognize and a smart interchange of letters took place no less than six passing before the Indian Office would give any reason for this refusal to recognize a document which had *already* been recognized, and

acted upon, by the Court of Directors. At length (February 22nd, 1861), Lord de Grey and Ripon (then Under Secretary of State) declared that the power of attorney was illegal, having been drawn out when the Maharajah was a minor, and *ignored* altogether the autograph letter.

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63

On this, Login obtained a legal opinion from Mr. J. F. Leith, Q.C., Member of Parliament for Aberdeen, one of the highest authorities on Indian law, and well-known, for many years, at the Calcutta Bar.

This gentleman gave, as his opinion, that the Maharajah could not be compelled to adopt European forms in his dealings with the Government; and that, as an Indian prince, he was entitled to appoint an agent. Login therefore (while to prevent delay he applied to the Maharajah for a fresh power of attorney), protested (March 2nd, 1861) against the indignity offered the Maharajah, by the exclusion of his agent from the position assigned him by His Highness, remarking that the Maharajah's relations to the Government were secured by treaty; and that, in transacting business with them, he was only bound to produce evidence of his appointing a person to act for him as his agent; this evidence was sufficiently shown by the power of attorney, *and the autograph letter*. This, he reminded the Government, is all that is required in the case of any Indian prince.

On the 6th of April, Login presented, *under protest*, the fresh power of attorney; but when, on April 20th,



Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

he asked to see the statement of account of the pension fund (applied for a year before from the Government of India), he was told that it had not yet arrived but that when it did ' Sir C Wood would communicate about it with the Maharajah on his arrival " thus plainly revealing that their object, all through had been to gain time and deal with the Maharajah himself, and thus endeavour to ignore the legal instrument which they themselves had stipulated for With the same view, in the month of July following, when Login renewed his application, he was answered by Sir C Wood (July 27th) that the statement had at length been received, but that the Secretary of State would ' communicate with the Maharajah on the subject ! "

MULORAYE CASTLE July 1861

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

As I have not yet heard from Sir C. Wood although I have been in England now three weeks I begin to think that he is waiting to receive a letter from *me personally* and thus throw your power of attorney to act for me aside. However I will disappoint him in this for I wish *you* to act for me entirely in settling my affairs with the Government Will you, therefore kindly address him about this delay and also tell him that *all* letters connected with the settlement of my affairs should be addressed to you and *not to me* and this will show him how I desire the thing to be done My mother is delighted with

Mulgrave, but I cannot get her to agree to live separate from me at Lythe Hall, as you advise.

We hope to start for Scotland on Thursday.

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

Ever your sincere and affectionate

DULEEP SINGH

P.S —Kindly let me have a copy of any letter you write to Sir C. Wood.

Two days later he writes :—

MY DEAR SIR JOHN,

Colonel Olphant has just received a *private* letter from Sir Charles Wood, to say that my papers are now before the committee, and will be shortly ready to send! So you see I was right! Will you at once write to Sir Charles that I wish to have my papers sent to me *through you*. As soon as you receive them, I should like very much if you would come yourself to Auchlyne and bring them with you. I wish very much to have a conversation with you about my private property in the Punjab and the Koh-i-noor diamond, and, perhaps—if you really can come—you will kindly procure and bring with you the Punjab Blue Book.

We are just starting for the north      My kindest love to all

Ever yours,

DULEEP SINGH

Here we have the first mention of *private estates*, and no doubt it was the information given him by

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-69

Jinda Kōūr (who as Queen Regent, must have drawn their revenues,) that prompted the Maharajah *years afterwards* to study the Blue Book at the British Museum and bring forward his claim to the old family estates of Runjeet Singh before he became ruler of the Sikh nation.

Login having submitted Mr Leith's legal opinion on the Maharajah's rights under the Treaty of Lahore to Colonel Phipps for perusal, received the following reply —

OSBORNE Aug 4th 1861

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

Many thanks for your letter I have read it and the enclosed legal opinion with great attention I feel convinced that the best course which the Maharajah can pursue is as you suggest to submit his claims to some impartial persons in whose judgment he might have confidence.

The constant advancement of fresh argument and the establishment of a chronic state of contest with the Government authorities cannot be advantageous to him

The legal opinion may be a perfectly correct one but these matters must be settled by the rules of common sense, and legal splitting of hairs only provokes equal ingenuity on the other side I feel sure that any equitable arrangement arrived at by honourable and impartial men would be both better and more satisfactory than a constant state of contest and uncertainty The arrival of the Maharanee in England is a misfortune though it is impossible to oppose his filial wish. I hope he will see the inconvenience of having her and her attendants in the same house with him I am

glad to hear such good accounts of the Princess Gouramma Pray Chapter  
remember me very kindly to Lady Login, XIV.

1858-63

Ever sincerely yours,

C B PHIPPS

SIR JOHN SPENCER LOGIN.

Duleep Singh writes from Auchlyne to Sir John, August 1st, 1861, announcing that Sir C. Wood has sent the papers to him *direct*, in spite of all orders to the contrary; that he can do nothing unless he comes up to him to examine them, and begs he will start as soon as he can, that he is very busy training his hawks and dogs, &c, and cannot settle to business, ending, "My mother begs to send her best salaam to the kind Doctor Sahib"

Sir John had gone with his family to North Wales, and after settling them for the summer, went to Vichy to take the waters, and while there another letter came for him to Llandulas, from Duleep Singh, announcing the sudden death of his secretary, John Cawood, and the shock it had caused him. This letter announced his determination to throw up all his worldly prospects, and to return to India with his mother, to devote the rest of his life to God's service, in trying to evangelize the heathen, and begging that application be at once made for leave for his going back. Lady Login sent the letter on to Sir John; and wrote the Maharajah begging of him to take time to think before taking any serious step,

Chapter or even before publicly announcing his intentions,  
XIV and that some proof would be required of the stability  
1858-63 of his convictions. He replied, thanking her much for  
her letter, and regretting that it was out of his power  
to follow Sir John to Vichy which he would have  
done had he not to go to Mulgrave to receive visitors  
there. He wrote from Mulgrave, September 22nd —

I wish it were only possible for you and Lady Login to come  
by the middle of next week for I do long to see you, and to be  
once more able to read with you in the mornings as we used to do  
long ago when we lived together. I feel it very difficult to lead a  
Christian life. I am constantly erring before God and really some  
of my sins I cannot give up.

Login had been trying to persuade the Maharajah  
to have a separate establishment from his mother, the  
influence was very bad for him, and he was sadly  
tempted to lapse into native habits. His mother  
seemed to have no objection to his being a Christian,  
and he had great hopes of her becoming a convert  
herself. At this time his religious feelings were in a  
very excited and unsettled state, he was ready to  
enquire into every different opinion and try every  
sect in turn.

When in London, he used to go with Sir John and  
Lady Login to church on Sunday, and on one  
occasion he did not turn up as expected, but on their

return from church, they found Mrs. Claridge, the landlady of his hotel, waiting to see them. She informed Sir John that she was so interested in His Highness, that she could not see him led astray by other young men, without speaking; besides, she did not like such doings in her house! It appeared, that a young friend of His Highness had lately become a Plymouth brother, and was trying to induce His Highness to follow his example; that he had persuaded him not to go to church that morning, saying *he* could administer the Holy Communion to him at home; that the waiters had been scandalized by the proceedings in consequence, and she did not like it! All this will show the unsettled state of his mind at this time on religious points, and how eagerly he was blindly groping after light.

He was able to resume his usual sport before September had quite passed, and writes:—

I have been having capital sport these last few days, averaging forty brace daily. I address this to Lancaster Gate, as Sir John said you would be back by this time. I want you and he very much to come for ten days, or as long as you can stay, and you *must* bring my little godchild with you, indeed, you really must not come without her! I want your advice also about getting a good likeness of my mother (in oils). The Normanbys are here, and beg to send their kind regards

It was in this year (1861) that the Order of the

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-68

Star of India was founded in the establishment of which Order the Prince Consort took a lively interest, himself drawing up its charter and regulations. It was thus a token of the esteem in which H.R.H. as well as Her Majesty held the young Indian Prince, that the name of Duleep Singh appeared in the very first list of recipients, as Knight Grand Cross of the Order. The Prince Consort had previously on the Maharajah's first arrival in England with gracious kindness and interest, himself designed for him an appropriate coat-of-arms, and selected the motto *Prodesse quam conspicere* (to do good rather than be conspicuous) which with the crest appears on the cover of this volume.

The sorrow which fell upon the nation at this time was felt by none more acutely than by Login, who brought from Windsor the sad tidings of the death of the noble hearted Prince Consort.

5 LANCASTER GATE Dec. 30th 1861

MY DEAR SIR CHARLES

It was very kind indeed of you to write me to explain your inability to see me when I went up to Windsor on the 14th. I did not under the circumstances expect that you would and felt it necessary to have a note prepared to excuse myself for having attempted it. I had on two or three occasions made inquiries at Buckingham Palace before the bulletins were issued and ventured in my anxiety to do so at Windsor.

If the universal sympathy of the civilized world and the heart

felt sorrow of the millions who delight to acknowledge her sovereignty, and to take a deep and affectionate interest in all that concerns the welfare of our most beloved and gracious Queen, can in any way tend to alleviate grief, under so sad a bereavement, Her Majesty must have enjoyed that consolation to an extent to which the history of the human race affords no parallel, nor can I doubt that the manner in which the virtues of one whom she loved so well have now been honoured and appreciated, as an example to humanity, can be otherwise than most gratifying. I sincerely trust, however, that these have afforded only a small portion of that consolation with which Her Majesty has, through Divine grace, been sustained in her deep affliction, and that its sanctifying influences may be abundantly experienced by all who are dear to our beloved Queen!

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

Again he writes :—

. . . I have for the last few days been anxious to write to you on the Maharajah's affairs, but have been prevented by the fear of being intrusive, while your attention must be occupied so incessantly. But in the hope that you will excuse my wish to avail myself of any leisure which you may happen to have, I shall send this, although you may not be able to acknowledge it for some time.

I am afraid that the Maharajah is getting thoroughly under his mother's influence, and that our only hope of saving him from discredit is to get him to live apart from her, as had been arranged, and to find some suitable companion of his own age to reside with him. He authorized me to look out for a young man to attend lectures with him, but changed his mind. When he was last in town, he was again full of arrangements for an estate in India, and to return there, after a short time, and most anxious to accept



Chapter the Government offer for anything they might be disposed to give  
 XIV *without trustees* so that he should have *entire control over the*  
 1858-68 *amount* but I told him that I considered such an arrangement  
 to be very inexpedient and that if such were his determination  
 I had better withdraw I accordingly have written the enclosed  
 letter which I shall send to him on your returning it to me

Sir John Lawrence has been quite prepared to go into the case  
 if submitted to his decision but on the 19th instant he wrote  
 me Sir Charles Wood has never said a word to me since  
 I was at Windsor and I of course have not referred to it  
 myself

J S L.

To this Sir Charles replied —

OSBORNE Jan 4th, 1862

I am very sorry to hear what you say about the Maha  
 rajah—nothing could be so destructive to him as that he should  
 succumb to his mother's or any other native influence He is too  
 good to be so lost and, if I were in your place I should certainly  
 not at such a moment forsake any position which gave me any  
 influence over him or could possibly tend to prevent his doing  
 anything foolish I do not think if it were pointed out to him  
 he would do anything wrong

I should have answered you some days since but you may  
 conceive what this house is at present! for the very air we breathe  
 is an atmosphere of sorrow and that is a bad medium in which to  
 transact business

Always very sincerely yours

C. B. PHIPPS.

5, LANCASTER GATE, Jan. 8th, 1862

Chapter

XIV

1858-68.

MY DEAR SIR CHARLES,

. . . If I could, for a moment, suppose that, by retaining the papers connected with his case, and by continuing to act for him at the India Office—while we differed so much in respect to the arrangements which appeared advantageous to his interests,—I would be more likely to maintain any influence I possess with him, I would, of course, regret very much, especially at the present time, to be under the necessity of doing so. But, as I think I know the Maharajah very well, and that, so far from weakening my influence with him by doing so, I am more likely to strengthen it, I have still thought it better to send the letter and papers, trusting that I shall yet be able to make it clear to you that I have done right . . . While I have returned him all the official documents and memoranda connected with his claims, I have expressed my readiness to give him every assistance in my power in explaining any points required,

. . and satisfied him that I have only his best interests at heart, . . and do not give up the charge of his case under any feeling of temporary annoyance at his vacillation—but certainly more in sorrow than in anger. I feel very certain that, after having done this, and giving him, I hope another proof that I am not actuated by selfish motives—of which, like all Orientals with whom I have come in contact, he is very suspicious—he will give more weight to the remonstrances which I think it necessary to make, against the self-indulgence to which he gives way so much. I think, also, that when it becomes known that (rather than have anything to do with an arrangement which I cannot but consider most *improper* and *injudicious* on the part of Government, and which I certainly believe would never have been thought of, had they not been most anxious to make it appear that their first proposal of settlement was very liberal), I have determined to give up my position near him, they may look a little more carefully into the

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

matter at least (although I may flatter myself a little too much in supposing it to have this effect) I shall at all events have done my duty in thus protesting against it

Most earnestly do we all hope and pray that our beloved Queen may be enabled through Divine strength, to continue to set before Her people that bright example of Christian resignation and Christian duty for which they have hitherto had so much cause to be grateful.

Believe me very sincerely yours

J S LOGIN

OSBORNE April 18th 1862

MY DEAR SIR JOHN

I shall be very glad for the Maharajah's sake and yours also when his affairs are finally settled for all this constant uncertainty and negotiation must be very annoying. He ought to be very grateful to you for all the trouble which you have taken for never did anybody work harder for another's interests!

Pray remember me very kindly to Lady Login.

WINDSOR CASTLE June 16th 1862

I quite agree with you that it is most important for the welfare of the Maharajah that his mother should not be prevented from returning to India. I fear very much that as long as he remains under this influence he will retrograde in his moral and social character instead of advancing to become an English gentleman as I thought he was doing

C B PHIPPS.

Login's method of dealing with Duleep Singh, at this crisis of his life, proved its wisdom by the result, it

roused the better instincts of his nature, and impelled him to make an effort to save himself from the life of self-indulgence into which he was drifting.

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

He wrote to Sir John in June —

I have decided to arrange for my mother's return to India, and will see Sir Charles Wood on the subject at once, to have a place of residence fixed for her. I must see you soon, and will go up before I have to attend the marriage of the Princess Alice at Osborne, to which I am invited on July 1st

Some difficulties were made about the Maharanee's place of residence in India,\* so the Maharajah took a separate house for her in London, with an English lady as companion, where she lived till her death, in the following year.

The India Office having made it evident that they wished to deal with the Maharajah *alone* (without any advisers) regarding his future settlement, Login wrote as follows, to his former ward —

MY DEAR MAHARAJAH,

When you expressed your desire to be educated as a Christian, I explained to you the sacrifices that a profession of

---

\*Sir John Lawrence, now a member of the Indian Council, writes Login, June 8th, 1862 — There can be no doubt whatever that the Maharanee is better out of India than living in that country. There she is sure to do mischief, here, I admit, she will be equally the evil genius of the Maharajah. It is for the Secretary of State for India to decide which interest is of paramount importance! As to the Maharajah's claim for compensation for losses during the Mutiny, he should *lodge his complaint again*, if he wishes the matter attended to by Sir C. Wood.

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-68

Christianity would entail upon you with regard to your position among your countrymen and former subjects and now that the settlement of your affairs is under discussion I wish to draw your attention to several points which in your anxiety to secure the provision offered you *personally* you may be apt to overlook I have already shown you the responsibilities which devolve upon you as a Christian and the influence your example may reasonably be expected to exercise on other natives of India I wish now to point out that the principles involved in the question between you and the Government are of wide application and upon their decision much depends

It rests with you to determine whether a native of India who has embraced Christianity can be legally required to give up his birthright and to divest himself of privileges to which by the laws of his country he is entitled I hope for the sake of the millions who are I trust likely to be interested in the question that you will not hesitate to have it settled But besides the principles of general application there are other points worthy of your consideration which may be affected by it By the Treaty of Lahore you very wisely gave up your political position and all pretensions to sovereignty for yourself and your descendants under former rights But your position and privileges as head of your family are in no way affected thereby

As it seems to be in every way expedient that you and your immediate descendants (if you have a family) should avoid for several years to come the risk of placing yourselves in the way of any temptation to encourage or keep up political aspirations in the Punjab it is strongly to be recommended that you should make up your mind to remain in England and if possible to marry into a family of high character and befitting rank. The arrangements proposed by Government ensure a sufficient provision for them and with prudent management you have the power to make them wealthy

In the event of your securing your position under the Treaty to

the control of the balances of State pensions, *through trustees*, Chapter XIV. and your right to devise by *will*, at your death, any unappropriated balances, I would recommend, if you have no personal descendants, 1858-63. that you claim your right, by the laws of India, to adopt an heir (say, your nephew, Sheo Deo Singh, or one of his sons, whose character may give confidence that he is worthy), leave him by will, say, one-third of the unappropriated balances, as your heir, and two-thirds for Christian education among the Sikhs .

Hatherop Castle was purchased at this time by the Maharajah, with money advanced for the purpose by the Government. In his eagerness to possess an English estate, and accept the large sum of money offered him, he was a little inclined to overlook the interests of others, and forget the duties of his position as head of his family, though reminded by constant appeals from his nephew, the Shahzadah, who was anxiously expecting the settlement of the Maharajah's affairs, in the hopes of obtaining some addition to his paltry allowance.

LOCH KENNARD LODGE, *August 1st, 1862*

DEAR SIR JOHN,

I received yesterday the letter from Sir C Wood, which I enclose . . . The terms offered seem liberal, and I think I ought to accept them, but pray let me know what *you* think and advise.

*Oct 28th, 1862.*

The letter to Sir Charles Wood has been sent, after altering it in the way you wished.\* . . . I daresay you have by this

---

\* See p 512

Chapter time heard that I have bought the place in Gloucestershire  
 XIV (Hatherop) for £183 000 and I think it is a good investment  
 1858-63

The 'investment,' however, did not turn out so profitable as the Maharajah had anticipated and in 1863 by the advice and sanction of the Government, it was sold, and the estate of Elveden, in Suffolk, purchased in its place

Amongst other schemes for the development of India, in which Sir John Login took much interest, was that of the promotion of railroads and tramways. In December 1862, he was asked by the Board of the Indian Tramways Company—now South Indian Railway Company of which he was one of the original members—to go out to Bombay as their representative, to confer with the Governor, Sir Bartle Frere, on matters connected with their interests.

This was Sir John's last visit to India. He returned to England in April 1863 after having thoroughly examined all the various lines proposed throughout the Bombay Presidency \*

The transition from the Indian climate to the bitter easterly winds of an English spring was too sudden, and soon after his return he had his *first* severe illness and was advised to go to the seaside for change. He went accordingly, with his family, to Felixstowe, on

---

He had intended to go into Bengal also but the hot weather was too far advanced.

the Suffolk coast, and had been there but a short time, when he received a telegram from the Maharajah, begging him to come to him at once in London, as the Maharanee had died that morning. The Maharajah himself, had been hastily summoned from Loch Kennard Lodge, Scotland, only a day or two before, and had written to Sir John that very morning to say that his mother seemed better since his arrival.

On arrival at Abingdon House, Kensington, where the Maharanee had lived, Sir John and Lady Login found her household in great distress and consternation. The arrangements for the disposal of her remains were left in Sir John's hands, and it was settled that they should be placed temporarily, in an unconsecrated vault in Kensal Green Cemetery, until they could be conveyed to India, to receive the funeral rites of her religion. A large number of Indian notabilities attended this interment, as a mark of respect to the mother of the Maharajah, and to the surprise of every one present, especially of those who knew the effort it cost him to overcome his nervousness in speaking in public, the Maharajah, in a few well-chosen words, addressed the native attendants in their own language, comparing the Christian religion with that of the Hindoo, and assuring them, that in the blood of Christ alone, was their safety from condemnation in a future state. It was an impressive incident in a strange scene !

The Maharajah did not get possession of Elveden,



Chapter until the 29th September, and, owing to necessary  
XIV repairs and alterations, was not able to take up his  
1858-63 residence there until the following November. He  
was very anxious, however, that Sir John should  
inspect his new purchase, and wrote on the 20th  
September asking him to do so. But this was not to  
be—his best friend was never destined to see the  
place which for the next nineteen or twenty years  
was the Maharajah's home in England!

A greater loss a more poignant grief, than had yet  
come into his life, was this year in store for Duleep  
Singh. Two months after his mother's death, he had  
to mourn the loss of him, who, from his early boyhood,  
now fourteen years before had been his truest and  
most faithful friend on whose wise and disinterested  
counsel he had been accustomed to lean all his life,  
whose mind and energies had been throughout devoted  
to his best interests and whose bright example of  
uprightness and integrity had led him to desire for  
himself a part in a religion which made it possible  
for a man to lead such a God-like life on earth!"

On the 18th October, 1863 John Spencer Login  
passed peacefully into his rest—bearing with him the  
love and veneration of all who had ever known him,  
for none could fail to see in him one who "walked  
with God."

He was not for God took him." So sudden  
was the summons—to him not dread, but welcome

—that it fell as a shock on those who looked for many more years of service to God and man from that untiring brain and energy ; yet, though not quite fifty-four years of age, his heart had been weakened by the hard and constant work of his early life in India, and doubtless had suffered a severe strain from the anxiety and worry, arising from the settlement of the Maharajah's affairs.

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

The little churchyard of Felixstowe, was the scene of a simple but striking ceremony, when, on the 24th October, all that was mortal of John Login was laid in the grave. By their own special desire, the coast-guardsmen of that station, whose hearts he had won during his daily rides along the beach, attended in uniform, under the command of their officer, Lieutenant Hart, R.N., and carried the coffin to the grave. By this kindly act of sympathy and respect, it thus came about that Login received these last earthly honours from that service to which, in his youth, it had been his great ambition to belong.

Very many old and valued friends followed him to the grave, besides his own and his wife's immediate relatives, well-known names in India,—Sir John Lawrence, soon after to be made Viceroy of India, and to receive his peerage, Sir Frederick Currie, Bart ; Sir James Alexander, K.C.B., and many others \*

---

\* One of these, John Marshman, C.S.I., formerly editor of the "*Friend of India*," then taking holiday at the seaside, was an old friend whose society Login had much enjoyed, both being deeply interested in India. Marshman was then busy with his "*History of India*," the first volume only being complete

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-68

The Rev William Jay, formerly Chaplain of Futteh ghur read the burial service assisted by the clergy of the parish

The grief of Duleep Singh was most intense and unaffected. At once, on receiving the sad intelligence, he hurried to the family at Felixstowe, and, at the funeral took his place as chief mourner with Login's two sons. One of those present has described the touching spectacle of the Maharajah's impassioned grief beside the grave, as he gave utterance to the words,

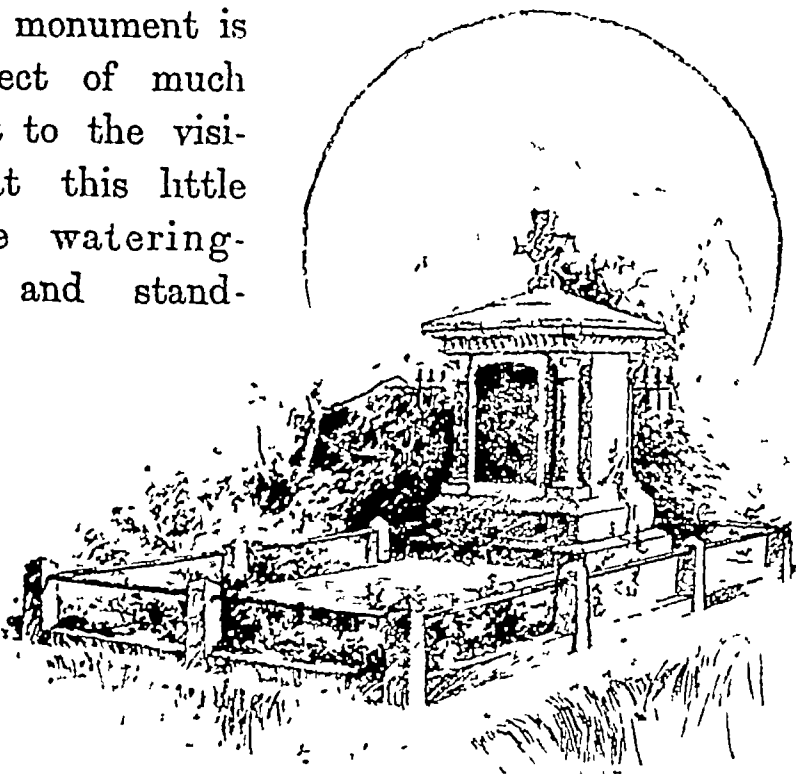
Oh, I have lost my *father*!—for he was, indeed, my father, and more than my father!" When speaking of his loss to Lady Login he said, 'If *that* man is not in Heaven then there is not one word of truth in the Bible!

The great desire of the Maharajah was that his guardian should be buried at Elveden, in a new mausoleum which he designed to build there as a family burial place and he intended the interment at Felixstowe to be only temporary, until such time as this edifice could be completed but, by Lady Login's wish the arrangements at Felixstowe were made for a permanent tomb and later on the Maharajah erected to his guardian's memory in the churchyard there, a beautiful monument of grey and red granite and white marble the design of which was approved by Her Majesty, who herself selected the text to be cut on it—thus marking the estimate of his character formed

by the Sovereign he had so loyally served,\* and which she had already expressed, in a letter written by her command to his widow

Chapter  
XIV.  
1858-63.

This monument is an object of much interest to the visitors at this little seaside watering-place; and stand-




---

\* The following inscription is placed on the tomb —  
In Loving Memory  
of

SIR JOHN SPENCER LOGIN,  
Who died at Felixstowe, October 18th, 1863,  
In the 54th year of his age  
This Monument is erected,  
By his Affectionate Friend and Ward,  
THE MAHARAJAH DULEEP SINGH,  
In Grateful Remembrance of the  
Tender Care and Solitude with which  
Sir John Login  
Watched over his early years,  
Training him up in the pure  
And simple faith of Our Lord and Saviour  
JESUS CHRIST

---

"The memory of the just is blessed."—*Proverbs x. 7.*

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

ing, as it does, on the highest piece of ground at that point on the coast the white marble cross on its summit has served for years as a "leading mark" for pilots. Thus, in his death, as in his life he serves his fellow men—the cross above his resting place reminding the seaman, as he steers his homeward course, how he also "may so pass through the waves of this troublesome world," as in like manner to attain a safe anchorage in the haven of eternal rest!

Of the many letters written at this time—besides the one from Her Majesty just referred to—only two or three are subjoined, containing as they do, a tribute to his memory, in the words of those whose good opinion he himself most highly valued.

ST JAMES'S PALACE

Oct 24th (5 p m), 1863

MY DEAR MISS LOGIN \*

I can hardly attempt to express to you how shocked I was to see yesterday, when arriving at Edinburgh the account of the sudden death of my dear friend, your father. I had hoped that he had entirely recovered from his illness and that we might hope for a long-continued life of usefulness. Lady Login knows how strong was my regard and friendship for him. I find it quite

---

This letter was addressed to Login's eldest daughter who died at Pau two years after her father

impossible to say how much I regret the loss of so excellent and valued a friend. There were, however, dear Miss Login, few people so well prepared for a sudden call to his Maker, for few people had such strong feelings upon religion, or acted so uniformly upon Christian rules. If I dared to intrude on your dear mother's sacred grief, I would beg to be allowed to assure her of my sympathy in her loss, founded on the deep regard and respect I feel for the truly good man whose loss we mourn. . . . For you, also, I feel deeply. What must have been your love for such a father! . . . I have only just arrived in London (5 p.m.), or I should have asked to be permitted to join to-day in the last sad tokens of respect. It would be very kind if you would write again soon, to tell me of Lady Login.

Believe me, very sincerely yours,

C. B. PHIPPS.

WINDSOR CASTLE, Oct. 27th, 1863.

MY DEAR LADY LOGIN,

The Queen has this morning commanded me to write to you in her name, to express to you the *deep and very sincere sympathy* with which she has heard of the overwhelming affliction which has fallen upon you! Few, indeed, can so well enter into the grief under which you must now be suffering! You are well aware of the high opinion which the Queen entertained of your excellent husband, my valued friend. Her Majesty had frequently shown this, not only in the honour bestowed upon him, but in the confidence so often reposed in him, and never disappointed. He was a thoroughly good, conscientious man. What higher praise can be earned on earth? What better passport can there be to Heaven?

I hardly know anybody who could be better prepared for a calm, though sudden and entirely painless, end. I did not intend,

Chapter when I began this letter by the Queen's command to enter  
 XIV into my own feelings but I had a very *great* and *real* friendship  
 1858-63 for your most excellent husband, and to me these thoughts  
 are very soothing I only carry out the Queen's repeated instructions, in assuring you that sympathy for you is most sincerely combined with true regard and respect for him that is gone

Believe me always, dear Lady Login

Sincerely yours,

C B PHIPPS

WINDSOR CASTLE Oct 28th 1863

MY DEAR LADY LOGIN

I had written but not sent the accompanying letter by the Queen's command, when I received yours this morning I feel very strongly the kind exertion you made in writing to me and I pray God may strengthen and support you! You cannot overrate the regard I had for my dear friend your husband and my admiration of his character I am very glad to hear that the Maharajah has shown so much feeling of the debt of gratitude which he owed to his kind and gentle but always honest mentor it will indeed be a terrible loss to him for Sir John always told him the truth and gave him the sincerest advice

The Queen read your letter with the greatest interest If there is anything kind from Her Majesty that I could say and have not said I have so far gone within her commands!

The Queen has been very sorry to read the account you gave of Princess Gounamma's health she wishes to know whether you think that it would be injurious to her health to come down here to see Her Majesty?

The Queen does not forget the kind manner in which you and Sir John undertook the care of this poor child at great personal

inconvenience If it is too much for you to write and answer Chapter  
this yourself, pray ask your daughter to do so. XIV.

Always sincerely yours,

1858-63.

C B PHIPPS

OSBORNE, *Feb 17th*, 1864

MY DEAR LADY LOGIN,

The Queen was very much grieved at the account you gave of the poor little Princess in your letter, and directed me to telegraph at once to enquire for her, in her name

It is very sad to see one so young cut off, but I think you have long thought that her lungs were in a very unsatisfactory state.

I shall be greatly interested to see the sketch of the monument which you and the Maharajah have approved, and when I go to London shall certainly go to see the model. There has rarely lived a man with a more extended and pure benevolence, and I have certainly learned more of India, and Indian affairs, from him, than from any other man

I fear, from what you say, that Princess Gouramma is in a very dangerous state The dear Maharajah is not always very wise in his decisions,\* and I fear there is nobody *now* who has much influence over him He must miss his faithful Thornton, too I suppose there is no doubt about his going to India, as you say he intends doing

Very sincerely yours,

C B PHIPPS

Again--February, 20th, 1864 —

The design for the monument is very much liked, it is both quiet, handsome, and in good taste What do you think of the

---

\*This refers to the Maharajah's expressed intention of visiting the Mission School at Cairo, of which Lady Login had informed Sir Charles



Chapter enclosed inscription? It is simple and short which I think you  
 XIV wished but it can easily be added to if wished.\* The Queen will  
 1858-63 herself select a text

Ever sincerely yours

O B Phipps.

LLANDUDNO N WALES Oct 26th 1863

DEAR LADY LOGIN

I have just learnt from the newspaper the great affliction that has befallen you I cannot forbear to write to tell you how much I grieve for you and your children I know no particulars but this I know that you and they have suffered a loss which can never be repaired There was so much true goodness honour, and kindness † in Sir John Login, that he did much to make happy all around him, and these qualities so apparent to his friends were even more conspicuous in the bosom of his family I remember his many kindnesses to me when I met him abroad seven years ago when I was out of health. I shall always think of him as one whom it was a privilege and an honour to know I can say nothing that will lessen the blow which has been permitted to fall upon you he whom you mourn knew well the Source of highest consolation from that Source alone can you derive help to sustain you in this time of your fearful trial My daughter Helen is in Edinburgh so I can send no message from her but I know she will be full of deep sympathy with you Excuse this note which does but poorly express what I wish to

This inscription was afterwards somewhat enlarged by the Maharajah who thought it did not express fully enough all that he wished.

† Lord Lawrence's remark to a friend at Sir John Login's funeral was, "I never met another man who so perfectly combined the most straightforward truthfulness with perfect courtesy of manner."

say, for you know that my regard and esteem for your husband was deep and sincere. Chapter

XIV.

1858-63.

Believe me always, dear Lady Login,

Your sincere friend,

JOHN BRIGHT.

Before the Maharajah embarked to convey his mother's remains to India, he spent a week or more with Lady Login, at Felixstowe. He was anxious to help her in every way, and wished to fill the place of the father they had lost, to the children of his guardian\*. If anything happened to him during his absence in India, his will was made, he informed her, and he had provided handsomely for his god-daughter. He spoke of his own future with great anxiety, and seemed earnestly desirous to lead a life worthy of his Christian profession. He dreaded a marriage with a worldly woman, such as he might meet with in society, and said that he would like to meet with some young girl whom he might train to be a helpmeet for him. With this view, he said he had made up his mind to visit the Missionary School at Cairo on his way out, and ask the missionaries if they could help him; he had never forgotten the interest these orphan girls had excited in him.

---

\* Edward, the eldest, was appointed to the Indian Finance Department by Sir John Lawrence, Governor-General of India. He died in India, December 16th, 1876.

Chapter  
XIV  
1858-63

Lady Login told him to weigh well beforehand the consequences of such an irrevocable step, as it would influence his whole after life.

To show her that he was serious he left with her a paper in which he had sketched out his intentions. During this visit, the Maharajah read with much interest a report of the American missionaries on the results of their mission at Futtehghur up to the time of the Mutiny, when the mission was destroyed by the mutineers. The report had been sent from America to Sir John Login. An account was given of the successful working of the *ten* schools for boys, established and paid for by Duleep Singh, and superintended by the American Presbyterian Mission whereby 400 youths were thoroughly educated in the Christian faith, and some were being fitted to evangelize their own people.

The Maharanee Jinda Koir's remains were landed at Bombay where arrangements were made for her funeral rites, and the ashes were scattered on the sacred waters of the Nerbuddah

The Maharajah wrote from Bombay to announce his engagement and soon after the following notice of his marriage in Egypt was published in the *Times of India* —

THE MARRIAGE OF DULEEP SINGH — A correspondent of the *Times of India* writes as follows — The marriage of the Maharajah Duleep Singh took place at the British consulate Alexandria

